# A Briefe Chronicle, of the Succeſſe of Times, from the Creation of the World, to this inſtant.

CONTAINING,

The Originall & liues of our ancient Fore-Fathers, *before and after the Floud; As alſo, of all the Monarchs, Emperours, Kinges, Popes, Kingdomes, Common-weales, Eſtates and Gouernments, in moſt Nations of this Worlde: And how in alteration, or ſucceſsion, they haue continued to this day.*

Printed by W. Iaggard, Printer to the Honourable Citty of London, and are to be ſold at his houſe in Barbican.

1611.

# TO THE RIGHT HONOVRABLE, SIR VVILLIAM CRAVON, Knight,

*Lord Maior of the Cittie of London*; *Sir* HENRIE MONTAGVE, Seriant at Law to his Maieſtie, *and Recorder of London: And to all the Knights, Aldermen, and Worſhipfull Bretheren, the carefull Fathers and Gouernours of this Honourable Eſtate.*

HAuing collected theſe brieſe notes (Right Honourable, Right Worſhipfull, and my moſt reſpected) concerning the Succeſſe of Times (in moſt of the Kingdoms thorow the World) euen from the Creation, to this inſtant yeare 1611. and modelled them all in this ſlender Volume, that ſuch as fauour Reuerend Antiquity, might receiue both pleaſure & profit thereby: I thought

it part of my duty (in regard of some fauour and respect lately by mee receiued) to present your Honor and Worships there-with, as a token of my gratitude, and as a promise of my vttermost imployment, in these, or any other endeuours, whereto my meanneſſe in ability by you shall be commaunded. I know right well, and such as know me, haue heard me daily confeſſe it, that I (of infinite others) was the most vnmeeteſt to vndergoe such a serious buſineſſe, which required, if not the beſt able, yet those that therein are much better seene then my selfe. Neuertheleſſe, importunitie of Friendes, that greeue to see no willing hand put to the plough, or at leaſt such (euen like my selfe) more forward then wise; their perſwasions, I say, and some regard had of the times neceſſity, euery man beeing borne for the good of his Country; hath (vnder your Honorable and Worshipfull fauour) made me thus aduenturous.

Concerning the helpes I haue had in this laborious trauaile, the Authors themselues, who haue beſt written, and diſcourſed of those ſeueral Kingdoms and Nations; euen them, & no other haue I herein followed, borrowing beſide some such matters from them, as (to my knowledge) haue not in any of our Chronicles heeretofore bin remembred, or at the leaſt, not plainly reuealed.

led. In our home affaires, especially the antiquity of this famous Cittie, I haue (with others) deliuered my opinion therin, yet swaruing from some, who haue beene thought ouer-scrupulous, sometime straining at a Gnat, yet very ealy swallowing a Camell. The Dignitie that your Honor holdeth, of Lord Maior of this Cittie, and those graue Senators, the Alder-men your Brethren, I haue aymed at the Original & Antiquitie thereof; some Authors tearming them *Domesmen*, *Eldermen*, or *Iudges* of the Kinges Court. But that the name of Alderman declareth both verie Reuerend Originall, and great Antiquitie; I find recorded, that in the time of King *Eadgar*, one *Ailwin*, a man of the bloud Royall, and, for the speciall great authority and fauour hee had with the King (being Sir-named *Healf-Koning*, that is, *Half-King*) was Alderman of all England, who founded that famous Monasterie in the Isle of *Ely*. Our learned and worthy Antiquary M. *Camden*, hath obserued the Epitaph engrauen on his Tombe, containing these wordes: *Hic requiescit Ailwinus incliti Regis Eadgari Cognatus, totius Angliæ Aldermannus, et huius sacri Cœnobij miraculosus fundator. Heere resteth Ailwin, Cozin to the Noble King Eadgar, Alderman of al England, and of this holie Abbey the miraculous Founder.* Whereby appeareth, that the

Title of Alderman, in those ancient, reuerend, and respectiue times, was an addition of honor and high repute, as distinguishing them that deserued that grace, to be men of greater, grauer, and more sollide iudgment, in matters appertaining to the Weale-publique, then others, vncapable of such especiall dignity. Of such worthy Fathers hath this famous Cittie beene plentifully furnished from time to time, as in our Chronicle may more at large appeare, and to you those graue Senators and worthily styled Aldermen (out of intire and dutifull affection) haue I consecrated the liuing memorie of these my poore labours: wishing to you all vnfeignedly, that as heauen hath bestowed this earthly honor vpon you, so (hereafter) it may crowne you with neuer dying happinesse.

*Yours in all dutie to be commaunded,*

*A. Mundy.*

# *To the Maister, Wardens, Assi-*stants, and whole Liuery, of the Honorable *Company of Merchant-Tailors, being the worthy So-*ciety of S. *Iohn Baptist*, anciently deriued from S. *Iohn of Hierusalem, and the famous Knightes of that religious Brother-hood. Also to the Wardens Substitutes, and the sixteene men of the same Company, &c.*

IT hath beene my hap (worthy and worshipful Gentlemen) among the variety of Collections, to build vp the body of this briefe Chronicle; to meete with an ancient and much esteemed Record, of a Society and brother-hood, styled by the name of S. *Iohn Baptist* of *Hierusalem*, and how many Great Maisters haue gouerned that Society, from Anno. 1099. to this present yeare, with some briefe obseruations of their liues and actions, as in Follio 187. more at large appeareth. Concerning the originall, progression, & seuerall Fortunes of this Military Brother-hood, beeing tearmed Knights *Hospitallers*, or Knights of the Hospitall of S. *Iohn Baptist of Ierusalem*; next, Knights of *Rhodes*, and lastly, Knightes of *Malta*; I refer you there to be further satisfied: yet some thinges beeing there accidentally omitted, may fauourably (and not vnnecessarily) here be remembred. These Brethren (by solemne profession) were bound to serue Pilgrims, and poore

people in the Hoſpitall of S. *Iohn* at Ieruſalem, and to ſecure (by their man-hood) their paſſages thither, they charitably buried the dead, were continually in praier, mortifyed themſelues with Watchings and Faſtinges, were courteous and kinde to the poore, whom they called their Maiſters, and fed them with white Bread, when themſelues did eate browne. They grew to be loued and liked of all ſortes, and, through the liberal bounty of good Princes and priuate perſons (admiring their piety and proweſſe) they roſe from this low degree, to ſo high an eſtate and great riches, that about An. 1240. they had within Chriſtendome nineteene thouſand Lordſhips or Mannors, as the Knights *Templers* had nine thouſand, the Reuennewes and Rentes wherof in England, fell afterward alſo to theſe knights *Hoſpitallers* of S. *Iohn Baptiſt*. And this eſtate of theirs (growne to ſo great an height) made way for them likewiſe to as great honors. So that their Prior in England (liuing then in the goodly Pallace of Saint *Iohn Baptiſt* of *Hieruſalem*, in the ſtreete which receiued name of that houſe, and is called yet to this day, Saint *Iohns-ſtreet*) was reputed the Prime Baron of the land, and called the Lord of S. *Iohns*, beeing able, with fulneſſe and abundance of all things, to maintaine a very honorable Port.

In ſucceſſe of time, as this worthy Citty grew to encreaſe, not onely in large extendure and beautie of buildings, but alſo in election of Companies and Corporations, for better ſupply of the Magiſtracy, and conueniency of all the apteſt meanes thereto belonging; this Branch of your honorable Society of S. *Iohn Baptiſt* (deriued of that ancient and memorable Stem,

of

of Saint *Iohn* of *Hieruſalem*,) grewe to burgen and ſpread it ſelfe in goodlieſt manner. Beeing *Tailors* of the Linnen-Armory, and brethren of Saint *Iohn Baptiſt* (as moſt Companies, in thoſe times, had a Saintes appellation) they grew to be great in Kinges fauours, who thought it no indignity to themſelues, to be ſtiled in the Brother-hood of S. *Iohn Baptiſt*, and from theyr Guildes firſt Creation by King *Edward* the third, with authority to hold a feaſt yearely at Midſommer, and to make choyce of a Gouernor or Mayſter (according to the order of a Great Maiſter, among the Knights *Hoſpitallers*, of Saint *Iohn Baptiſt of Hieruſalem*) and Wardens, to aſſiſt and ayde him in that weighty charge: they proceeded on ſtill (by the enſuing Kings) in further additions of gracious regard, till King *Henrie* the ſeauenth confirmed their Charter, naming them *Merchant-Taylors*, of the Brother-hood of Saint *Iohn Baptiſt*, to continue ſtill the memorie of their Originall. Heere may I not alſo forget, that as the Knightes *Hoſpitallers* at *Hieruſalem*, were alwaies reſpectiue in ſeruice to Pilgrims and Trauailers: euen ſo, as if ſuch an humble condition did well merit not to be forgotten, in this Brotherhood (at the beginning) they did vſe ech yeare to chuſe a Pilgrime, who attended the ſeruice of the Maiſter of the Company, and trauailed in behalfe of the whole Society. One of the Pilgrimes names is recorded by *Iohn Stow*, to be *Henrie de Ryall*, and that name of Pilgrime continued vntill the eleauenth year of *Richard* the ſecond, when the foure Wardens, were then called Purueyors of Almes, now called quarterage of the fraternity.

Seauen Kings haue borne Bretherens name of that Society,

Society (viz:) *Edward* the third; *Richard* the ſecond; *Henrie* the fourth; *Henrie* the fift; *Henrie* the ſixt; *Edward* the fourth; and *Henrie* the ſeauenth, and (as is credibly affirmed) wearing the Liueryhood on their ſhoulders, they haue gone on the election day, from the Hall, to the Pallace of Saint *Iohns*, in Saint *Iohns* Streete, there to heare diuine ſeruice, and graciouſly permitted the Maiſter to goe on the vpper-hand, ſuch (in thoſe times) was the milde nature of Princes, ſhewing (by their owne example) how Magiſtrates, and other their meaner Miniſters, ought to be held in honor and reſpect.

Paſſing ouer the Dukes, Earles, Lords, Byſhoppes, Knightes, and Gentlemen, who haue likewiſe beene Bretheren of that honorable Society, and many other memorable perſons, of whom this little limit alloweth no ſpeech: I wil conclude this Epiſtle, with a briefe note of two or three worthy Bretheren, among infinite other, whoſe deſerts doe iuſtly challenge perpetuall acknowledgement.

Sir *William Fitz William* the elder, being a Merchant Taylor, and Seruaunt ſometime to Cardinall *Wolſey*, was choſen Alderman of Bread-ſtreet-Ward in London, in Anno. 1506. And going afterward to dwell at *Mylton* in *Northamptonſhire*; in the fal of the Cardinall his former Maiſter, he gaue him kinde entertainement there at his houſe in the Countrey. For which deede, being called before the King, and demaunded how he durſt entertaine ſo great an enemy to the State: his anſwere was, that he had not contemptuouſly or wilfully done it, but onely becauſe he had been his Maiſter, and partly the meanes of his greateſt Fortunes. The

King

King was ſo well pleaſed with his anſwer, that, ſaying, himſelfe had too few ſuch Seruaunts; immediatly hee knighted him, and afterward made him a priuy Counceller. This worthy Knight dying, gaue an hundered pounds to poore Maids marriages. His debs and debtors, ouer whoſe names he had written *Amore Dei remitto*, he freely forgaue. He gaue to the Vniuerſities forty pound; to the poore thirty pound; to mend the high-waies betwixt *Chigwell* and *Coperſale* in *Eſſex* 50. pounds; to mend other high-waies about *Thorney* and *Sawtrie* Chappell, and the Bridge, fifty pounds more. And to the *Merchant-Taylors* his Bretheren, hee gaue his beſt ſtanding Cuppe, as a friendly remembrance of him.

Sir *Thomas White*, Lord Maior of this honourable Citty, and a worthy Brother likewiſe of that Society, beeing a louer of Learning, and an earneſt furtherer thereof; firſt purchaſed the Hall in *Oxenford*, called *Glocester-Hall*, for Students and Schollers to receiue there the benefit of learning. But his priuate thoughts very often ſolliciting him, that he ſhould (in time) meet with a place where two Elmes grewe, and that there his further forward purpoſe ſhould take effect: At length he found out the place, where (at his owne coſt and expences) hee founded the famous Colledge in *Oxenford*, called Saint *Iohn Baptiſt* Colledge, & where thoſe two Elmes (as I haue heard) are yet ſtanding, endowing it with ſuch liberall Guifts, Lands, and Reuennewes, as would require too much time here to be remembred. Beſide his prouiſion for Learning in this worthy place, he erected other Schooles, as at *Briſtow*, *Reading*, and a Colledge at *Higham-Ferries*. More, he gaue

gaue to the Citty of *Briſtow*, the ſumme of two thouſand poundes, to purchaſe Land, amounting to the yearely valew of an hundred and twenty pounds, the Maior and Cittizens paying therefore yearely an hundred pounds. Eight hundred pounds muſt bee lent to ſixteene poore Clothiers, fifty poundes each man for ten years ſpace, ſufficient ſecurity being giuen by them for the ſame. Afterward, that eight hundred poundes was to paſſe to other ſixteene Clothiers, according to diſcretion of them put in truſt. Two hundred poundes beſide was reſerued, for prouiſion of Corne and needfull occaſions for the poore, in the order and care of the Maior, Aldermen, and Cittizens, &c.

Then, according to his will, which remaineth yet to be ſeene, out of this bountifull guift to *Briſtow*, theſe memorable braunches and beneuolences, were by himſelfe deuiſed and ordered, beginning in the yeare 1577. and thence forward they went on according to his owne direction. Then was brought to the *Merchant-Taylors* Hall, an hundred and foure pounds, the hundred pound to be lent (for ten years ſpace) to four poore men in the Citty of *Yorke*: And the foure pound ouer-plus, to be imploied about the charges & paines, that no man (vſed in the buſineſſe) might receiue diſcontentment. Then in An. 1578. the like ſumme was to be deliuered thence to *Canterburie*, and ſo thence-forward the ſame ſummes (yearely) to the Citties and Townes following orderly.

1579. Reading.
1580. The Merchant-Taylors themſelues.
1581. Gloceſter.
1582. Worceſter.
1583. Exceſter.
1584. Salisbury.
1585. Weſt-Cheſter.
1586. Nor-

1586. Norwich.
1587. Southampton.
1588. Lincolne.
1589. Winchester.
1590. Oxenford.
1591. Hereford East.
1592. Cambridge.
1593. Shrewesburie.
1594. Lynne.
1595. Bathe.
1596. Derby.
1597. Ipswitch.
1598. Colchester.
1599. New-Castle.

This summe of one hundred and foure pounds, passing yearely to these fore-named places, from the Merchant-Taylors Hall, and to the good intended vses of the giuer; that there might bee no breathing while for so iust a Stewards Talent, but to haue it kept on in continuall imployment for the poore: the same order was to take beginning againe (as before) at the Cittie of *Yorke*, and so successiuely (while the World stands) to the Townes before named, in selfe-same course as it had the originall, with great care and obseruaunce in them to whom it belongeth, that the dead may not be abused, nor poore mens right iniured.

But did he thus shut vp his Purse, and say to himselfe, I haue giuen sufficient? No, hee did cast his pittying eie next on the Citty of *Couentry*, distressed (at that time) in great and grieuous manner. What his instant beneuolence was, he tooke it to bee but as an houres Sun-shine, after a whole day of storme and tempest, although it might yeeld some comfort, were the season neuer so short. But to establish a certainty, that no dismay or doubt should euer after bee able to remoone, (euen as a worthy Piramide, erected to perpetuity) he gaue to the Citty of *Couentry* 1400. pound, therewith to purchase Lands, rising to the anuall value of 70. li.

Twelue

Twelue poore Inhabitants of that Citty, were to haue in free Almes twenty foure poundes, each man forty ſhillings yearely, on the eleauenth day of March. Four young men were alſo to haue fortie poundes yearely, ten pound each man, and for nine yeares ſpace, vpon ſufficient ſecurity giuen; And their turnes thus ſerued, then foure other young men to haue the like ſumme, and like limitation, and ſo from nine yeares, to nine yeares, for euer. Afterward it was ordred to two poore men of the ſame Citty, and laſtly to one; in which nature (according to the ſeuerall limitations) it doth yet, and doubtleſſe ſhall for euer continue. Alſo the ſame ſumme to one young man in *Northampton*; next, in the Citty of *Leiceſter*; Thirdlie, in *Nottingham*; Fourthly, in *Warwick*; Then returning to *Couentrie* again for one year, it repaſſeth to the ſaid Townes againe, each after other yearely for euer. And leaſt his worthy intent ſhould faile in the continuance, hee enlarged his firſt gift to *Couentrie*, of 1400. poundes, to 2000. and 60. pound, to bee imployed as hath beene remembred, fortie pound yearely being paid out of it to Saint *Iohn Baptiſt* Colledge in *Oxford*: And allowances alſo by himſelfe giuen in each place, that bonds ſhould be made without any charge to the receiuer.

Sir *Thomas Row*, Lord Maior of this famous Citty, and a worthy *Merchant-Taylor*, beſide his charitable coſt and charges, in building the new Church-yard in *Bedlem*, for ſuch Pariſhes as wanted benefit of buriall: Gaue forty poundes yearely, to maintaine tenne poore men for euer, ſuch as were not Bretheren of his owne Society, but choſen out of fiue ſeuerall Companies (viz.) *Clothworkers*, *Armorers*, *Carpenters*, *Tylers*, and

and *Plaisterers:* As considering, that by ouer-toyling labour, dangers, fals, bruizes, and such like inconueniences, they were sooneſt like to become impotent, and vnable to helpe or maintaine themselues. Therefore to each of these ten men, hee freely gaue the sum of foure pound quarterly, to be paid them at the Merchant-Taylors Hall, during their liues; and then to succeede to other men in the same Companies, according to due consideration, of iust cause and most necessity.

Lastly, worthy Gentlemen, to hold yee no longer, in matter better knowne to your selues then mee, because it is in your owne eyes and eares (almost) dailie, the neuer dying memory, of a yet liuing (and long may he so be) Brother Merchant-Taylor, shall be my conclusion. This vertuous and Religious man, knowing Death to be an vnindifferent Executor, and Life much more worthy of trust and imployment; hath preuented that gripple greedy Tyrant, and made such large Legacies to Life, that Death neuer deserued to be put in trust withall. If men of this World, such as GOD hath liberally bestowed his blessings on, would (with this good-minded man) consider, that, let their willes bee neuer so wisely made, yea, all Art and Dexterity therein (to the very vttermost) imployed: yet death, and his long wide gaping Children, haue many hangers on, many meanes & deuises, but many more tricks and vnfaithfull performances; they would trust life the better, as this man hath done, and let death haue only the reuersion, which is the easier to bee considered on. It is not for my pen to set downe his praises, leaues of Marble or Brasse are meeter for those Carracters,

that

that the deuouring teeth of Time may neuer deface. Let this then bee ſome addition to your honour, that you haue ſuch a worthy Brother; mindful of the works of Mercy to the poore, among your ſelues, and many places elſe-where; carefull of offendours, whom law ſentencing with Death, by the Watch-bell of Prayer are encited to compunction; and hopefull of al goodneſſe, to purſue his vertuous determinations euerie where. So that when this *Doone* ſhall finde no reſting place for his foote, by reaſon of this Worldes tumultuous waues; hee may returne to the Arke of bleſſednesſe, the happy home, that he, you, and all elſe that feare God, ſhould daily long for.

*Yours euer,*

A. MVNDY.

# TO THE ANCIENT, WOORTHY, AND RIGHT Worſhipfull Company of the Gold-Smiths; *the Maiſter, Wardens, Aſsiſtants, Liuery*: and likewiſe to euery louing Brother, and member thereof.

*LEt me not be thought (Right Worſhipfull Society) more bolde then becomes me, that in ſearch of Antiquitie, and Succeſſe of Times, guided by good obſeruation, and probable Authorities, I thus preſent you (in vnfaigned affection) what I haue gathered, concerniug your worthy Brother-hood. If I had time heere to ſet downe (without preiudice to any other Miſterie whatſoeuer) that which* Holye Writ *recordeth of you, and of men (then) moſt expert in your profeſsion; this poore Epiſtle would encreaſe it ſelfe to a very large diſcourſe, and exceede the limit wherto I haue tied my ſelf in the whol labor. I paſſe ouer the captiuity of Gods choſen people in* Babylon, *and the Offices of thoſe three eſpeciall choſen*

*men*, Zerubbabell, Ezra, *and* Nehemiah: *the first, being their Captaine to guide them home, and prouided that the Temple was builded: the second, reforming manners, and making a plantation of Religion: the third and last, to builde vp the wals, and make a new Citty of Ierusalem againe: Yet let me tell you, that among the multitude of Officers and Offices, appointed to this businesse, for building the walles, the Merchants and Goldsmithes do beare a remarkeable note, the very words in Scripture being these:* Betweene the Chamber of the Corner vnto the Sheepe-gate, fortifyed the Gold-smiths and the Merchants. *Beside, that which is spoken of* Malchiah *the Goldsmithes sonne, fortifying to the house of the* Nethinims; *And then, of* Bezaleell the Sonne of Vri, filled with the Spirit of God, in wisedome and vnderstanding, to worke in Gold, Siluer, & Brasse; *who had* Aholiab *ioyned with him, to make all curious workes (appointed by God himself) for the* Tabernacle of the Congregation, the Arke of the Couenant, and the Mercy-seat, &c. *If these be not Testimonies of extraordinary honour and respect, in the very names of* Merchants *and* Goldesmiths (*but much more, in the matter of so high an employment*) *confirmed by an assurance so vnreproueable, and equalling what can be saide (in like case) of venerable Antiquitie; I referre my selfe to be censured by the very seuerest iudgement.*

*Secondly,*

*Secondly, concerning the first workers in Gold, Siluer, and other Mettalles, in any place of eminence or note in Europe (vnder controul neuertheleſſe, of ſuch as haue reade and obſerued more then I haue done) I finde their Originall to be among the euer-curious & ingenious* Venitians, *euen at the firſt plantation of Venice, which iuſtly may be tearmed* Miracolo del Mondo. *The foundation of Venice, holds paritie and proportion of Antiquity, with the prime eſtate of the* Frances or French, *as you may obſerue where it is more at large expreſſed. Looking backe then to the firſt Note of Diuine obſeruation, and remembering (after the worlds deuiſion among the ſons of* Noah) *that* Iapheth *ſon* Tubal *had all Europe for his partition, with this laſt Collection concerning Venice; and then, as all Arts and Sciences haue a place of Original, as Riuers from the Sea, and extend themſelues afterward to the remoteſt places of the worlde: So may it likewiſe be gathered, that thoſe reſpectiue times, admyring and honouring Art and Inuention, gaue ſuch way to their preſent, and ſuccceding fame & paſſage, that all Landes became Partners of their predeceſſors prerogatiues.*

*Laſtly, to ſpeake but of our owne Kingdome, and therein (for breuities ſake) but of this Noble Citty it ſelf; I find, that when it had caſt off the yoke of ſtrange confuſion, endured vnder the ſufferance of ſo manie conquerings: After (I ſay) it came to haue command*

*within it ſelfe, vnder the awe and gracious fauour of worthie Kinges and Potentates, who made choyſe of Magiſtrates, to be their Deputies, and to preſent their God-like perſons for general obedience: the very firſt man that attained to the place of eminence, and was ſtyled Maire of this renowned Citty, was called* Henry Fitz-Alwine, Fitz-Liefitane, *Goldſmith, and held that ſupreame Office more then 24. yeares together. A memorable Note, in regard of Priority, and as ſince then, carefully remembred, ſo iuſtly challenging continuance to vtmoſt poſterity.*

*But becauſe this ſlender volume ſpeakes more, (though briefely) of you, then heere can wel be affoorded, and commeth to you from a free hart, in kindnes, requiring but as free and courteous acceptance: this is al the charge by me impoſed on it. To tel the whole Golden band of your worthy Brother-hood, that I haue done nothing heerein, either for flatterie or vaineglorie, or in expectation of mercinarie recompence; but according to truth, ſincerity, and honeſty which is the beſt defence for any that ſpeakes of Antiquitie.*

Yours to be commanded,

*A. Mundy.*

# A Table of the ſeuerall Arguments, handled in this Booke.

THe Originall and Succeſsion of our fore-fathers, from Adam to the generall Deluge. Fol: 1.
From the Flood, to the Princes and Iudges of Iſrael. 5
Frō the Princes & Iudges, to the *Iewiſh* kings. 12
From the Iewiſh Kings, to the Kings of Iuda. 14
From the Kinges of Iuda and Ieruſalem, to the Monarchy, &c. 19
The Monarchy of the *Chaldeans*, *Aſſyrians*, &c. 19
The Monarchy of the *Perſians*. 20
The Monarchy of the *Grecians*. 23
The Kings of *Macedon*. 24
The Kings of *Syria*. 26
The Kings of *Egypt*. 29
The Monarchy of the *Cæſars* or *Romaines*. 32
The Emperors of the weſt from *Charlemaign*. 54
The Emperors of the Eaſt. 61

The *Ottomans* or Turkiſh Emperors. 89
Originall of the *Sarazins*. 102
Byſhops & Popes of Rome, from the originall, and Ages of the Church. 108
Originall of the Knights of S. *Iohns* of *Ieruſalem*, and all other Orders of Knight-hood. 157
Of the Emperor of *Ethiopia*, *Prete Ian*. 214
Of the Kingdome of *Perſia*. 220
Of the Kingdome of *Tyunis*. 227
Of the great Prouince of *Moſcouia*. 229
Of the Kingdome of *Poland*. 233
Of ſundry other Kingdomes Conquered by the Romaines. 235
Of the Kingdome of *Portugall*. 241
Of the Kingdome of *Italy*. 253
The Originall of the *Venetians*. 258
Of the Dukes of *Venice*. 269
Of the Kingdome of Spaine. 300
Of *Germany*, and the Princes Electors. 304
The Originall of the French Nation. 305
Of *Pharamond*, the firſt king of France, and conſequently of all the other kings of France. 316
Of the Earls of Holland and Zeland. 382
Of the Kingdome of Ireland. 427
Of the Gouernors, Lieutenants, and Deputies of Ireland. 435
Of the Kingdome of Scotland. 442
Of Albion, before *Brutes* arriuall, & what Kings raigned

raigned there. 466
The Light of Britaine, and of all the Kinges ſucceeding after *Brute*. 471
A Catalogue of the Princes of Wales. 522
Of Englands Biſhoppricks, & their circuits 526
Foundation of the Colledges in Cambridge & Oxenford. 532
Of the Shires in England and Wales. 535
Originall Antiquity, and modern eſtate of London. 537
Temporall Gouernment of London, ſince the Conqueſt. 573

# A SHORT SVMmary or briefe Chronicle of TIMES.

¶ Containing the originall and succeſſion of our auncient Fore-fathers, from the firſt CREATION of the World: As alſo of the *Monarches*, *Emperours*, *Kings*, *Popes*, and *Famous men*, with all the moſt memorable matters hapning ſince the Worldes beginning, to this inſtant time.

OVR Eternall GOD, al good, Almighty, and moſt mercifull, in the beginning, created and made the World of nothing: that is to ſay; Heauen, Earth, and Waters, as firſt and principall matter, togither with the Angels. He diſpoſed and gaue forme in ſixe daies, (for he reſted the ſeauenth, and bleſſed it) to all thinges incloſed within the circle of Heauen. All which hee did by his word, namely Ieſus Chriſt, and the

Yeares of the world

Geneſ. 1.

blessed Spirit: these three persons being one Diuine essence (for the workes of the sacred Trinity are inseparable) whom I most humbly beseech to fauour and assist me, in beginning and ending this short Summary.

After that this soueraigne Architect had created (of nothing) in one instant, this first masse or matter, and disposed in sixe daies this whole round frame: at length, vpon the first day he created Man of the slime of the earth (in the Damascene territory situate in Syria, or in Hebrō, according to the Hæbrues Tradition, into which place he withdrew himselfe after he had sinned) and made him after his owne likenesse, as concerning his soule, which also he created of nothing: he named him Adam, that is to say, Red man, or *Red-Earth*, according to the Hebrue language. Afterward, he took a rib from Adam, as he lay asleepe in Paradice, and thereof formed Heuah, which signifieth, as Moses writeth (followed by Iosephus) *Sorow*, and Mother of the Liuing; and according to *Zorarus*, Woman. Thus began the institution of Marriage, and houshold life togither.

The Creation of man

Gen. 1.

Marriage & houshold life.

Genes. 2, 3.

Adam and Heuah our first Parents, by perswasion of the Serpent (that is to say, the Deuill) transgressed the Commandement which God had giuen them, for effect of their faith and obedience. In regard whereof, they were cast out of terrestriall Paradice, that is to say, a Garden abounding in pleasures, where GOD had placed them together: and (with their posterity) were

The fall of Man.

were ſubiected to ſinne, death, and the Deuill. But our good God, being made all of mercy, perceiuing the offence of Man, did promiſe him, that the ſeede of the Woman, which is Ieſus Chriſt, ſhould breake the head of the Serpent, that is to ſay, his kingdome and power, deliuering vs from the captinity of ſinne, death, & the Deuill. In this promiſe we may note the ſourſe or ſpring head of the Goſpell; which afterward was oftentimes repeated, and diuerſly ſignified by ſundry figures, for comfort of our holy Forefathers, euen to the comming of Ieſus Chriſt.

The reparation of man in the promiſe of Ieſus Chriſt.

Gen. 2, 3.

Original of the Goſpell.

When Adam was thrown forth of Paradice, he began to labour in the earth with great pain. Afterward, he knew Heuah his wife, who brought him a ſonne called Caine, who was an huſbandman, and the firſt murtherer of his brother Abell, the iuſt Shepheard. In whom began the firſt perſecution of the Saintes by the wicked, for the true and ſincere ſeruice of God.

15.
30.

Geneſ. 2, 3.

In this man alſo began the kingdom or citty of God, and in the other, the citty of the World and of the Diuell, as ſhalbe better manifeſted in Nimrod. This murder being thus committed, Caine was abhominable in the ſight of God, he withdrew himſelfe from his father, and builded a Citty after the name of his firſt ſon Enoch.

The City of God, and of the world.

Geneſ. 4.

Adam had daughters alſo, and at the age of 230. yeares, he begat Seth. 138.

Seth, at the age of 105. yeares, begat Enos. 243.

Enos aged 99. yeares, begat Cainam. 325.

Cainam, aged 70. years, begat Malaleel. 395.

460. Malaleel aged 605. yeares, begat Iared.

622. Iared aged 160. yeares, begat Enoch.

¶ 7. Enoch, who at the age of 65. yeares, begate Methuſalem, walked with God, declaring his iudgements, to enſue vppon men degenerating from humaine and reaſonable Nature, into bruti∫h and vnbrideled voluptuouſneſſe. For the Sonnes of God (that is to ſay, the Sayntes, by the generation of Seth) beholding the Daughters
Geneſ. 5,6. of men (that is to ſay, the wicked by the generation of Caine) to be fayre: toke them to Wife, without any regarde, and celebrated marriages with the people of abhomination, of whome Gy-
Gyants. ants were borne, men of might, and great Renowne.

874. Methuſalem at the age of 187. yeares, begate
930. Lamech. Adam dyed aged 930. yeares: Juſt Enoch was carried aliue vp into heauen.

1056. Lamech, at the age of 182. yeares, begat Noah the deliuerer of Juſtice: whom the Poets (not vnderſtanding the creation of the worlde) called Heauens Chaos, Seede of the world, & Father of the Gods.

Noah, being 500. yeares of age, with his wife Thitea, that is to ſay Earth; or, according to the Poets, Aretia, Cybele, Veſta, and Mother of the Gods, begat Sem, Cham, and Iaphet: with whom by the commandement of God, in the hundred yeare after, he entered into the Arke which had beene built by him, and was preſerued from the Flood.

The

## The Generall Deluge.

By which inundation of waters, God brought an horrible vengeance, to punniſh the wicked liues of men.

Sem, who was Melchizedech, two yeares after the flood, begat Arphaxad, beeing then aged 100. yeares. 1659. Gen. 10,11 1695.

Arphaxad aged 35. yeares, begat Salê. 1725.

Salê, at the age of thirty yeares, begat Heber, and builded the Citty of Salem (though ſome ſay it was Sem) that ſhould be called Ieruſalem, the Citty of God, ſeated in the midſt of Iudea. Gen. 11.

Heber, of whom the Hebrewes were after named, being aged 34. yeares, begate Phaleg: at which time the earth was diuided betweene the ſonnes of Noah. Sem and his off-ſpring enioied the Eaſt part of Syria, to wit, Aſia. Cham Zoroaſtres had Iudea, Egypt, Arabia and all Affrica. Iaphet, who by the Poets is called Iapetus, had (with his people) all Europe. 1759. The diuiſion or partage of the world. Gen. 10,11 *Beroſus in 1. de Antiquit.*

Phaleg, at the age of thirty yeares, begat Reu, at which time, Nimrod the Babylonian Saturn, & hindmoſt Nephew of Cham, began his raigne; builded the Tower of Babell, where beganne the confuſion of tongues into ſeauenty two, the common language of the Hebrew remaining entyre. Samothes or Dis, King of the Gaules, (of whom the Gaules or Celts, tearme themſelues to be diſcended, as Cæſar declareth in his firſt Booke) began alſo his raigne in ſhort time after: as Gome- 1789. The kingdom of the Celts. The kingdome of Italy The kingdome of Egypt. *Beroſ 4. et 5.* The Kingdome of Spaine, &c.

rus Gallus likewise did his in Italy, and Tuball the Sonne of Iaphet his rule in Caltiberia, now called Spaine. Oceanus swayed in Egypt; as Tuscon or Ascenas did in Allemain or Germany

1821. Reu at the age of 32. yeares, begat Saruch.

1850. Saruch, aged thirtie yeares, begat Nahor, or Nachor, tearmed Fayre Iupiter the second, King of the Assyrians.

1879. Nachor, at the age of 29. yeares, begat Thares or Terah, who is saide to be Ninus the third King of the Assyrians. Hee erected Temples, Altars, and Statues to his dead father, which were a great occasion, & the verie sourse of Idolatries.

Coyne first found out in Egypt. The kingdom of the Syconians.

Osyris and Isis first found out the meanes of Corn at this time in Egypt, and nowe did Ægialeus become first King of the Sicyonians, or Peloponnesus, now named Morea.

1950. Thares, a maker and seller of Idolles, being 70 yeares of age, begat Abraham, Nahor, and Aran the Father of Lot. Semiramis the wife of Ninus, (in habit of a man) raigned ouer the Assyrians, in the name of her Sonne.

*Berosi lib. 5. Diodor. lib. 3*

2007. Noah, died aged 905. yeare old, 350. years after the flood. Saturne, Pluto, Cybele, Mother of the Gentiles Gods, Sol, Iupiter, Pallas or Minerua, Venus, Cupid, Vulcane, Mercury, and all the crew of these faigned Gods then began.

*Genes. 9.*

2025. Abraham, being aged 75. yeares, by the Commaundement of God, departed from his owne Country and Kindred, for God had promised vnto him the land of Canaan, and blessing vppon all people, by his wisedome which is Iesus Christ: he

*Genes. 12. Gen. 21, 20, 25.*

he begate Iſaac. Saron King of Gaule ordained publicke Schooles. Druis his ſucceſſor, being a verie wiſe Prince, (of whom the Druides are ſaide to be deriued) appointed Priests & Phyloſophers among the Gaules. So do affirme Berotus in his fift Booke, Cæſar in his firt Booke, and Cornelius Tacitus in the Manners of the Allemaynes or Germaines.

*Beroſus lib 5 Cæſar. lib. 6. Cor. Tacit in mor. Germ.*

2109.

Iſaac, aged 60. yeares, begat on his Wife Rebecca Eſau and Iacob, twinnes. Abraham, Sem and Heber dyed. Inachus was the auncient and firſt King of the Argiues. At this time Bardus K. of the Gaules, became the inventer of Verſes and of Muſicke, and Hercules ruled in Lybia.

Gen. 25. The kingdome of the Argiues *Beroſ. lib. 5 Diodor. lib 6*

2193.

Iacob, called Iſrael, at the age of 84. years, maried Lea and Rachel, and of them, together with their two Hand-maids, had twelue ſonnes: Ruben, Simeon, Leui, Father of the Leuites, and Prieſtly lignage: Iuda (of whom the Iewes doo hold their name) and the Royall lignage of Ieſus Chriſt diſcended: Iſſachar, Zabulon, Gad, Aſer, Dan, Nephtalin, Ioſeph, and Beniamin, all Patriarkes, with Dina, one only daughter, who was the wife of Iob, according as Philo the Iew recorded.

Gen. 29, 30

Of theſe twelue Patriarkes, the 12. Tribes or Linages deſcended. Afterward, Iacob being aged 130. yeares, went downe into Egypt with all his family, to his Sonne Ioſeph the Deputie to Pharaoh, who had bin ſold by his Bretheren. In that place he gaue vppe the ghaſt, being aged then 147. yeares: hauing propheſied, that Ieſus

2229

Gen. 37, 41

Christ should come, before that the Scepter were
Genes. 49. taken from Iuda, or a Duke of his generation.
Galathes the Sonne of Hercules, was King of
2257. Gaule, whereof it tooke the name, Prometheus
and Atlas at this time were very excellent Astro-
logians.

2311. Ioseph dyed 54. yeares after his Father. The
Genes. 50. Israelites now began to be euill intreated by the
Egyptians. Moses the last Nephew of Leui, was
2375. borne 64. yeares after the death of Ioseph. Ce-
crops then builded the Citty of Athens, and was
The king-dome of Athens. first King thereof: Also, he was the first Authour
of the most abominable idolatries, that euer were
among the Grecians. The Deluge of Deucalion.

## Princes and Iudges of Israel.

Exodus.

2454. MOses, aged 80. yeares, by the commande-
Leuiticus. ment of God reproued Pharoah; wrought
Numbers. many myracles in Egypt, with-drew the people
of Israel out of Egypt by the Red-Sea, being in
number more then fiue hundred thousand.

This their departure thence, happened in the
Exod. 12. Galath. 3. yeare 430. of the promise made to Abraham, for
the blessing of all Nations by his seede. Moyses
gaue the Law to the people (in the Deserts of A-
rabia) as a School-maister, vntil the comming of
the promised seed. For this cause he ordained for ȳ
sins of the people, diuers Ceremonies of sacrifices
marriages, punishments, & solemnities of feasts.
For the action of War, he numbred more then fiue
Deuteron. hundred and three thousand, without compre-hen-
sion

ſion of the Leuites, to whom he prescribed their charge. In the end, he instructed the rude people in diuers commandements. For Gods ordinances he constituted Iosuah his succeſſour, and rendred vp his spirit in the 120. yeare of his life: and of the departing out of Egypt, the 40. read Exodus, Leuiticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy, all which are here thus briefely collected. Dardanus hauing slaine his Brother Iason, was the first King of Troy. Iamgines was then King in Italy: the most cruell Tyrant Busiris King in Egypt: and Mercurius Trismegistus, that is to say: three times the most great King, Priest and Philosopher: See M. Ficinus in his life.

The kingdome of Troy.

Iosuah passed the people dry foote thorough the Riuer of Iordan, into the Land of Promise. The Sunne stayed while he fought the battel: he slew one and thirty Kings. And after he had distributed their Countries amongst the people: he died thirty yeares after the death of Moyses. The Israelites then left God, and serued Idols. Orcus, King of the Molosses made then a rape of Proserpina: And Cadmus brought the Charracters of Letters into Greece.

1460. Iosuah.

Othoniell, of the Lignage of Iuda, gouerned the people eight yeares, and was the third Iudge of Israel in order, and not the first, as some haue supposed. He deliuered the people from the oppression of the King of Mesopotamia.

2526. Iudges 3.

Aiod or Ehud, slew the king of the Moabites, raigned eight yeares, and deliuered the people from the idolatry of the Moabites. In this time began

2534. Iudges 3.

began, but much rather encreased the Gods and Idolatries of the Gentiles (according to Iosephus) as Bacchus, Pandion, Radamanthus, Æacus, Minos King of Creet. Dedalus and Icarus, at this time made their flight. Tantalus Amphion, founder and first King of Thebes. Linus.

2614. Barach with Debora the Prophetesse, iudged 40. yeares, ouercame with ten thousand men only, the Army of Sisara, consisting of two hundred thousand men. The Argonantes sayled then to Colchos; then liued Areus and Thiestes, Pan also, and Midas King of Phrygia, abounded in Treasures.

2654. Gedeon a valiaunt Captaine, iudged fortie yeares, and deliuered the Israelites from the seruitude of the Madianites. In this time liued Circes, Medea, Enchantereſſes, with Medusa and Andromeda. Euristheus first king of Mycena, & was slaine by Æacides, hauing commaunded (well neere) thorough all Greece, for the space of forty fiue yeares togither.

The kingdome of the Micenes

2694. Abimelech, the naturall Son of Gedeon, was Iudge three yeares, he slew 69. of his naturall & legitimate Brethren, only that he might raigne. Sparta or Lacedemon was the̅ builded by Spartus the Sonne of Phoroneus: Others doo attribute the building thereof to Aritthenes, who was their first king.

2697. Thola was Iudge 25. yeares: then liued Ruth Mother to the Grand-mother of Dauid: then also were Castor, Pollux, Apollo the inuenter of Musicke, Æsculapius his Sonne, Orpheus and

Ruth.

Museus

Muſeus, who were the firſt Poets, according to Linus.

Iair iudged 22. yeares, during which time, the people liued in marualous quiet, as they did before, in the raigne of Thola. But afterward there happened interregnum eighteen yeares together: in all which time, the Iſraelites were ſeruile to the Philiſtims, for their idolatries. Pyrrhus then inuented the Tennis Play: Theſeus vanquiſhed the Minotaure, and Hercules came from Spayne into Italy, 55. yeares before Æneas. 2710.

Iephta the Baſtard was Iudge ſixe yeares, and being thereto compelled by his vow, hee ſlew his onely Daughter. Theſeus now made his rape of Helena, ſhee being then a very young Mayden. Sybilla Æricthrea, liued in this time, ſhee that fore-told the ruine of Troy, and of whom Homer telleth many goodly tales. 2760.

Abeſan or Ibſan iudged ſeuen yeares: The Hiſtory of Ruth happened in this time. Pluto, Neptune, then were, and Paris ſtole Helena, the wife to Menelaus king of the Lacedemonians. 2766.

Elon was Iudge ten years, in whoſe time happened the Warre betweene the Greekes and the Troyans, for the rape of Helena Wife to Menelaus, by Paris Sonne to Priam, the laſt King of Troy. 2773. The war of Troy.

Abdon iudged eight yeares, Æneas with his companions came into Italy, and Francus (if wee may beleeue Manethous and others) the Sonne of Hector, with his followers alſo came into Auſtria. Of the one deſcended the Latines, & kings 2783.

of

of the Romaines: and of the other the Kinges of France. In these dayes liued Pilades and Orestes the two loyall friends.

2791. Sampson the strong, was Iudge 20. yeares, he slew a thousand Philistims with the iaw-bone of an Asse, and was deceiued by a Strumpet. The Linage or Tribe of Beniamin was now almost vtterly destroyed, onely through detestable voluptuousnesse. Iudges 20.

2811. Hely Priest and Iudge, raigned fortie yeares, and was punnished of God, for his ouer great indulgence towards his children. The Ark of Moses was then taken by the Philistims. Brute the Sonne of Syluius third King of the Latines, expulsed then the cruell Gyants out of the Iland, which (after his owne name) he called Brittaine, now England, and deuided his Land to his three Sonnes, in three seuerall kingdoms, to wit, Loegria to Locrine: Cambria, now called Wales, to Camber; and Albania, now called Scotland, to his third Sonne Albanact.

2851. Samuel the Prophet, and innocent Iudge to those wicked children. He annointed Saul to the Israelites, they desiring a King. And then began the kingdome of the Lacedemonians, instituted by Euristhenes, and of the Cornthians founded by Atletes.

The kingdomes of Lacedemō & Cornth

## Kings of all the Iewish people.

2851. SAule, first King of the Israelites, with Samuel raigned fortie yeares. Hee pardoned Agag

King

King of Amalec his Priſoner, and reſerueth the ſpoile to Sacrifice to God, contrary to his Commandement. He toke counſell of Pythoniſſa the Enchantreſſe: for which he was repꝛoued of God, and was ſlaine in the battell. I. Kinges.

Dauid, both King and Pꝛophet, in his youth he was a Shepherd, and feared God: but afterward forgetting himſelfe, he committed both adultry & murder. He raigned forty yeares, and being wearied with many moleſtations, he wꝛote his Booke of Pſalmes to the glory of God. To him was renewed the ancient pꝛomiſe of Jeſus Chꝛiſt, and of his eternall kingdom: who (as concerning his manhood, and accoꝛding to the fleſh) deſcended of him. 2891. II. Kinges.

Salomon raigned forty yeares. Of ſuch pꝛouiſion as Dauid (with mighty expences) had pꝛepared: in the fourth yeare of his raigne hee builded a Temple to God, which in ſeauen yeares after was finiſhed, it being 80. yeares, after ỹ comming forth of Egypt. He compoſed the Pꝛouerbs, Eccleſiaſtes, and the Canticles. At length, ſpending his time in the delight of women & ſtraunge Concubines: he, who was a holy man, elected of God as both Sonne and King: fell into idolatry. In regard whereof, his kingdom (after his death) was deuided to the kingdom of Iuda, which was foꝛ Rehoboam the Sonne of Salomon; & to the kingdome of Iſraell, foꝛ Ieroboam the Sonne of Nabat. 2931. III. Kinges. Kings. 3, 6.

Kings

Kings of Iuda, or of Ieruſalem.

2971. REhoboam the Sonne of Salomon, King of Iuda, deſpiſed his Elders, and adhered to the counſell of young heads. He raigned wickedly 17 yeares. Ieroboam the firſt King of Iſrael, induced the people to idolatry. In this time flouriſhed the Poet Homer.

2988. Abiam the Sonne of Rehoboam, raigned three yeares. He trusting in God, ouercame Ieroboam king of Iſrael, who was accompanied with eight hundred thouſand choſen, ſtrong & valiant men, yet loſt fiue hundred thouſand of them, by the others Army, which conſiſted but of foure hundred thouſand.

2991 Aſa, a very good King, raigned one and fortie yeares: he toke away the Idols, and depoſed his Mother from the Title of Lady, becauſe ſhee had erected them. He, trusting in his Phyſitians, and not requiring helpe of God, being diſeaſed in his feete, dyed.

3032. Ioſaphat raigned fiue and twenty yeares, he was a moſt debonaire Prince, appointing euery where Law-makers and Magiſtrates, admoniſhing them daily to do their dutie. In his time the great Prophet Helias was wrapt vp into heauen. Ahab a moſt wicked King of Iſrael, toke to wife Iezabel as wicked a woman: they were both reproued by the Prophet Elias: The Prieſtes of Baal were deſtroyed.

1111. Kings. 4. Kings 2.

3555. Iehoram, the wicked Sonne of a vertuous Father,

ther raigned eight yeares, beeing the husband to Athalia the Sister of Achab. Now was the prophet Elizeus. In these dayes Licurgus the Lawmaker, did cut off the excesse of fode & garments: Hesiodus.

Othozias, importuned by his Mother Athalia, the Daughter of Amry, raigned wickedly one yeare. He was ouerthrowne by Iehu, king of Israel, the last of Salomons line. Iehu also vanquished Iezabel, & the wife and brethren of Achab, with all the Priestes of Baal, in whose Temple they made their Thefts and Robberies. 3060.

Athalia slew all the Royall seede or race, except Ioas, who was nourished and kept by Iehoida. Afterward Athalia was slaine in the seuenth year of her raigne. 3061.

Ioas raigned iustly fortie years, during the time of Iehoida the Priest: who being dead, hee slew Zacharias his sonne in the Temple. Sardanapalis king of the Assyrians beeing then vanquished, threw himselfe into a fire. Afterward his Monarchie was diuided among his Officers, into the kingdomes of Assyria and Medea. Pigmalion being king of Tyre, Dido his Sister builded Carthage, which she reduced into a kingdome: shee being a woman verie magnanimous, and chast, as Iustine affirmeth, in his eightéenth Booke, whatsoeuer Virgill and Ouid say to the contrary. 3067. The kingdome of Carthage.

Amasius raigned fiue and twentie yeares: hee was admonished by the Prophet, not to put his trust in humain strength: yet for idolatry he was taken and slaine by his enimies. Some do report, 3107.

that

that at this time was the ending of the effeminat Sardanapalus, and so consequentlie of the first Assyrian Monarchy, which continued after Nimrod, 1358. yeares.

3126. Osias raigned iustly two and fiftie yeares. He vndertook the sacrifycing Priests office, for which he was smitten with Lepрosie, in the 18. yeare of his raigne. In this time, Abdias, Amos, and Ioel the Prophets liued. Belus, by some termed Belocus, first King of the Babylonians, was translated to the new kingdome of the Assyrians, and now was the beginning of the Olympiad in Greece. Then also beganne the kingdome of the Medes, by Arsacus Lieutenant to the womanish Sardanapalus: And that of the Macedonians by Gramaus.

The kingdomes of the Medes and Macedonians.

3188. Ioathan a good King, raigned sixténe yeares, in which time were Micheas, Nahum, and Ionas the Prophets. Romulus and Remus, in the first yeare of the seauenth Olympiade, builded the Citie of Rome in Italy: For the beginning whereof, it is necessarie to read Dionisius Halicarnasseus in his first Booke: Solynus Cap. 2, and Pausanias, rather then Catoes Originals, and Fabius Pictors fragments, suspected rather of Noueltie, then antiquity: according to Beat. Reuanus. Some do referre it to the following raigne: about this time began the kingdome of the Lydians, by Ardis,

The kingdom of the Lydians.

3204 Achaz the idolater, raigned sixténe years. Esay then prophesied (as appeareth in his seauenth Chapter) of Iesus Christ, to bee borne of a Virgin.

gin. And Micheas, that hee ſhould be borne in Bethlehem: About this time began the kingdom of the Romaines, by Romulus. The kingdom of the Romans.

Ezechias a good King, raigned 29. yeares: hee brake the Serpent of Moſes, whereunto the people had ſo many yeares offered Sacrifice. Salmanazar King of the Aſſyrians (for Idolatry) ruined the whole kingdom of Iſrael vnto Samaria, which had continued 244. yeares. The Angell of God did then ouerthrow an hundred & four-ſcore M. men of warre, in the Army of Sennacherib, for their moſt execrable blaſphemies. Tobias was captiue then in Niniuy. Numa Pompillius, king of Rome, added two months to the yeare, January and February, there being no more before, but ten, in regard of them. 3216

Manaſſes, being a wicked and cruel king, raigned 55. yeares: he cauſed the Prophet Eſay to be ſawed in ſunder thorow the middeſt. And being captiued by his enemies, he acknowledged God; and being reduced to his kingdom, he demoliſhed the Idols. Tullus Hoſtilius, third King of Rome deſtroyed the kingdom of Alba, whence came the family of the Iulij to Rome. Candaulus & Gyges were then Kings of Lydia. 3247.

Amon, a more wicked King then his Father Manaſſes, raigned two yeares, and was ſlaine by his owne ſeruants. Zaleucus was then Law-giuer to the Locrians. 3302. 4. Kings 11

Ioſias a very good King, raigned 31. yeares: he cut downe the hallowed Woods and the Idolles. In this time the Bookes of Moyſes, which for 3304.

many yeares together had bin loſt, were found againe, and now liued Sophonie, Abacuck, and Ieremy the Prophets: as alſo Archilocus, Simonides, and Phocylides Poets. Ancus Martius, was the fourth king of Rome, Epimenides.

3335. Ioacham, a very euill King, the third moneth of his raigne, was led captiue into Egypt, and his Brother conſtituted king in his place, by the king of Egypt.

3336. Iocim raigned eleauen yeares. For his abhominations, he was chained and led captiue to Babylon, by Nabuchadonoſer the great king of the Aſſyrians. Tarquinius Priſcus, was fift king of the Romains. In Greece then liued Sapho, Steſichorus, Pherecydes, Draco, Solon, and others of the Sages.

3346. Ioachim, otherwiſe called Ieconias, being 18. yeares old, and beſiedged by the Aſſyrians, yeelded himſelfe with his Mother, his Princes, and the greater part of his people, to Nabuchadonoſer and was tranſported into Babylon, where (in priſon he begat Salathiell, Father to Zorobabell: then liued Ezechiell, Baruch, and Daniell.

3349. Sedechias his Vnckle, was conſtituted king in the place of Ieconias, by Nabuchadonoſer, by whom, after the eleuenth yeare of his raigne, hee was taken as a Rebell: his eyes were pluckt out, and then he was led with the reſt of the people to Babylon. In this time, the Temple and City of Ieruſalem was miſerably burned by the Aſſyrians

Then happened that lamentable captiuity of Babylon, fore-told by the Prophets, and continued

ed ſeauentie yeares: all which was occaſioned by the contempt of Gods word, falſe Doctrine, and auarice in the Prieſts and Prophets: conioyned with the tirrany of their Kings, and ſinnes of the people, but eſpecially idolatry: as appeareth in Ieremy, Cap. 19, 22, 23, 29, 32. Baruch 6. Ezechiell 13, 22. And then was this great Nabuchadonoſer (for his arrogancie) thruſt out of his kingdome, and fed with the Beaſts. Seruius Tullius was firſt King of the Romaines; Crœſus in Lydia, Balthazar in Babylon, and, for abuſing the Veſſels of the Temple, hee was ſlaine. The kingdome then deuolued to Darius the Medean, Vnckle of Cyrus, King of Perſia and Medea.

# The Monarchy of the Caldeans, Aſſyrians, or Babylonians.

NAbuchadonoſer, the great King of Babylon, in the 24. yeare of his raign, and of the world 3362. was he that eſtabliſhed the great and firſt Monarchy, deſcribed with that of the Perſians, Grecians, and Romaines by Daniell, compared to the head of gold, and to the Eagle flying. It endured but ſeauenty eight yeares, in three kings, and he that raigned longeſt, it was but 43 yeares. 3362. Daniel. 2, 7

Euilmerodach, whom Herodotus calleth Labynitus, raigned thirty yeares. Thales, Clito, Pittacus, Bias, Cleobulus and Periander, wiſe- 3382. Herod. lib. 1

men of Greece, are all referred to this time. And it is an error to seperate them otherwise, as some haue done, Solon being the most ancient.

3412. Balthazar, the contemner of God, and renewer of the olde Caldean idolatry (abolished before) abusing (in his feasts) those vessells, which had bin taken from the temple of Ierusalem, and making a mockery at the true God of the Iewes; was put to death by the Medes and Persians, who possessed themselues of the Monarchy, in the tenth yeare of his raigne. There is great difficulty about this Monarchie, which cannot heere bee declared.

Blasphemie the ruine of the monarchy.

# The Monarchy of the Persians.

3406. CYrus sent home the Iewes into their country, with Zerobabell their conducter, to repayre the Temple. He made warre against the Scythians for the space of sixteene yeares: in which time raigned his Son Cambyses. Daniell then foretold the passion of Iesus Christ, and the desolate ruine of Ierusalem vnder Vespasian, after seauenty Weekes were passed ouer, which were 490. yeares after the repayration of the Citty: Tarquine the proude, for the violation of Lucretia, was then chased out of Rome. Consulles were created the year 244. after the building of Rome. Cyrus raigned 29. yeares. Read more of Cyrus & his sonne, Herodotus lib. 1, 3. Xenophon 8.

Dan. 9. Matth 24 Luke 21

Cambyses

Cambyſes raigned alone eight yeeres, being a cruell man. he ſlew his Brother and Sister. and cauſed a Judges ſkin to be flayed off, becauſe hee had iudged falſely. Pythagoras the great Phyloſopher ſailed into Egypt, to learne Diuinity, and to Babylon for Aſtrologie, and the courſe of the ſtarres. Many doo referre the Hiſtory and ouerthrow of Holofernes to this time: but according to Genebrard, it is reputed to the time of Nabuchadonoſer. 3435.

Darius, the ſonne of Hidaſpes, otherwiſe called Ahaſuerus, the huſband of Heſter, raigned 36 yeares. He entred into Greece with fiue hundred thouſand fighting men, & afterward vanquiſhed Miltiades, being accompanied onely with eleuen thouſand men. Coriolanus the Romane was now put into exile, and Eſope compoſed his booke of Fables. Now liued alſo Anacharſis, Anaximenes, and Heraclitus Phyloſophers. Anaximander inuented the Horologe and Spheare, & ſtrong Milo was in this time. Read more of Darius in Herodotus and Iuſtine, Lib. 1. 3443.

Xerxes raigned twenty yeares. Hee aſſayled the Grecians with a far greater Army, then that his Father had, which was repulſed by Themiſtocles. In meane while, his Sonne Artaxerxes held the Kingdome, by whoſe commaundement, Eſdras reſtored the Common-weale of the Iewes; and Nehemias (by ſtrong hande) repayred the walles of the Citty. Now liued Cimon, Ariſtides and Pindarus the Poet, as alſo Pericles, that wiſe and valiant Athenian Captaine: of whom, 3470.

read

read more in his life, set downe by Plutarch.

3506. Artaxerxes, or Darius Long-hand, held the kingdom aboue twentie yeares. Now did the ten men write the law of the twelue tables at Rome; and now liued Empedocles, Sophocles, Gorgias, Anacreon, Democritus, Euclides, Hippocrates, and Herodotus. Greece became diuided into two factions, by reason of a great & contentious war. Read more thereof in Thucidides & Xenophon.

The Pelaponesian warre.

3544. Darius the Bastard raigned 19. years: in whose time liued Socrates, Aristophanes, Thucidides, Alcibiades, Lysander, Conon, Epaminondas, Architas, Timon, Dionisius of Siracusa the Tyrant. And now was the kingdome of the Sicambrians, and Francus in Franconia (according to Trithemius) where raigned forty Kings.

3565. Artaxerxes Mnemon, raigned fortie yeares, and exercised acts of Armes with his Brother Cyrus. Thrasibulus chased the Lacedemonian Tyrants out of Athens. Rome was taken by the Gaules, vnder the conduct of Brennus that bold warriour. Then liued Xenophon the Captaine, Philosopher and Orator, Plato, Phocion, Isocrates, Polybius, Praxiteles, Metasthenes, Camillus, and Crates.

*Tit Liu dec. 4. Lib. 8.*

3604. Ochus (a most cruell Tyrant) raigned fire and twenty yeares. Philip King of Macedon, oppressed the liberty of all Greece. At Rome was then Curtius Torquatus, Decius Corinnus: the hundred and sirty Matron Sorceresses. Iadus was High-Priest of the Iewes, and then liued Berosus the Historian.

Arses

Arſes or Arſaces, raigned three yeares. His tyrannicall actions were the cauſe, that all the race of great Cyrus periſhed. Alexander the great, the Son of Phillip, then vanquiſhed and demoliſhed the Citty of Thebes: And then were Demoſthenes, Diogenes, and Epicurus. 3625.

Darius the laſt King, was ingrateful and diſloyall, hee was alſo ouer-come by Alexander, in the firſt yeare of his raigne. The Samnites then ſubdued the Romaines: and then was Ceius Papyrius Curſor. M. Curius Dentatus, triumphing in his humility of minde, refuſed the treaſures of the Samnites, and he would neither be vanquiſhed in warre, nor corrupted with money. Valer. Max. lib. 2. cap. 3. 3629.

## The Monarchy of the Græcians.

ALexander the great, hauing one onely Army, of two and thirty thouſand footmen, and foure thouſand fiue hundred horſemen, marched thorow all Aſia. In the ſeuenth yeare of his Monarchy, he was poyſoned in Babylon. Read his life, ſet downe in Plutarch, and Iuſtine lib. 11. 3630.

After his death, there grew diſſention betweene the Captaines and Macedonian Lordes, who ſhould be ſucceſſour of this great Empyre. At length it was reſolued on the perſon of Arideus, ſur-named Phillip, the Brother of Alexander, & Perdiceas was created Captaine General. Soone after, the Prouinces and Gouernments were diſtributed among Alexanders Captains, who im-

mediately appropriated them to themselues, each one enioying the title and quality of a king. Thus this great Monarchy was deuided into many parts and kingdomes: all which (neuertheleſſe) were (in ſhort while) reduced into three principall kingdomes, Macedon, Syria, and Egypt.

*Of Macedon, and the ſucceſsion of Kings there raigning*

3641. ARideus Phillippus, the Brother of Alexander, who had bin elected ſucceſſor, raigned in Macedon ſix yeares, gouerning wholy by Antipater, who managed all the affaires of the kingdome. This king was ſlain by Olympias the mother of Alexander.

3647. Caſſander the Sonne of Antipater, after the death of Arideus inuaded Macedon, hauing cauſed the Mother and wife of Alexander to be ſlain, Olympias and Roxana: hee raigned eighteene yeares.

3665. Antipater and Alexander, the ſons of Caſſander, raigned together foure years. Antipater ſlew his Mother. Alexander made warre vpon Antipater, calling Demetrius to his aide: who cauſed him to be ſlaine.

3669. Demetrius, after the death of Alexander, raigned ſeauen yeares. But hauing attempted to recouer the Empire of his father Antigonus in Aſia-minor, which Seleucus then held: he was vanquiſhed and taken by Seleucus, and dyed in priſon.

Anti-

Antigonus, Gomathes, the Sonne of Demetrius, raigned afterwarde in Macedon, for the ſpace of 36. yeares, hauing recouered the kingdome, which (after his Fathers death) had bæne inuaded by many, that held it for the ſpace of eight yeares. For Pyrrhus King of the Epirotes, held it firſt. Lyſimachus next tooke it from him, while he was ſeriouſly buſied with the Romaines. Lyſimachus being dead, Ptolomeus Ceraunus inuaded it: but in ſhort while after, this Ptolomie was ſlaine by the Gaules, who came into Macedon, and (by this meanes) Antigonus re-entred vpon the kingdome of his Father. 3686.

Demetrius, who raigned eight yeares, left his Sonne, named Phillip, verie young in years, and one Antigonus was made his Tutor or Gouernor, who marrying with the Mother of his Pupill, by that meanes made himſelfe king. 3721.

Antigonus Doſon raigned twelue yeares. Aratus chiefe of the Achaian line, hee called to his aide, againſt Cleomines King of the Lacedemonians, who was vanquiſhed by Antigonus, and tooke the Cittie of Sparta. 3733.

Phillip the ſon of Demetrius, raigned 44. years: and hauing made warre againſt the Romaines, he was vanquiſhed vnder the conduct of T. Quintus Flaminius, and all taken from him that he inioyed, except the ſole kingdome of Macedon: wherein ſucceeded 3742.

Perſeus who raigned eleuen yeares. Hée was vanquiſhed and taken priſoner by Paulus Æmilius, Conſull and Captaine Generall of the Romaines, 3786.

maines, and led in triumph to Rome, the yeare of the Citties building, 587. And then was Macedon reduced into the forme of a Prouince.

*Of Syria, and the Succession of the Kings there raigning.*

3653. After the death of Alexander the Great, Seleucus was the first king of Syria. Perdiccas being dead, he regained the Cittie of Babylon, & part of the Indiaes. Some after, by the helpe of Ptolomy king of Egypt, hee made warre against Antigonus, who commaunded in the lesser Asia: and hauing ouercome him, laid claime to the kingdome, and was made King thereof, and in short time after, he ioyned al Asia-minor to Syria. Antigonus being slaine in battaile: And thus by him was established the great Empire of Syria. Hee vanquished also Lysimachus, and took from him the kingdom of Macedon. But soon after, he was slaine by Ptolomeus Cerannus, hauing raigned 32. yeares in Syria.

3684. Antiochus Soter (that is to say, Sauior or Preseruer) the Son of Seleucus, raigned 19. yeares, to whom succeeded.

3703. Antiochus, surnamed *Deos*, that is to say God, who raigned 15. yeares.

3718. Seleucus Callinicus, the son of Antiochus, raigned twentie yeares. In his time, Arsaces the Parthean, reuolted from his obedience, & hauing vanquished manie of his neighboring Nations, hee founded the kingdom of the Partheans, which afterward became most potent. Seleu-

Seleuchus, ſirnamed Cerannus, (that is to ſay, *Lightning*) raigned three yeares : And after him came Antiochus the great, who raigned 36. yeers. He was conquered by the Romans (vnder the Scipioes conduct) in two foughten battailes: with whom (afterward) he made peace, on condition that he ſhould leaue the leſſer Aſia, from ỹ mountaine Taurus, to the Romans. After whom ſucceeded his ſonne. 3775. 3741.

Seleuchus Philopater, that is to ſay, *A Louer of his Father*, who reigned twelue yeares. 3777

Antiochus Epiphanes (that is to ſay, Famous) who alſo was ſonne to great Antiochus, raigned twelue yeares. This is the King that tok Jeruſalem, and did ſo much harme to the Jewes, polluted and contaminated the Temple, and would conſtraine them to change their Religion. He put the ſeauen brethren moſt cruelly to death, & made a moſt famous Martyrdome of them. His Army was vanquiſhed by Iudas Machabeus, and after him, his ſonne, 3790.

Antiochus Eupator, raigned two yeares. In which time, Demetrius the Sonne of Seleuchus Philopater (who had beene giuen in Hoſtage to the Romans, for the peace of Antiochus ỹ great, his Graundfather) being fled from Rome, & come into Syria; cauſed a great number of the people to reuolt, that afterwarde deliuered him into the handes of the ſaid King Antiochus, who cauſed him immediatly to be put to death. 3801

Demetrius Soter, after the death of Antiochus, raigned 1. yeares. In this time, the Jewes were 3802

gouer-

gouerned by the Machabees.

3813. Alexander, the naturall ſonne of Antiochus Epiphanes, hauing gathered an Army, and being ſeized of ſome Citties in Syria, vanquiſhed Demetriu. in battaile, and ſlew him. This Alexander raigned fiue yeares.

3818. Demetrius Nicanor, the ſonne of Demetrius Soter, came into Syria with an Army, and being ayded by the King of Egypt, he inuaded the kingdome. Alexander fled into Arabia, where he was ſlaine: and Demetrius raigned two yeares.

3820. Antiochus Sedectes, the ſonne of Alexander, (aſſiſted by Triphon) ſerpulſed Demetrius, and inuaded the kingdome, which he held 3. yeares.

3823. Triphon ſlew Antiochus and poſſeſſed himſelf of Syria, where he raigned three yeares: Demetrius being yet liuing, who was (in ſhort while after) taken by the Partheans.

3826. Antiochus, ſurnamed Soter and Pinus, Brother of Demetrius Nicanor vãquiſhed Tryphon, who afterward was ſlaine: And hauing raigned twelue yeares, he died in a battel againſt the Partheans.

3838. Demetrius Nicanor, who before had raigned two yeares, was let go by the Partheans, & raigned afterward foure yeares more: But being ouercome in battaile by Alexander Zebin, he was ſlaine.

3841. Alexander Zebin, whome the King of Egypt had ſent to the Syrians complaining of the cruelty of Demetrius, raigned three yeares.

3844 Antiochus Grypus, the ſonne of Demetrius, hauing

uing vanquiſhed and ſlaine Alexander Zebin in battell, raigned 29. yeares. During which time, his Brother Antiochus the Cyzicenian, made warre vpon him, without intermiſſion.

After the death of this Antiochus Grypus, mightie troubles were in Syria for ſome time, becauſe they of the royall race were in continuall warres, killing and maſſacring one another. Vntill ſuch time as one Antiochus (the ſole remainder of that race) dying without any ſucceſſor: Tigranes K. of Armenia inuaded this great kingdom: whereupon he was (not long after) ſurpriſed by the Romaines, vnder the conduct of Pompey, and the Country was then reduced into the forme of a Prouince: the yeare of the Citty of Rome, 693.

*Of Egypt, and the Succeſsion of the Kings there raigning.*

PTolomeus Lagus, Soter the moſt excellent man of all Alexanders Captains, was made King, & raigned fortie yeares ouer Egypt: Theophraſtus, Zeno, Theocritus, and Menander then liuing, and the Romaines made Warre againſt Pyrrhus. Read more of this King in Iuſtine, lib. 13, 14, 15. Oroſius lib. 3, cap. 23. Ferguſius was the firſt king of Scotland. 3641.

The kingdome of Scotland.

Ptolome Philadelphus, raigned 38. yeares. He firſt appointed that great Library in Alexandria, and cauſed the Bookes of the Bible to be tranſlated into the Greeke tongue, by the ſeauentie two Interpreters. Ariſteus, Phalaris, Chriſyppus, Carneades, 3682.

Carneades, and Aratus then liued: and at Rome happened the first Punick warre, Regulus.

Ptolomey the Liberall, husband to his owne
3717. Sister, raigned 26. yeares. At Rome then grew the second Punick War: and then liued the Scipioes, Fabius Maximus, and Marcellus. Hanniball was vanquished by Scipio Affricanus the eldest: And in this time liued the Authour of the Booke of Wisedome.

Ptolomey the Parricide, raigned 17. yeares. He
3743 slew his Mother and his Sister, who also was his wife. At Rome began the warre of Macedon, against King Phillip; and the war of Asia, against the great Antiochus, and Hanniball the Fugitiue. Then liued great Cato, Ennius, Neuius, Plautus, Panetius: And Iesus the Sonne of Syrach, Author of the Booke of Ecclesiasticus: Simon the Iust being Byshop of the Iewes.

Ptolomey Epiphanes, vnder the tutelage of the
3760. Romaines, raigned 24. yeares. The Brethren Macchabees did then valiantly withstande Antiochus, the most cruell Tyraunt of Syria: his great repentance is to be read in the second Booke of Macchabees, the ninth Chapter.

Ptolomey, called Matricide, raigned 35. years.
3784. Paulus Æmilius hauing taken the Persian king, made Macedon a Prouince to the Romaynes. Then happened the third Punicke Warre: The warre of Achaia, and of Numantia in Spain, vnder Scipio Affricanus the younger, and Lelius, Terence then liuing.

Ptolomey the Liberall, otherwise called Phys-
3812. cus,

cus, a verie deteſtable man, beeing Brother to Ptolomy the Matricide, raigned nine & twentie yeares. He married his Brothers wife, and afterward her Daughter. The Sects of the Phariſies, Sadduces, and Eſſeans then aroſe. At Rome was the ſeruile warre: And the lawes for actions of the field by the Gracchi.

Sects of the Phariſies.

Ptolomey Alexander, hauing expelled his brother Lathyrus, raigned ſeauentéene yeares. Afterward he was thruſt out himſelfe by his owne people, for the death of Cleopatra, a wicked woman. At Rome was the Iugurthine warre, and three Sunnes viſibly ſéene in this time. Functius doth attribute theſe ſeauentéene yeares, and this raigne, to Ptolomey Lathyrus, preferring him before *Ptolomey Alexander*.

3848.

*pli. l. 2. ca. 31*

*Ptolomey Lathyrus*, beeing repealed to rule againe, raigned eightéene years. At *Rome* was the *Cimbrian* warre, *Mithridates* warre, and the ciuill warre betweene *Marius* and *Sylla*. Then liued *Lucullus*, *Antonius*, and *Craſſus* Orators. *Lucretius* the Poet, *Varro*: *Sylla* domineered cruelie, who retyring himſelfe, to liue ſolitarilie in the fields: dyed of Wermine engendred in his owne bodie.

3865.

Warre betweene Marius & Sylla

*Flor. lib. 3.*

*Ptolomey Auletes*, raigned thirty yeares. Beeing excluded by his owne people, vnder *Pompeyes* authority, he was reſeated by *Gabinius*. *Pompey* ouercame *Hiarbas* and *Sertorius*, the Pyrates, as alſo *Tigranes* and *Mithridates*. Then was the conſpiracy of *Cataline*; *Caſar* vanquiſhed the *Gaules*: *Cicero* liued in exile: and *Craſſus* was foiled

3883.

foyled by the *Partheans*.

3913. *Ptolomey Dionysius*, the laſt King, raigned 8. yeares: he cauſed great *Pompeyes* head to bee cut off. Then liued *Catullus*, *Hortenſius*, *Saluſt*, *Diodorus Siculus*, *Cato Vtican*, *M. Lepidus*, *Marcellus*, and *Marke Anthony*.

3920. *Cleopatra* helde the kingdome a-while with her Brother, and afterward (wholly by her ſelfe) two and twentie yeares: Shee, vnderſtanding that *Marke Anthonie* was vanquiſhed by *Auguſtus*, ſlew her ſelfe. Now was the ciuil warre betweene *Pompey* and *Cæſar*: And that goodly Library, that contained two hundred thouſand Volumes, was burned in this time. *Plutarch in vit. Antoni.*

Ciuil War betweene Cæſar and Pompey.

## *The Monarchy of the Cæſars, or Romaines.*

3918. *Iulius Cæſar*, a very gracious Prince, and one of the Worlds chiefeſt Captaines: raigned fiue yeares. He vanquiſhed *Pompey* and his confederates: *Ptolomy* hee ſlew, & reſtored *Cleopatra* his friend (Siſter to *Ptolomy*) to the kingdom of *Ægypt*. Returning home to *Rome*, he was ſlaine in the Senate houſe, by *Brutus*, *Caſſius*, and other Conſpirators. *Dioſcorides* then liued: but if you would haue more of *Cæſars* life, read *Suetonius* & *Florus*, in the life of *Cæſar*.

3923. *Octauius Auguſtus*, the laſt Nephew of *Iulius*, by the Siſters ſide, and his adopted Sonne, raigned 56. yeares: he was happy in war, moderate in peace, and liberall to euery one. Then liued *Virgil*,

*Virgill, Horace, Tibullus, Propertius, Vitruuius, Mecenas:* And then dyed *Cleopatra*, and her husband *Marke Anthony*, *Ægypt* being then reduced into a Prouince. *Herod* a ſtranger (fauoured by *Auguſtus*) was then King of *Iudea*. So, the Scepter being wholly taken from *Iuda*; Jeſus Chriſt, God and man, the Sauiour of the world, was then borne of a Virgin in *Bethlehem*, according to the Prophecies of *Iacob*, *Geneſ.* 49, *Eſay* 7, *Micheas* 5.

*Ieſus Chriſt* came in the yeare of *Auguſtus* forty two, and of the world, 3963. *Ouid* was then in exile: the Citty of *Lyons* founded: and then liued *Titus Liuius*, *Valerius Maximus*, *Strabo:* and *Francus* King of the *Sicambrians*, in the lower *Allemaigne*: *Aquila, Tuberus, Galba, Labeus* and *Caius* were then Law-giuers, or Law-Makers. *Herod* the great murderer of Innocents, and there were numbred then at *Rome*, foure hundred, forty foure thouſand men. 3963.

*Claudius Tiberius*, the Sonne of *Liuia*, afterward Wife to *Auguſtus*, raigned 23. yeares, beginning very well, but proouing afterward to bee moſt wicked. *Ieſus Chriſt*, for our ſaluation, was then crucified in *Hieruſalem*, vnder *Pilate* the Prouoſt of *Iudea:* he ſaid, that *A good Shepheard ſhould clip his Sheepe, and not deuour them.* The yeares of Chriſt.

*C. Caligula*, Sonne of *Germanus*, a moſt wicked Man, raigned thirteene yeares. This beaſt, the ruine of men, made himſelfe to bee adored as God: hee poyſoned his Vncle *Tiberius*, and deflowred all his Sisters, leauing them then to o- 17

39 thers like abusing. *T. Claudius*, Vnckle of *Caligula*, and Monster of Men, raigned foureteene yeares. He preferred *Nero* before his owne Son, by the treason of whom hee was poysoned with a Mushrome. *Messalina*, his first wife peereless in all lasciuity and wickednes, then flourished: And Saint *Peter* the Apostle liued (reported to bee the first Bishop of *Rome:*) then liued likewise *Philo* the *Iew*, *Perseus*, *Mela*, *Pliny* the elder, and *Columella*. Saint *Paule* the Apostle went then thorow the World, proclaiming *Iesus Christ*, accompanyed with Saint *Luke*. Then liued *Dionisius Arcopagita*: And then was the first Councell of *Ierusalem*.

43. *Nero*, the Sonne of *Agripina*, afterward the Wife of *Claudius*, raigned thirteene yeares. Hee was the first Persecuter of the Church, and did put Saint *Peter* and Saint *Paule* to death: hee slew likewise his Maister *Seneca*, also his owne Mother, and *Lucan* the Poet. Then liued *Simon Magus*, and *Appolonius*. *Nero* beeing expulsed from *Rome*, slew himselfe: after hee had set *Rome* on fire, to make himselfe pastime of a Bon fire.

67. *Sergius Galba* the seauenth month of his Empire, was slaine by *Otho*. *Suetonius*, *Egesius*, *Lib.* 4. *Cap.* 21.

70. *M. Siluius Otho*, he also most wickedly slewe himselfe, in the third month of his Empire: confessing, that he had cruelly tormented the spirit of *Galba*. According to *Suetonius*, and *Tacitus*, *Lib.* 7.

71 *Aulus Vitellius*, brought vp at *Bourdeaus de Caprea*,

*Caprea*, being a vicious Man and a glutton, was hewed in peeces, and caſt into *Tyber*, hauing raigned eight months. He cauſed himſelfe to bee ſerued at his Table, with two thouſand ſeuerall kinds of Fiſhes, and ſeauen thouſand of Foules, all at one ſupper. *Suetonius*, *Lib.* 9. *Ioſephus*, *Lib.* 5. *de Bel. Iudai.*

*Veſpaſian*, a modeſt and gracious Prince, a louer of ſkilfull men, and good Artiſans, raigned ten yeares, accompanied with his Sonne *Titus*, who ruinated *Ieruſalem*: *Ioſephus*, *Proclus*, *Epictetes*. This ruine was the moſt lamentable that euer happened, for therein dyed 1100000. men: read *Ioſephus* in his fiue and ſeauen Bookes of the *Iewiſh* wars, and *Egeſippus*. 71.

*Titus*, the delight and ſollace of mankind, raigned two years. He vſed to ſay, *That no man ought to depart from a Prince, with a ſad countenance*: *Caſſius*, *Neracius*, *Proculeius* and *Pegaſus* were then Lawyers, and Saint *Bartholmew* was then martired in *India*: Saint *Matthias* in *Iudea*: S. *Andrew* in *Scythia*: Saint *Mathew* in *Æthyopia*, Saint *Thomas* in *Bragmania*. *Hieruſalem* was then taken: the Famine beeing ſo extreame, as Mothers were compelled to eate their owne children. 81.

*Domitian*, Brother to *Titus*, was a moſt wicked man, and perſecuter of the Chriſtians: hee raigned fiftéene yeares: then liued *Martiall*, *Iuuenall*, *Statius*, *Trogus*: and ſaint *Iohn* wrote the Goſpell, as alſo *Ioſephus* did the Warres of the *Iewes*. *Domitian* would néedes afterward bee 83.

called God and Lord of his people, wherfore (being hated of all men) he was slaine.

97. Nerua, a good Prince, and the adopted father of *Traian*, raigned one yeare: he gaue more than an hundred thousand Crownes, to releeue poore Cittizens. He toke away extreame tarations, and (wanting mony) he sold his garments, plate and Pallace, esteeming his owne Parents and kindred much lesse, then he did the publick benefit. The Christians were in great quyet vnder him, and the banished repealed, among whome was S. Iohn.

99. Traian a good Emperour, but that he persecuted the Church: reigned 19. yeares. Being admonished, that he was ouer gracious to all men, he answered: *That he was such to his Subiects, as he could wish others should be to him, if he were a Subiect.* Then liued, S. Ignatius, S. Eustachius, Pliny the yonger, *Plutarch*, *Aulus Gellius*, *Suetonius*, *Tacitus Solinus*.

118. *Ælius Adrianus*, a man studious and skilfull in all Sciences, and the first Emperour that suffered a beard on his face, raigned 21. yeares: *Iulius Celsus*, *Iulian*, and *Neracius Friscus*, were Lawyers, & councellors to the Emperour. Then were liuing *Ptolomy* the great Astrologer, *Phanorinus*, *Dionisius* the *Milesian*, and *Heliodorus*. *Hierusalem* was repaired by *Adrian*, who therefore had his name chaunged, and was called *Helias*.

139. *Antoninus Pius*, reigned 23. yeares. He was a Prince of such esteeme, as straunge Nations would

would reſort vnto him, and make him Iudge of their differences; for hee had allway this saying ready: *I had rather ſaue one Cittizen, then kill a thouſand Enemies.* In this time were *Polycarpus, Ireneus, Iuſtine Martire, Egeſippus, Appian, Florus, Macrobius, Iuſtine, Gallen,* and *Palladius*: *Lucian* the Atheyſt, alſo was then borne with Dogs. This Emperour toke awaie the wages or hire of ſtrumpets, punniſhed idle Magiſtrats, and was called Father of his country. Read Eutropius, Lib. 8. Theleſphorus the ninth Pope (as ſome report) did then inſtitute, or rather reſtore the time of Lent.

A diuine ſaying of a Pagane.

M. Antoninus, the Phyloſopher, called Aurelius, borne in Gaule, with L. Commodus Verus, and called Brethren in the Bookes of the Pandectes) raigned 19. yeares. This good prince being vnwilling to oppreſſe his ſubiectes, made ſale of all his faireſt and richeſt Iewels, plate, & wearing garmentes belonging vnto him and his wife. Eutrop. lib. 8.

162.

Lucius Aurelius Verus, gouerned the empyre with his brother Marcus Antoninus, the ſpace of eleauen yeares: By ſome Authors he is ſet down in order before his brother, & by others after him.

L. Commodus, the moſt wicked ſonne of good Antoninus, raigned 13. yeares. He was ſtrangled by his Concubine, and other Conſpirators. Eutrop. lib. 8. Oroſius lib. 8. cap. 18. Lampridius doth moſt amply deſcribe his life at large.

181.

Ælius Pertinax raigned ſir moneths. He had refuſed the Empire, and beeing deſirous to re-

194.

forme the gouernment, he was slaine by Iulian his successour; who bought the name of Cæsar of the Warriors. The people much bemoaned this Prince, crying out aloud: O father of goodnesse; Father of the Senate; Father of al bounty: Farewell.

194. V. Iulian, raigned seauen moneths, and being hated of all men, for slaying his predecessor, himselfe was also slaine by appointment of the Senate. Dissention grew amongst the Christians, for the celebration of Easter; And the second Councell appointed the day of Sunday, and fiue other after, Euseb. lib. 5, cap. 24. Metianus, Scæuola, Martianus and Cassius, were now Iurisconsultes: Aphrodiseus and Aphronius Sophysters.

Pescennius Niger, or Nigerius, the sonne of Annius Fuscus, indifferently lerned, fierce, proud, and inclined to all vice: was saluted as Emperour by the souldiors of Syria, where he commanded, and was slaine by Seuerus.

195. I. Septimius Seuerus, raigned 18. yeares. He was a Persecutor of the Church, but otherwise a valiant Prince, addicted both to good letters and Armes. He was so well beloued, and gouerned so nobly, that the Senate said of him: *Eyther he should neuer haue bin borne, or else hee deserued neuer to die*. Read Spart. and Vict. Then liued Origen, Tertullian, Philostrates the Sophister, and Apuleyus.

Cl. Albinus, issued of the Romaines families, of the Postumians and Albines, made himselfe Empe-

Emperour in France. He was ſurpriſed by the Souldiers, and brought halfe aliue to Seuerus: where hauing his head ſmitten off, he was hanged on a gibbet, and being torne with dogges, he was throwne into the Riuer.

A. B. Caracalla, the ſonne of Seuerus, and huſband to his ſtepmother, raigned ſeuen years. He ſlue Geta his brother, and Papinian the great and famous Lawyer, with diuers other. At laſt, himſelfe was ſlaine by a ſouldior of his Guarde. Herod. lib. 4. 213.

Antoninus Geta, the ſonne of Seuerus and Iulia, borne at Milaiu, After the Parthian warre, wherein he wan great fauour, was called Cæſar Antoninus, in the life time of his father.

Op. Macrinus, with his ſonne Diadumenus, raigned one yeare. Both the one and other had their heads ſmitten off by their men of warre. Macrinus was learned and ſeuere, but (withall) deteſtable and craftie, cauſing his predeceſſor to be murdred. 220.

Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Heliogabalus, the Baſtard of Caracalla, who was a diſhoneſt whore-hunter, and moſt abhominable in life beſide: gaue great eſtates to wicked Bawds, Pandors, Jeſters, &c. And being generally deſpiſed, he was ſlaine by his ſouldiors, in the fourth year of his raigne: both his owne bodie and his mothers being dragd along the ſtræts, and caſt into the common layſtall. 221.

Alexander Seuerus, raigned peaceably without effuſion of bloud 13. years. He was a good prince, 227.

and did vtterly forbid the selling of Offices. Vlpianus, Paulus, Pomponius, Alphenens, Affricanus, Callistratus, and other excellent Ciuill Lawyers (the schollers of Papinian) then liued, with Dion the Historian, and Philostratus The kingdome of the Persians was then founded by Artaxerxes, and after transported to the Sarazens, and now commanded by the Sophi.

The kingdome of Persia

238. Maximinus, a persecutor of the Christians, raigned three yeares. Being at first but a silly shepheard, he was made Emperor by the Souldiors (without authority of the Senate) and then by them slaine.

241. Gordianus, a Prince of a Noble spirite, with his sonne named Gordianus the younger, a good Prince, raigned six yeares, and was slaine by Phillip his successor. In his time was a woonderfull Eclipse of the Sunne. Read I. Capitolinus, who placeth also Pupienus and Balbinus (created by the Senate) with Gordianus the elder.

Pupienus Maximus, a new man, and sonne to a Smith, gaue himselfe alwaies to vertue and Military seruices, proouing fortunate against the Polonyans and Germans.

M. Cælius Babynus, and Pupienus after they had borne Consuls, and that the Gordians were slaine in Affryca, were created Emperors by appointment of the Senate, against Maximinus, and both of them were vndeseruedly slaine.

Gordianus the second, yongest sonne of Gordianus by his daughter, born at Rome: was slain in

in a ſedition of ſouldiers, by *Phillip Prefect* of the *Pretorians*.

C. *Valens Hoſtilianus*, is not placed in this ranke by ſome Hiſtorians, becauſe immediately he died, ſmitten with the Peſtilence, ſo that ſcarſly there remaineth any memory of him.

*Phillip*, an *Arabian* by Nation, was the firſt Chriſtian of the *Cæſars*, and raigned fiue yeares. He gaue (by his Teſtament) all his rightes and treaſures to Pope *Fabian*, And heere began the riches of the *Roman* Church. Hee was likewiſe ſlaine by his ſucceſſour, as he had kilde his Predeceſſour. 247.

*Decius Triaan*, a perſecuter of the Chriſtians, reigned two yeares. *S. Saturnine* the Byſhop was martyred at *Tholouſe*. *S. Laurence*, *Hippolita*, *Cecily*, *Agatha*, and *Appollina*. 252.

Q. *Herennius Hetruſcus*, is not by any Hiſtorian placed among the Emperours. Neuertheleſſe, in this ranke is his picture found, in the booke of *Hubert Goltzius*, and there it is recorded of him, that he was the ſonne of *Decius*, & that he was ſlaine in *Hungaria*, in a Battel againſte the *Gothes*.

*Vibius Gallus*, with his ſonne *Voluſianus*, reigned two yeares: Being perſecutors of the Church, were both ſlain by the ſouldiors. At this time there was ſuch a contagious peſtilence, and almoſt ſo generally diſpearſed, that in many places, there was left no Creature liuing. This peſtilence continued fiftéene yeares, and ſéemed to be partly occaſioned thorough the wicked gouern- 254.

ment

ment of this Emperor.

*Æmilianus Lybienus*, borne in *Mauritania*, in his yong yeares followed Armes, and soon after he was made Emperor. He was slain at *Spoleta*, being aged 40. yeares.

256. *Licinius Valerianus*, with his sonne *Galien*, persecuting the Church, raigned fiftene yeares. He was Captiue to *Sapor* King of *Persya*, whoe vsed him as a footstool when he mounted on horsbacke. *S. Cyprian* and *S. Cornelia*, were then martyred. *Porphirius* wrote against the Christians: The thirty Tyrants vsurped the Empyre. Read *Trebellius*, *Polyo*, &c. *S. Paul* the first Hermite began the solitary life.

*Galien* the son of *Valerian*, suffered the Christians to liue in quiet, and reigned nine years alone, after that his father was ledde captiue into *Persia* by *Sapor*. He was exceeding wise, but addicted to Lust.

*Saloninus Valerianus*, the sonne of *Galien*, was slain with his Father, being retired to *Millain*, and was but ten yeares old.

*Cassius Labienus Posthumus*, from beeing a simple souldior, attained to great dignities: and being in *France* was made Emperor in the time of *Galien*, where he was slaine.

271. *Flauius Claudius*, (of whom ysued the familie of the *Constantines*) a good Prince, of Noble lignage, and highly esteemed, reigned two yeares. *Dyonisius* being then Pope, deuided the Dioceses and Parishes of the Christians. *Tom.* 1. *de Concil. Iamblicus*, *Plotinus*, and *Iuvencus* priest, redu-

reduced the foure Goſpels into *Hexameter* verſes.

*Aurelius Quintillius*, brother to *Claudius*, after the death of his brother was ſaluted as Emperor by the Senate, and ſlaine 17. daies after.

*Valerius Aurelianus*, a cruell man, reigned ſix yeares. He tormented the Chriſtians, and repulſed the *Franconians*, entring out of *Germanie* into *Gaul*. He was ý firſt that wore an Emperial Crowne: a louer of Military diſcipline, and one that rigorouſly punniſhed the vices of his Souldiors. He vanquiſhed *Zenobia* a very Warlike Lady, holding the Empyre of the Eaſt. 273.

*Tacitus* was ſlain the ſixt moneth of his empyre. This good Prince cauſed the books of *Cornelius Tacitus* to be receiued into all Libraries. The *Manicheans* began (from the time of *Aurelianus*) to infect the Church. 279.

*Annius Florianus*, brother to *Tacitus*, being deſirous to raigne, vſurped the Empyre as by inheritance: but in a ſhort time, hee was ſlaine at *Tharſus* by his ſouldiors.

*Probus* a good Prince, the Author of peace in the high and lower *Germany* or *Almain*, reigned ſix yeares and foure moneths. He ſaid *That hee had no need of Warriors, hauing no enemies; and that the ſouldior (not doing any thing) ought not to eate vp publike prouiſion.* 279.

*Carus*, a good and wiſe Prince, reigned two yeares, with his ſonnes *Carinus* and *Numerianus*, two brethren of very different nature. The firſt, was moſt wicked, and full of cruelty: The other 286.

other full of goodnesse, valour and knowledge. Then liued *Volcatius*, *Herodian*, *Lampridius*, *Spartianus*, *Pollio*, *Vopiscus* and *Capitolinus* Historians.

288. *Diocleſian* with *Maximianus Herculius*, reigned 20. yeares: he was a most cruell persecutor of the Christians, and would haue himselfe to be worshipped. *Katharine*, *Lucy*, *Agnes*, *Barbus*, *Sebastian*, *Vincent*, *Cosmo* and *Damian*, and innumerable other Martyrs through the world (in his raigne, to the number of 17. M.) were put to death in thirty daies.

*Valerius Maximus*, sirnamed *Herculius*, a man of fierce and cruell nature, was very outragious in lust, especially with his owne Sisters: blockish in giuing councell, without ciuillity and gouernment, and therfore had *Diocleſian* to assist him in the Empire.

*Constantius Chlorus*, father of *Conſtantine* and
308. *Galerius*, the one gouerned in the East, the other in the West foure yeares togither. *Conſtantine* commanded in *Gaul*, *Spaine*, *Affrica* and *Italie*: The other in *Greece*. *Arnobius*, *Lactantius*, *Dorotheus* bishop of *Tyre*, *Euſebius* and other learned personages liued at this time.

*Galerius Maximianus*, tearmed *Armentarius*, because he was a Neat-heards son, was made Emp. being a godly person, & a fortunat warrior. *Maximinus*, nephue to *Armentarius* by his sister was Emp. & persecuted the Christians in ỹ East. *Seuerus Prefect* of *Italy* and *Africke*, was published Emperor by *Galerius*, & fighting with *Maxentius*, was taken at *Ravenna* and slaine.

*Maxentius*, elected Emperor by his ſouldiors raigned a Tyrant, and was like vnto his Father *Maximinus*. Being vanquiſhed by *Conſtantine* neere to *Pont-Miluius*, he was drowned in a Gulfe, and his body neuer after found.

*Licinius Licinianus*, borne of Country Parents, was fortunate in the wars which he had againſt *Maximinus*. Afterward, hee became a mocker of Chriſt, and perſecuted ſuch as beléeued in him; and becauſe he was ignorant, hee was a great enemy to all that were learned.

*Martinianus*, was created *Cæſar* by *Licinius* againſt *Conſtantine*, he was in his camp at night, but fled before next morning.

*Conſtantine* the great, ſon of *Helena* an holy woman, with *Maxentius* and *Licinius*, reigned 31. yeares. He was religious and affable, and tranſported the Bible into diuers Countries. He aſſembled the Councell of *Nice*, againſt *Arrius* the Heretick. He builded the Citty of *Conſtantinople*, calling it after his owne name: whither the Imperiall ſeate was tranſlated, and changed from *Rome* into *Greece*, after he had granted *Syluester* to be Pope. *Euſeb. lib.* 10. *Niceph. lib.* 8.

310.

The Councel of Nice.

*Criſpus* was made *Cæſar* by his father *Conſtantine*, but being afterward falſly accuſed to his father, he was put to death, for that he would not conſent to the inordinate appetite of *Fauſtine* his Stepmother.

*Conſtantine* the ſecond, with his brethren raigned 17. yeares, ioyning thereto the three yeares raigne of *Magnentius*. *Themiſtius*, *Donatus*, and

311.

and Libanius the Sophister then liued: and S. Anthony the Heremite was knowne in Ægypt by many miracles.

358. Iulian the Apostata, held the true Religion ten yeares, and was named Emperor by the men of warre in Paris, against his will. He forbad the Christians the study of letters: and being wounded to death, hee cryed out: At length thou hast vanquished, O Galilean, S. Cyrill, Optatus, Basile, Nazianzene, Epiphanius, Hilarie, Didimus, Exuperus (all learned Diuines) then flourished.

368. Iouianus, a kind and learned man, raigned eight months, and made confession to his Warriours, of the name of Iesus Christ. Now was the first order of Monkes instituted by S. Basile, vnder certaine rules of liuing.

368. Valentian, a good and Catholique Prince, and Valens his Brother, raigned fifténe years. This man held the error of the Arrians, and constrained the Monkes to vndertake Armes in war: he died vnhappily.

381. Gratian, the son of Valentinian, during whose whole life time, hee was an associate in the Empire. Hee raigned afterward with Valentinian the second, his younger Brother, and Theodosius fiue yeares.

387. Maximus learned Emperor by his Souldiers, slew Gratian, and held the Empire foure yeares: after which time, Valentinian returned to the Empire againe fiue yeares.

395. Theodosius, after that Gratian was slaine by Maximus, raigned three yeares with his Brother Valentinian:

Valentinian: the death of whom was bemoaned by Saint Ambroſe, for the great zeale hee had to Chriſtian Religion. S. Hierome, S. Auguſtine, and P. Oroſius then liued.

Arcadius and Honorius, the Sons of Theodoſius, raigned twenty nine yeares, as well in the Eaſt as in the Weſt. About this time, the great Empire of Rome began to decline (by the infidelity of Ruffinus and Stilico their Tutors.) The very greateſt part thereof was vſed by the Scythians, Burgundians, Lombardes, Hungarians, French, Goths, and Vandals: And Rome was foure times taken by the Goths and Vandals, within a 139. yeares. Then liued S. Chryſoſtom and Claudian. 399

Rome foure times ſurprized.

Honorius raigned with Theodoſius, Sonne to his Brother, ſixténe yeares. 411.

Theodoſius the ſecond, youngeſt Sonne of Arcadius, raigned at Conſtantinople twenty ſeuen yeares, after the death of Honorius; hauing aſſiſted Valentinian the third, the Son of Conſtantius, and Placida Daughter to Theodoſius, who raigned fiue yeares in the weſt. At this time, the Frenchmen leauing Franconia, beganne to enter vppon the Gaules, vnder Clodion their ſecond King. 427.

F. Valerius Martianus, raigned in the Eaſt ſeauen years, and Valentinian the third (at the ſame time) in the weſt: during their raigne, the Burgundians & other weſtern Nations, were conuerted to the Faith. The Vandals came out of Spayn into Affrica, and afterward they toke Rome, vnder 453.

der the conduct of their King *Genserichus*. *Attila*, King of the *Hunnes*, entred into *Gaul* with fiue hundred thousand men: deliuered battle to *Meroüeus* their second king, who had ioined with *Ætius* Lieutenant to the Emperor. There hee lost an hundred and fourescore thousand men, & fled into *Hungaria*, not any man being wounded behind. About this time was great *Arthur* King of *Britaine*.

460. *Leo* the first, reigned 17. yeares, associated by *Leo* the sonne of his daughter; who after he had reigned one yeare alone, gaue vp the Empire to

476. *Zeno* his Grandsire, who raigned tyrannically 17. yeares. The estate of the Church was then very greatly troubled, as also that of the Western Empire. *Italy* had then nine Emperors in twenty yeares, who all slue one another.

493. *Anastasius* raigned twenty fiue yeares: He was an *Eutichian* Heretique, was smitten with lightning, and dyed (as a iust punishment) for his Heresie. *Fulgentius*.

*Iustine* raigned 9. years: he was first a Swineheard, afterward a Cow-heard, next a Carpenter,

519. a Souldier, a Captaine, and last of all Emperor, gouerning very well and godly, and expelling the *Arrian* Heretiques. Then liued *Boetius*; and S. *Bennet* or *Benedict* began his order.

528. *Iustinian* raigned thirty eight yeares. All his care and study, was to repaire the decayed Empire, and re-establish ciuill right: in the execution whereof, he was seconded by excellent personages, especially by *Belsarius*, *Narses*, and *Tribonianus*.

The

The firſt chaſed the *Vandals* out of *Affrica*, which they had held 95. yeares: and deliuered *Rome* from the *Gothes*, who had conquered it, and yet were once more expulſed thence by *Narſes*.

*Iuſtine* the ſecond, raigned ten yeares, beloued of al men for his liberality. *Sophia* his wife mocked him with *Narſes*, the Gouernour of *Italy*, whereat hee beeing offended, called the *Lombardes*, by whoſe helpe he reuenged himſelfe. Now was the Kingdome of the *Lombardes* founded by *Clebus*, where raigned thirty two Kinges, vntill the time of *Charles* the Great. 566. The kingdome of the Lombardes.

*Tiberius* the ſecond, raigned ſeauen yeares: hee was a very charitable man, one that loued God and his Saints, and therefore (no doubt) was beloued of him againe. 577.

*Mauritius* raigned twenty yeares: hee was deſcended of very meane Parentage, and (in the end) was murthered for his couetouſneſſe: a vice as much diſcommendable in a Prince, as liberality is beſeeming, and maketh him renowmed. 584.

*Phocas* raigned eyght yeares: And beeing the Murderer of his Predeceſſor, himſelfe was likewiſe murdered, withall his Race. Now was the contention for the Primacy of the Church, betweene *Rome* and *Conſtantinople*, and now was Saint *Gregory*. 604. Contention for Primacy of the Church.

*Heraclius* raigned thirty yeares, who was the Murderer of *Phocas*. The fiftēnth yeare of his raigne, beganne the rule of *Mahomet*, the falſe Prophet of *Arabia*, where were the *Agarenes* and *Sarrazins*: to whom the *Ægyptian* and *Arabi-* 612.

*an* Princes (called *Soldanes*) next succeeded. After them came the *Turks*, about the yeare 1300. *Mahomets* false Doctrine (by the negligence of the Emperors and Christian Princes) grewe to such a head: that it not onely poysoned *Asya* and *Affrica*, but also a very great part of *Europe*.

640. *Constantine* the third, raigned foure moneths, being a good Prince, and very young: Hee was poysoned by his Step-mother, that her son might raigne.

641. *Heraclion*, who hauing his nose and tongue cut out, was banished two yeares after.

643. *Constans*, the Sonne of *Constantine*, raigned twenty seauen yeares: And being very couetous, he was slain by his own followers, in the Bathes of *Syracusa*.

670. *Constantine* the fourth, reigned 17. years. He ouercame in one Battell, thirty thousand *Sarazins*, and afterward fel to great wickednes. The learned and venerable *Beda* liued in this time.

687. *Iustinian* the second, a wicked man, raigned 16. yeares, but not without interruption, being deiected by *Leontius*, and *Leontius* by *Tiberius Absimaris*, who reigned other three yeares, therfore these three are said to raigne sixtene yeares.

The State of the Venetians. Now was the beginning of the Dukes of *Venice*, which had bene gouerned before (for the space of 230. yeares) by *Tribunes*.

713. *Phillip Bardasanes*, reigned two yeares. Hee was cast out of his Empyre by his Lieutenant, & after that, they pluckt foorth his eies. Hee had much talke and little wisdome, disposing badly of the

the goods of the Empyre: he became after a ſchiſmaticall Monke.

*Anthemius*, called alſo *Athanaſius* the ſecond, reigned three yeares: He was deiected from his Empyre by *Theodoſius* chiefe of his Army, and turned into a Monaſtery. He hadde taken away the Empyre, and then pluckt out the eies of his predeceſſor. 715.

*Theodoſius* the third, reigned one yeare. He left the Empyre, ſeeing himſelfe to be aſſayled by *Leo* his ſucceſſor, and became a Monke. 718

*Leo* the third, a wicked man, reigned twenty foure yeares. He was called *Iconomachus*, a defacer of Images, and would not ſuffer the Chriſtians to haue any in their Temples. Hee was excommunicated by *Gregory*, and by authoritie of a Councell held at *Rome*, againſt his owne of *Conſtantinople*. *Blondus lib*, 10. The *Sarazins* beſieged *Conſtantinople* three yeares together, in which time died three hundred thouſand of Peſtilence and Famine. 719.

*Conſtantine*, fift of that name, the ſon of *Leo* the *Iſaurian*, ſucceeded his father in the Empyre of *Conſtantinople*, the yeare of our ſaluation 742. He was ſirnamed *Copronymus*, becauſe he would diſcharge his belly in the Fonts, appointed for Chriſtian Baptiſme. He was an vtter-enemy, not only to the Images of Saints, but alſo vnto their reliques, cauſing them to be burned. He did put to death many of the beſt and moſt reſpected perſons, and (among others) two Patriarches of *Conſtantinople*. He made warre againſte the 742.

*Bulgarians*, both by land & Sea, Fortune sometime smiling vpon him, otherwhiles lowring. In his absence, one *Artabasdus* was made Emperor at *Constantinople*: But hee receiuing newes thereof returned, and either put out, or rent forth the new Emperors eies, & caused his children to be slaine. In his time, there was so cold a Winter, that the Sea of *Constantinople* was frozen. After many cruelties, this Emperor died a Leaper.

743. *Artabasdus*, albeit he was descended of meane birth; yet notwithstanding, for the faithfulnesse, good vertues, and commendable qualities which were in him, he was liked of the Senate & souldiors, and afterward was elected Emperor by the zealous Christians, for the hatred that euery one bare to *Constantine* the fift. He became a better louer of the Saints, and fortified the Cittye of *Constantinople* against *Constantine*, who had bin expulsed thence. Neuertheless, both hee and it were besieged, and the Citty being surprized, his eies were pluckt out, & his children put to death.

775. *Leo* the fourth, was Emperor after his Father *Constantine* the fift. He was not onely heyre to the Empire, but also to his Fathers vices: And his mother, who was deuout and one that loued God, would giue no consent that he shoulde bee Emperor. He made some attempts vpon the *Sarazins* that dwelt in *Syria*. He toke the Crowns which *Mauritus* had dedicated to God, and set it on his owne head, it being very richly beautified with rich pretious stones: But sone after, he had an

an Impoſtume in his head, with a fiery Ague, whereof he died.

*Conſtantine*, firſt of that name, and ſonne to *Leo* the fourth, was Emperor after his Father: 790.
Hee reigned nine yeares (very young) with his mother, who with his conſent alſo, was perſwaded by *Theraſius* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, to call a generall Councell of three hundred and fifty Biſhops. In ſhort while after, *Conſtantine* excluded his Mother from the Empyres gouernment. He cauſed the eies and tong of *Nicephorus* to be puld and cut out, hearing of a ſecret intention, to make him Emperor. Alſo he did ſhut vp in a Monaſtery his wife *Mary*, who was the daughter of King *Charlemaine*, and then toke a Concubine, by the councell of his Mother, whoe pretended that her ſonne was hated of the people. Herevpon not long after, ſhe cauſed him to be taken, and plucking forth his eies, ſhut him vp in priſon, where he died, in the yeare 798. and then ſhe raigned alone, about the ſpace of fiue yeares.

*Irene*, iſſued from *Attica*, was wife to the em- 798
peror *Leo* the fourth, by whom he had *Conſtantine* the firſt before mentioned, and reigned with him nine yeares, and afterward alone by hir ſelfe fiue yeares, or little more, as hath already beene ſaid. She was thence expelled by *Nicephorus*, & ſent in exile to the Iſle of *Lesbos*, which at this inſtant is called *Mitiline*. At the time when this Lady gouerned the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, Charlemaine was ſacred and crowned Emperor of *Rome* (or of the Weſt) for his vertues.

# A briefe Collection of the Hiſtory & liues of the Emperours of the *Weſt, from the time of King* Charlemain, *who was the firſt Emperor in the Weſt.*

803. CHarlemaine, king of *France*, and the greateſt Emperor (for all perfections) that euer was: The reſtorer of Iuſtice, equity and peace, among men, and re-eſtabliſher of Common-weales, with honeſt Lawes, and Religious doctrine, learned in languages and al diſciplines: raigned King and Emperor 14. yeares. *Gal. lib.* 4. *Emil. lib.* 2. The Kingdome of England then began by King *Egbert*.

The kingdome of England

815. *Lewes* his ſonne, ſirnamed (the *Meeke*) or *Debonaire*, was likewiſe King and Emperour 26. yeares. He cauſed a Councell to be held, wherein all Eccleſiaſticall perſons were forbidden to weare any ſuperfluous garments, iewelles, and Ringes. In reuenge whereof, they prouoked his ſonnes to conſpire againſt him two ſeueral times.

841. *Lotharius* his ſonne, contended with his Brethren, *Lewes Germanicus*, and *Charles the Bald*. After a warre no leſſe great and ſharpe, then vnhappy and lamentable, he remained Conqueror, and reigned fiftene yeares.

876 *Lewes*, the ſecond ſon of *Lotharius*, raigned 21 yeares: hee was at continuall diſcord with his Vncle *Charles the Bald*, for the Kingdom of *Auſtraſia*.

*Charles*

*Charles the Bald*, ſonne to *Lewes the Meeke*, was Emperor and king of *France*, two yeares. 877.

*Lewes* the Stammerer, was made Emperour by the meanes of Pope *Iohn* the ſecond: hee died at *Compeigne* vpon a good-friday. 879.

*Charles* the Groſſe, Emperor and k. of *France*, who degenerated from the Noble race of *Charlemain*, reigned ten yeares. 880.

*Arnold*, whoſe body was full of vermine, by the iuſt iudgement of God, he being addicted to ſo many ſeuerall rapines. He raigned 12. years. 891

*Lewes* the third, or rather the fourth ſonne of *Arnold* raigned 7. years. Some do hold that after *Arnold*, vntill the time of *Otho*, there was no true Emperour of *Rome*, but vacation of the empyre, for the ſpace of threeſcore yeares. 903

*Conrade*, being the laſt of the race of *Charlemain*, reigned ſeauen yeares. 913

*Henry* the firſt, called the *Faulconer*, whoe brought peace to all *Germany*, reigned 18. years. He was expert in Armes, beganne the pence or ſmall money among the *Almaynes*, and ſubdued the *Vandals*, who then receiued the Chriſt. faith. 919

*Otho* his ſonne reigned 36. yeares. It was ſaid of him, that he made good proſe, that he whō God will helpe, no man can harme, for hee had innumerable enemies, and yet very eaſily he ſubdued them all. 938

*Otho* the ſecond, his ſonne, two ſeuere, raigned ten yeares. He re-ſeated *Nicephorus* his Godfather Emperor of *Greece*, after hee had bin driuen out of his Empire. 974

984 *Otho* the third, raigned nineteene yeares: Hee was called (for his spirite) the wonder of the world. In his time began the institution of the Princes Electors of the Empire, in the yeare 1002. This is the common opinion, which (neuertheleſſe) the learned *Onuphrius* declareth to be erronious, verifying by certaine authorities, and teſtimonies of the Authors of times: that the Emperors (after this *Otho*) were elected, not by ſeauen Princes: but in generall, by voyce of all the Arch-biſhops, Biſhops, Princes, Lords, and Gentlemen of *Germany*, and continued ſo till the time of *Rodolphus* the firſt, which was in the yeare 1280. And he ſaith, that it cannot bee certainely gathered, at what time the ſeauen Electors were inſtituted: not finding any one of the auncient Authors that ſpeakes thereof. And yet notwithſtanding, hee is of the minde, that they were eſtabliſhed, in the *Interim* of the *interregnum* and ſchiſme of the Empire, which continued twenty three yeares after the death of *Frederick* the ſecond, which was in the yeare 1250. vntill the election of *Rodolph* of *Haſpurge*.

The beginning of the princes Electors of germany.

1002 *Henry* of *Bauaria* the ſecond, raigned twentie two yeares: Hee was a prudent and victorious Prince: and hee expulſed the *Sarrazins* out of *Italy*.

1024 *Conrade* the ſecond, raigned fifteene yeares. In this time the name of a Cardinall (as is ſaide) came firſt in vſe.

1040. *Henry* the third, ſurnamed the *Black*, raigned 17. yeares, hee laboured earneſtly to take away the

the Schiſmes of the Church, happening by the plurality of the Popes: whereof hee depoſed three as vnwoorthy, and ordayned, that there ſhould bee no more created, without his permiſſion.

*Henry* the fourth, raigned fifty yeares. Hee was preſent in 62. battels, and great troubles happened betweene him and *Gregory* the ſeauenth, touching the power to elect and confirme the Pope. Then was *Ieruſalem* taken by *Godfrey* of *Bullen*, and the flowre of Chriſtendomes Nobility. 1057. The Kingdom of Ieruſalem.

*Henry* the fift, raigned twenty yeares. Hee tooke *Rome*, and the Pope, who would not crown him, except hee would ordaine his election to bee without the Emperor, and contrary to the order of *Henry* the third. Now began the Kingdomes of *Portugal*, *Naples*, and *Sicily*. 1107. The Kingdōs of Portugall, Naples, and Sicily.

*Lotharius* the ſecond, raigned 11. years, being very much reſpected for his great valour in war, his loue to religion, & reparation of good laws, &c. 1127

*Conrade* the third, raigned fiftéene years, a good Prince, and made warre againſt the *Sarrazins*, with King *Lewes* the young. 1138

*Frederick* the firſt, called *Barbaroſſa*, a Prince addicted to hardines, magnanimity, and Iuſtice, raigned 37. yeares. This is the man, vpon whoſe ouer-much humility, Pope *Alexander* the third declared the inſolency of his *Luciferian* pride: in treading on the Emperors back, and then he began to ſing: *Super Aſpidem & Baſiliſcum ambulabis*. Then liued *Auicen*, *Auerroes*, & *Meſuus*, Phiſitions: And *Changius* was firſt King of the *Tartares*. 1152. The Kingdom of the Tartars.

*Henry*

*Henry* the firt, raigned tenne yeares, a good
1190 Prince, he subdued the kingdome of *Ponilla* or *Apulia*.

1200. *Phillip* brother to *Henry*, a good Prince, raigned nine yeares. In his time beganne the Frier orders of *Mendicants*, or begging Friers, *Iacobins* and Gray Friers. *Ab. Vspergens. hist.*

1209. *Otho* the fourth, raigned foure yeares. He came to the Empyre by the meanes of *Innocent* the 3. and afterward lost it by his owne occasion, being murdred in the end, as he had done his predecessour.

1212 *Fredericke* the second, reigned 37. yeares, being both wise and magnanimious. He was expulsed the Empire, by the meanes of Pope *Innocent* the fourth. This Prince was the restorer of Astronomy, by helpe of the *Almagist* of *Ptolomy*. The factions of the *Guelphes* and *Gibelines*, now caused great harmes in *Italy*.

1250. *Conrade* the fourth, reigned three yeares, a good Prince. He was excommunicated by Pope *Innocent* the fourth, according as (by him) his father was deprived of his Empire.

1254 *Willielmus*, raigned two yeares, a good prince. *Albertus Magnus*, *Lullius* and *Alphonsius*, King of *Spaine*, were then great Astrologers. There was *interregnum* 17. yeares.

1273. *Rodulphus* reigned 19. yeares. He made *Austria* the Impeciall seat, ordaining his sonne *Albert* first Duke there, of whom is the house of *Austria* descended.

1292 *Adolphus* raigned six yeares. He was expulsed for

for his vices, by the Princes Electors, and ſlain afterward in warre, by *Albertus* his ſucceſſor.

*Albertus* raigned ten yeares. Pope *Boniface* the eight, gaue him the Realme of *France*, & the Papall chaire was transferred to *Auignion*, 72. yeares. New was *Othoman* the first Emperour of the Turkes. 1299 The first Turkish Emp.

*Henry* the ſeauenth, raigned ſix yeares, a very graue and prudent Prince: But a *Iacobine* frier (being ſuborned by a *Florentine*) poiſoned him with the conſecrated Hoſt. 1309

*Lewes* of *Bauaria*, raigned 33. yeares. He vſed very great clemency towards his enemy and priſoner, *Frederick* of *Auſtria*, reſtoring him to his Dukedome. Now began the Sects of the *Flagellanti* or *Whippers*: *Bartholomeus*, *Petrarch*, and *Boccace*, then liuing. 1314

*Charles* the fourth, Author of the golden Bull, raigned 32. yeares; *Dante* then liued. 1347

*Wenceſlaus* raigned 22. yeares, very carelesly. He was taken by his brother *Sigiſmund*, and put into priſon at *Vienna*. They were both ſonnes to *Charles* the fourth. *Lithuania* then receiued the Chriſtian Faith. 1379

*Robert* or *Rupert*, raigned ten yeares: then liued *Chryſolaras*, *Laurentius Valla*, *Poge* the *Florentine*, and *Tamberlain* the Tyrant of the *Tartares*, led an Army of a million of men. 1400

*Sigiſmund* raigned 27. yeares, a man renowned for wiſedome and goodneſſe. Then was the Councell of *Conſtance*, wherein three popes were depoſed. *Iohn Hus*, and *Hierom* of *Prage*, were then burned. 1411

*Albertus*

1438 *Albertus* the ſecond, reigned two yeares well and valiantly. He chaſed *Amurath* the Turke out of *Hungary*.

1440 *Frederick* the third, a louer of Peace, raigned 53. yeares. Then was *Conſtantinople* taken: The Art of Printing found out: Artillerie more auncient 1380. *Gaza, Victornius, Blondus, Æneas Syluius, Platina, Beſſarion, G. Trapezoncius, N. Perottus, Pomponius Lætus, H. Barbarus, A. Politianus, I. Picus Mirandula, B. Mantuanus. Ph. Beroaldus.*

1494 *Maximillian*, a louer of vertuous men, raigned 27. yeares. He was valiant and learned, & could deliuer his actions himſelfe, in the Latine tongue. Then liued *I. Nauclerus, Volaterranus, G. Valla, Polydor Virgill, A. Sabellicus, I. Reuchlinus, Ionianus, Pontanus, M. Ficinus, P. Crinitus, Amb. Calepinus, Trithenius, P. Bembus*, and others.

1514 *Charles* the fift, a moſt magnanimous prince, raigned 35. yeares. In his time happened marueilous mutinies in *Germany*, by Peazantes and Ruſticke people, of which were ſlaine more then an hundred thouſand, in leſſe ſpace then 3. Moneths. Beſide theſe ſtrange warres, there inſued ciuill diſſentions likewiſe, about matters of religion. *Eraſmus, Io. Lud Viues, Luther, Munſter, Camerarius, Fuſtius, Latomus, Sadoletus, Pagninus, Eugubinus, Melanchthon, Rhenanus, S. Grineus, Zozius, Oldendorp, Alciat, Zuinglius, Oecolampadius*, and others then liued.

1558. *Ferdinando*, a Prince wiſe, vigillant, liberall, kind,

kind, and a louer of quietneſſe: He made warre vpon the Turkes in *Hungary*, for the ſpace of 38. yeares, and laboured to accord the Chriſtians, to the end that the enemy might be reſiſted by generall conſent. He raigned ſeauen yeares: and then liued *Geſner*, *Lycoſthenes*, *Sturmius*, *Gualterus*, *Riuius*, *Pantaleon*, *Vadian*, *P. Conſtantinus*, *Funcius*, *&c.*

*Maximillian*, the ſecond ſonne of *Ferdinand*, was a good and prudent Prince, not diſſolute in habits, but liuing ſoberly, hauing knowledge in many tongues, good iudgement, ſpeaking diſcreetly and ſententiouſly, and inclined to receiue al requeſts, as alſo to giue liberally: Neuer curious of rich Cabinets, or ſumptuous buildings. He reigned twelue yeares. 1564

*Rodulphus* the ſecond, ſonne to the moſt vertuous Prince *Maximillian*, and raigning at this preſent. To whom God giue grace, as to al other Monarches, Princes and Potentates, to do thoſe thinges that become a Chriſtian Prince, bleſſing him with good Councell, faithfull people, &c. 1576.

*Now come we againe to the Emperors of the Eaſt.*

*Nicephorus*, who was kinſman to *Irene*, got the Empire from her by craft, exiling hir thence, as hath beene before declared, and meerely vſurping the Empire of *Conſtantinople*. At his firſt entrance, euery one hadde a ſingular good opinion of him, becauſe they grewe weary of a Womans gouernement. Neuertheleſſe, he proued to bee 803

wicked

wicked, cruel and couetous, & therfore felt quickly his deserued punishment. For entring battle against the *Bulgarians*, he was discomfited and slaine. His sonne *Stauratius* (whom he had made fellow Emperor with him) was likewise then sore wounded, and dismissed of the Empire with in three moneths after, by *Michaell Curopalates*, who had married his sister *Procopia*. And so hee was sent to finish his daies in a Monastery.

804 *Stauratius*, the sonne of *Nicephorus*, a man deformed and mishapen, having also a simple spirit, was made companion and participant in the Empire with his Father: And yet notwithstanding, very soone after his Fathers death, he was chased from his Empire, his haire being shaven off, and he inclosed in a Monastery, not raigning (after his father) aboue three moneths, or thereabout.

811 *Michaell Curopalates*, otherwise called *Rangabus*, was Emperour after *Nicephorus* and his sonne *Stauratius*. This Emperor *Michaell* was better skild in the affaires of peace, pollicy, and Iustice, then in the action of warre. For in his first battell against the *Bulgarians*, he fled away like vnto a Coward, and hid himselfe in a Monastery, to which life hee yelded himselfe, and quite forsoke the Empire, as not willing to meddle any more, eyther with warre, or the State of an Emperor. Ye, according as *Nicephorus* did the like, sent an Ambassador to *Charlemaine*, the new made Emperor of the west, to treat of peace and alliance with him. And it was agreed, that

the

the *Venetians* ſhould liue according to their own Lawes, Cuſtomes, and ancient liberties.

*Leo* of *Armenia*, was Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, being the fift of that name, and the fourth after *Charlemaine* Emperor of the *Romaines*, who began with *Nicephorus*. He was Colonell of the warlike troopes, belonging to the Emperor *Michaell Curopaletes*, and aſpyring to dominion, he raiſed a commotion, and ſo was made Emperor by the Souldiers. Hee being thus elected Emperor, entring into his Pallace-Royall, hee cauſed the priuy members of the Sonne of the ſaid Emperor *Michaell*, to be cut off, and then baniſhed him. He Conquered the *Bulgarians*, recouered *Thrace*, toke many of his enemies, reprehended their boldneſſe, that had ſurprized *Adrianapolis*, and prepared alſo to beſiedge *Conſtantinople*. Hee would by no means ſuffer the Images of ſaints, but beat downe and defaced them. Not long after, himſelfe was taken and ſlaine in a Church, as he was aſſiſting Diuine ſeruice, in the eyght yeare of his Empire: his wife was beſtowed in a Monaſtery, and his Children cloſely conuaied away. 813

*Michaell* the Stammerer or ſtutterer, a wicked man, and murderer of the foreſaid *Leo*, was after him made Emperor of *Conſtantinople*. Hee was deſcended of baſe and vile place, and there was one called *Thomas*, a man alſo of as baſe Birth, that ſought to vſurpe the Empyre, working ſo many diſturbances thereto, that the Emperour being halfe in deſpaire, commanded a great chain 820

of

of yron to thwart the arme of the Sea, euen from *Constantinople*, so farre as *Pera*. But in the ende, he toke this *Thomas*, and caused his handes and feet to be cut off. At this time the Sarazins surprised *Candy*, had two seuerall victories ouer the Grekes, and *Michaell* died of a flux in his belly.

829. *Theophilus*, sonne to *Michaell* the Stammerer, was Emperor of Constantinople after his father. He was a good Justicer, & well affected towards his Subiects: but he held the Images of Saints in great detestation, and seuerely punnished all such as worshipped them, being (therein) his fathers true follower. Two seuerall times he gaue battell to the Sarazins, that wasted and spoyled the Countries of Asia: And as many times was he foiled, losing there all his Tents and Pauillions. *Amorium*, a little village of the higher *Phrygia*, (being the place of his birth) was besieged, taken, and rifled by those *Sarazins*. The Emperour grieued thereat so immeasureablie, that hee refused to eate, and would drinke nothing but colde water: So falling into a Dysenterie, hee died.

842. *Theodora*, after the decease of *Theophilus* her Husband, (as Tutresse or Guardian vnto her son *Michaell*, who was in his young yeares) gouerned the Empire of *Constantinople* very sufficiently, comforting the poore distressed Christians, and reuoking home such as liued in exile, about the question of Images. She treated a peace with the King of *Bulgaria*, affiancing him vnto hir sister, whereby both he and his Subiects were conuerted

uerted to the Chriſtian Religion. At length *Michaell* being able to guide the reynes of the Empyre; his mother *Theodora* entred into Religion and left him to rule alone, in the yeare 856. 856

*Michaell* the ſonne of *Theophilus*, ſucceeded his father in his infancy, his mother and Gouerneſſe *Theodora*, holding (for him) the Empire of *Conſtantinople*. But when *Michaell* grew to greter ſtrength, hee toke the charge of the Empire himſelfe whereto his mother gladly conſented. He more reſembled his Graundfather, then his Father, both in negligence and prodigallity, ſpending great riches which his warres brought him in. He was ſometimes ſo addicted to the *Circeienſian* ſports, as hardly he could be drawne from them. He made *Baſilius* the *Macedonian*, his equall companion in the Empyre, by whome hee was ſone after ſlaine: hauing reigned eleauen yeares, nine moneths, and fiue daies, after that his mother *Theodora* had entred into Religion, which, with his former time of rule, compleated 25. yeares, ten moneths, and fourteen daies.

*Baſilius* of *Macedon*, who had ſlaine the Emperor *Michaell*, entred preſently vpon the empire of *Conſtantinople*, and was receiued and approued of all, in the Imperiall Pallace. When hee was a yong infant, he had bin brought (among other captiues) to *Conſtantinople*, to be there ſold: Neuertheleſſe, he was in the end Emperor, and Fortune ſo fauoured him, that his children, and his childrens children, were alſo Emperors after him. Firſt of all, he cauſed thoſe ſummes of mo- 867.

nie to be restored backe againe, which *Michael* his Predecessor had prodigally giuen away, and so they were deliuered into the Treasurie. He instituted his three sonnes heyres to the Empire. He had many battailes against the Sarazins, & still proued victorious. Many *Iewes* and *Scythians* (by his meanes) receiued the Christian faith: yet such was his hard hap, to bee slaine (in hunting) by a Hart, that ran his hornes into his bellie.

886 *Leo*, the first of that name, surnamed the Philosopher, began his raigne in the yeare 886. first, with the helpe of the Turkes, he vanquished the *Bulgarians*, who had reuolted from him: but soon after, being abused by the Turkes, through vaine suggestions, he sustained great losse. Notwithstanding, he failed not to leauy an Army against the *Sarazins*, whereby (vnder the conduct of *Nicetus*) he brought away a triumphant Victorie. He was very vigillant ouer the Common-weal, and oftentimes would walke alone in the night, (disguised in habit) only to try his watches; who did beate him soundly, and also carried him to prison, whom the next day he rewarded both with money and honors.

904. *Alexander*, brother to *Leo* the forenamed Emperour, succeeded him in the Empire. Hee was quite contrary in manners, both to *Basilius* his father, and *Leo* his brother, for he was of badde gouernment, giuen wholy to his pleasures, and committed the charge of his State affaires, to Flatterers and Iesters, who were his daily com-

plices

plices and companions, in all naughty and wicked actions. He died of a flure of bloud, iſſuing from his Noſe and priuy-members, after he had gurmandized and exceſſiuely played at the Tennis. For, mounting (in an extreame heat) vpon his horſſe, and violently ſtretching himſelfe, hee brake a veine, whereof he died.

*Conſtantine* the ſeauenth, ſonne to *Leo* the firſt, of whom we haue already ſpoken, was at the age of ſeauen yeares, left (by his father) vnder the care and charge of his mother *Zoa*. And he began to holde the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, after his forenamed Vncle *Alexander*, the yeare of our Saluation, 906. A certaine man, named *Romanus Lecapenus*, made great reſiſtance againſt him for ſpace of 26. yeares, and purpoſed to deiect him quite. But in the end, *Lecapenus* was ſeized by his owne ſonnes, and ſhut vp into a Monaſtery, for he was the ſole cauſe, that *Zoa* the mother of *Conſtantine*, was likewiſe made a recluſe in a Monaſterie. Now, when the ſonnes of *Lecapenus* had deuiſed to doe the like to *Conſtantine*, as they had done vnto their father: the ſame ſtratagem happened to themſelues, and they were incloſed in a Monaſtery. So *Conſtantine* recouered his Empire, which he gouerned alone very ſufficiently; ſuppreſſing ſome Tyrants, and inducing diuers Princes of the Turkes to the Chriſtian Faith. He made learning to ſhine in *Greece*, and left a Booke vnto his ſonne, diſcourſing the affaires of the Empire, which the *Venetians* do yet keepe as an eſpeciall Jewell. He raigned fourteen

906

yeares with his mother *Zoa*, with *Lecapenus* 26. yeares, and about fifteene yeares alone, which was in all neere 55. yeares.

920. *Romanus Lecapenus*, a man of base descent, wrought so much trouble to *Constantine* the seauenth in his Empire, that he was constrained to receiue him as companion in the Imperiall dignity, in the yeare 920. and *Constantine* accepted his daughter *Helena* in marriage. But neyther the sacred Oath which he had sworne vnto him, nor yet the neere-alliance in kindred with *Constantine*, could restraine him from vsurpation of the Empire, for himselfe and *Christopher* his son: but he sought to thrust *Constantine* wholy out of all. But he was deceiued in his owne disseigns, for, vpon the bad successe in warre which he had against the *Bulgarians*, and *Simeon* their Duke, he was taken by his owne sonnes, *Stephen* and *Constantine*, who despoiled him of his Empire, and carried him to a Monastery in a neere neighbouring Iland, there to plate the Philosopher alone by himselfe. Then, practising to worke the like deuice vpon *Constantine* Fortune turned hir back towards them, and in the same snare which they laid for another, themselues were cunningly caught: for they were shut vp within a Monastery, and so *Constantine* remained a peaceable Emperour.

919. *Romanus*, the yong sonne of *Constantine* the 7. held the Empire of *Constantinople* after his Father. But he was gouerned vnder the disposition and order of *Nicephorus Phocas*. This Emperor

*Romanus*

*Romanus*, excluded his mother and his ſiſters: who, in greefe and deſpight, that they ſhould fall from ſo great pompe and eſtate, concluded to ſupport their weake condition, by the worſt meanes that could be, euen the proſtitution of their bodies. And as for him, he being addicted to ſports and Epicuriſme, died poiſoned.

*Nicephorus Phocas*, ruled the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, in the yeare 963. He fought often, & very fortunatly againſt the Sarazins, who vſurpingly held *Calabria*, *Scicily*, *Cyprus*, *Candy* and *Cilicia*, which at this day is called *Caramania*. In *Scicily* the affaires were not well mannaged, by his Commitées and Lieutenants: But concerning himſelfe, he recouered *Cilicia*, and the greater part of *Aſia*, for a good beginning: And ſoone after, he went powerfully vpon *Antioche*, which hee ſurpriſed in the night, and forced the *Sarazins* to fly for refuge. This man was hated of all his Subiects, becauſe that (vnder the couloure of warre which he then had) he laide great Impoſts, exactions, and polings vpon them. He cauſed alſo a corrupt kind of money to be forged, and diminiſhed likewiſe the waight: by meanes whereof, being ſo out of fauour with the Citizens, he was the eaſier ſlaine ſleeping in his chamber, by *Iohn Zimiſcus*, and *Theophila*, (wife to *Nicephorus*) gaue fauourable entrance to the murtherer, and all the ſtranglers that were with him. 963

*Iohn Zimiſcus*, the murderer of *Nicephorus*, was Emperor of *Conſtantinople* after him. Hee was a man valiant in warre; he recouered all

*Bulgaria*, which the *Roxalians* held, and *Sphendollanus* their king ſubmitted himſelfe vnto him. But after this victory, being returned to *Conſtantinople* with triumph, he was poiſoned. He made fellowes with him in the Empire, *Baſilius* and *Conſtantine*, brethren, who were ſonnes to *Romanus*, the predeceſſor of *Nicephorus Phocas*.

976. *Baſilius* the ſecond, and *Conſtantine* the eight, being brethren, and ſonnes to the yong *Romanus*, were Emperors of *Conſtantinople* after *Iohn Zimiſcus*, in the yeare of Saluation 976. *Barda Sclerus* made ciuill warre vpon them, intending to vſurpe the Empire: but being foiled in the battell, he fled to the *Perſians*. The like did *Phocas*, when he was ouercome, and for the ſame cauſe: for, taking it in ſcorn to be miſprized, after he had well declared his duty againſt *Sclerus*, he ſought to make himſelfe Emperor. *Baſilius* (afterward) vanquiſhed the *Bulgarians* in many battels, and as a punniſhment for their Rebellion, he cauſed the eies of fifteen thouſand Captiues to be pulled out: reſeruing onely but one of them, to guide the reſt to *Samuell* their Duke. For they had ouerrun the Country of *Thrace*, *Macedon*, & *Greece*, and put all to fire and ſword. Now was all *Bulgaria* ſubiected to the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, which till then had euermore beene Rebellious. Duke *Samuell* liued not long after, but died with meere greefe and veration. *Conſtantine* was companion with his brother *Baſilius* in the Empyre, more in Honor then power: But after his death he was ſole Emperor almoſt three yeares, and di-

ed

ed ſwallowed vp in his pleaſures and vaine voluptuouſneſſe.

*Romanus* of *Argyra*, or (as he was commonlie called) *Argyropilus*, kinſman to *Conſtantine* the eight, ſucceeded him in the Empire. At the beginning, he changed many bad matters into better: But being vnable to make head againſt the *Sarazins*, hee gaue his minde to gather a huge maſſe of money. Afterward, by the Treaſon of *Zoa* his wife, and her Adulterate companion: he was drowned as he bathed himſelfe in his ſtoue, or Hot-houſe. 1029

*Michaell* the *Paphlagon*, the Adulterat friend of *Zoa* the Empreſſe, and who had ſuffocated her husband *Argiropilus*, bathing in his Stoue: was by her made Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, in the yeare 1034. He had beene a ſeruant-ſtraunger, hauing his head very vnfaſhionable, and euerie houre he was ſubiect to the falling ſickneſſe, foaming at the mouth. In briefe, whatſoeuer deſerued any reſpect in him, only was, that he hadde a pleaſing Complexion, which made *Zoa* extreamly doate vpon him, ſhe being well ſtept into age. Yet (for all this) he did not miſgouerne the Empyre, but toke truce with the King of *Ægipt* for thirty yeares. He deliuered the Citty of *Edeſſa*, which was beſieged, and was very benigne to all them of his Court; except to *Zoa*, for the horride lewdneſſe he knew by her. At length, being full of the Dropſie, he appointed *Michaell Calaphates* (the adopted ſonne of his Wife *Zoa*) to be his immediate ſucceſſor. 1034.

1042. *Michaell Calaphates*, the adopted ſon of *Zoa*, (after the death of *Michaell* the *Paphlagon*) proſtrated himſelfe at her feete, ſweauing that he intended not to hold the Empire, but in name only; and that all the power ſhould remaine in her. By which flatteries & coyned ſpæches, he was made Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, in the yeare 1042. Soone after, he laid a plot againſt *Zoa*, impoſing falſely vpon her, that ſhe had deuiſed to poiſon him: Whereupon, her head was ſhauen, and ſhe commaunded to a Monaſtery. But the People growing mutinous againſt him, made *Theodora* (ſiſter to *Zoa*) Empreſſe: repealed *Zoa* from the Monaſtery, purſued *Calaphates*, and plucked out both his and his ſonnes eies. He was called *Calaphates*, becauſe his father was a maker of ſhips, or a Ship wright.

1042 *Zoa* repealed from her exile and Monaſtery, by the people, was re-placed in the Soueraigne Eſtate of *Conſtantinoples* empire, to enioy the ſame with her ſiſter *Thedora*, which was in the ſame yeare, when as *Michaell Caliphates* had raigned but foure moneths. Thus the bad gouernement of Emperors raiſed an opinion, that the Empire might be better ruled by Women, then by men. But, as a woman is euermore variable and vnconſtant, according to the Poets iudgement: Euen ſo *Zoa* (albeit ſhe was a woman, and aged threeſcore yeares) did yet neuertheleſſe, burne in carnall and voluptuous concupiſcence. Whereupon, ſhee re-called *Conſtantine Monamachus* from exile, and taking him to be her huſband, made

made him Emperour. Theſe two women hauing then held the Empire, ſcarſely three moneths.

*Conſtantine* the ninth, ſirnamed *Monamachus*, who likewiſe being of the Imperiall line & race; was made Emperor by his wife *Zoa*, at *Conſtantinople*, in the yeare 1042. He was very careleſſe, and full of his owne pleaſures, and kept a beautifull Strumpet in ſtead of his Wife: neuertheleſſe, hee maintained and got the victory in two great ciuill warres, and ſome others beſide. It was then that the *Turkes* began to extend their powers very farre in *Aſia*: and yet no withſtanding, they were vanquiſhed with the *Roxalians*, and *Patzinaces*, which were two Nations of the *Scythians*. *Zoa* died, being threeſcore and tenne yeares old: and *Conſtantine* being ful of the gout, hauing alſo a pluriſie, died thereof ſome few years after. 1042

*Theodora*, ſiſter to *Zoa*, who had formerly held the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, as hath beene already declared in our ſpeaking of *Zoa*: entred vpon the Empires rule againe, but alone by her ſelfe, after *Conſtantine Monomachus*, in the year 1055. and gouerned about two yeares. And we hold it no ſhame, to place her in the rancke and number of the Emperors, conſidering, that ſhe did not declare her authority in the Empire, with an effeminate or negligent ſpirite: But gaue ſo good orders, and caried her ſelfe ſo manly, that ſhe maintained peace and tranquility, as well towardes ſtrangers, as among her owne people. Moreouer, all goodneſſe and quietneſſe ſo abundantly 1055.

flouriſh-

flourished in the time of her gouernment: as no occasion can bee alleadged, neither will any man of wisedome misprise the Empire and Dominion of such a Woman. But as sickenesse (with age) did ouer-charge her, by the pleasing perswasions and remonstrances of her ordinary seruants: she made partaker with her in the Empires sway, a certaine man (some-what too aged) named *Michaell*, and then she liued not long after.

1057 *Michaell*, sir-named the Auncient, was Emperour of *Constantinople* after the saide *Theodora*, and onely by her meanes. Hee was renowmed both for Noblity and riches: but in other affaires, concerning the support and charge of the Empire: he was very vnapt, in regard of his many years, which made him burthenous and in-sufficient. And when he had scarsely ruled one yeare: *Isaac Comnenes* both dismissed, and deposed him from the State of the Empire. So liuing solitarily, and like a priuate man: he died some after.

1058 *Isaac Comnenes*, was Emperour of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1058. Hee deiected from the Empire, *Michaell* the Auncient: neuertheless, hee was a man, valiant and couragious, renowmed for his actions both in peace and war, of great spirit, but somswhat arrogant. The Patriarch of *Constantinople* gaue him good aide, in raising him to the Empires Dignity: but hee requited him very badly, for he banished him & all his friends. He was deriued of a Noble race, diligent, ready and expeditious in al his businesse: But a disease in the side tooke him as hee was hunting, which,

growing

growing to deſperation of any long life, he made himſelfe a monke, inſtituting as Emperour *Conſtantine Ducas*, with the good liking and conſent of the Senate and people. It is written of him, that he was ſo chaſt, that he would not accompanie his wife after her firſt child: albeit his Phyſitians aduiſed him thereto, for helpe and mitigation of his diſeaſe.

*Conſtantine* the tenth, called alſo *Ducas*, was Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, after the forenamed *Iſaacke*, in the yeare 1060. At his firſt entrance there happened a great conſpiracy againſt him, which he ſuppreſſed, but with very great difficulty. He was deuout towards God, and a good iuſticer: but inſatiable auarice diſgraced him, for which, he was hated of his owne people, and condemned by his enemies, who did much harme to the Empire. In his time happened a ſtrange accident, and yet no nouelty to *Conſtantinople*, that many Churches and houſes were ouerthrowne by an Earthquake. He died aged threeſcore yeares, leauing *Eudoxia* his wife, and three of his ſonnes heyres to the Empire. 1060

*Eudoxia* and her ſonnes helde the Empyre of *Conſtantinople*, after their father *Conſtantine Ducas*. This woman would haue wel gouerned the Empires affaires, if warres had not much moleſted her abroad. As ſtrangers (then) cam rushing in on all ſides of the Empire, ſo was it conceiued by generall opinion, that the ableſt man that coulde be, had had his hands full, in a charge of ſuch import. And yet at length, *Eudoxia* (contra- 1067

ry

ry to her Oath and promise to hir dying husband) hauing reigned seauen moneths and some few od daies: remarried with *Romaine Diogenes*, which match shee deerely afterward repented, as being much wearied with the arrogancy of this man, who would néedes gouerne all himselfe.

1068 *Romaine*, sirnamed *Diogenes*, toke vpon him the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the year 1068. He made warre two seuerall times, and in the first attempt, Fortune spake him faire, but very vnkindly in the second: for his people being one part slaine, and the other driuen to flight, himselfe left alone (albeit an Emperor) was taken: which accident had neuer béen seen before, that the Emperour of *Constantinople*, was taken prisoner in warre. And yet notwithstanding, it is said, that the Turke, *Sultan Azan* hearing those tidinges, could not beléeue it, but stayed his iourney somewhat short of him. And then sending for him, he had no sooner scene him, but he held him in honor and estimation: and giuing him great presentes, sent him backe againe at liberty, after he had concluded a peace with him. But in this *interim*, all things were renuersed at *Constantinople*, as it is a vsuall custome, so sone as vnwelcome newes are brought: For *Eudoxia*, was expulsed, *Diogenes* dismissed, and *Michaell de Constantine* chosen Emperour: who first caused the eyes of *Diogenes* to be plucked out, and afterward banished him: in which miserable estate he died, and was faine to be buried by his wife *Eudoxia*.

1071. *Michaell*, who was tearmed *Parapinacius*,

in

in reguard of the great Famine that happened in his time, was made Emperour of *Conſtantinople* in the yeare 1071. He was a man altogither vnapt for ſo weighty a charge: for, being wholely addicted to his Booke, and to compoſe verſes with his Schoolemaiſter *Pſellus*, the Turkes aſſailed the Empyre on all ſides, eſpecially on that part of *Aſya*: Whereupon, his chiefe Commanders and Captaines, (thoſe were conſtraint) made election of another Emperour ouer them, to wit; *Nicephorus Botaniat* who was the more eaſilie accepted of the Citizens, becauſe they held their negligent Emperour in high diſdain & contempt. I vnderſtand that *Michaell* was put into a Monaſtery, with his wife and ſon, and there he was made a Monke.

*Nicephorus Bataniat*, who was deſcended of the line of the Emperor *Phocas*, eaſily (as being the very nobleſt of all other) obtained the Empire when *Michaell* was expelled thence. Hee tooke *Conſtantine*, the ſon of *Conſtantine Ducas*, whom would haue vſurped the Empire, & cauſing him to be ſhorne, aduanced him to the order of prieſthood. Afterward, *Nicephorus* himſelfe was deiected by the brethren of *Comnenes*, (who before had aſſiſted him in expelling the vſurpers of the Empire) and was ſhut vp in a Monaſtery, where he liued but a ſhort while. *Alexius Comnenes*, the younger brother, but beſt beloued amongſt the ſouldiors, held the empire after him, and on the very day of Eaſter entred Conſtantinople, which he ſpoiled as an enemy. 1078

*Alexius*

1081. *Alexius Comnenes*, Son of the Emperour *Isaac*, toke on him the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1081. He went with the *Venetians* against *Robert Guiscard*, but he was repulsed and vanquished. Moreouer, he stroue to hinder and breake the memorable enterprise of the *French*, for the recouery of the Holy land. But *Bohemond*, Duke of *Apulia*, leuied an Army against him, and besieged *Baudras*. Then *Alexius*, dreading his power, made composition with him, promising to furnish the *French* with victuals, and all other needfull things. Afterward, he erected two goodly buildings, one for poore Orphants, and the other for a Colledge. He was also very charitable to poore aged men, discreet and moderate in his manners, and not lightly induced to punish. He gaue fauour and support to all men of merite and vertue, exalting them to places of dignity. In the end, being ouerpressed with a long sickneſſe, he died in the threescore and tenth yeare of his age.

1118. *Caloian*, Sonne to *Alexius*, held the Empyre after his father, in the yeare 1118. He made many warres in *Asia*, vanquishing in diuers Battels, both the *Turkes* and *Persians*, taking sundry Cities from them. He was a contrary opposite to the *Venetians* and the *French*, who were then united: Notwithstanding, the *Venetians* took the Isles of *Rhodes*, *Samos* and *Miteline*. He died of the pricke of a Dart, which himselfe had poisoned, smiting his hand (by chance) vpon it, as he made offer with it against a wild Boare: He aduaunced all his owne friends to dignities.

*Manuell*

*Manuell*, or *Emanuell*, brother, or (as ſome ſay) Sonne to *Caloian*, entred on the Empire of *Conſtantinople* after him, in the yeare 1142. He entreated *Conrade* Emperor of *Rome*, to lende him ayde againſt *Roger* king of *Scicily*, who both troubled, and would haue vſurped the Empyre, each after other, and likewiſe to aſſiſt him againſt the Turkes, as thus his requeſt ſeuerally pretended. But *Manuell*, hauing a contrary, and another kind of leauen hid in the dow, ſent *Conrades* men where they were all famiſhed. Nor did it ſuffice him to deale thus vilely with them, but he did as much to the men ſent by *Lewes* (ſirnamed *Gods guift*) king of *France*. So that in a ſhort while, ſo great a number of the *French* periſhed by falſhood and Treaſon, that the name of *Manuell* became odious among the French. *Roger* entred (in earneſt) vpon the Countrey of *Greece*, beſieged *Conſtantinople*, and with a gallant *bravado*) culled many floures of gold and ſiluer, out of the Emperors garden. *Manuell* offered outrage to an Ambaſſador of *Venice*, and (in one day, ſurpriſed all their Marchants, whom he had betraied vnder the colour of peace: for which, the *Venetians* conſtrained him afterward, dearly to buy his owne peace. He made warre againſt the *Turks*, wherein he was almoſt taken: And after hee had raigned eight and thirty yeares, hee liued as a Monke, and died of a grieuous diſeaſe. 1142

*Alexius* the ſonne of *Manuell*, helde the Empire after him, in the yeare 1180. vnder *Andronicus*, his cosin-germain, who then was his Tu- 1180.

tor,

tor, afterward his companion in the empire, and at last his murderer, for secretly he caused his hed to be cut off, and threw his body into the Sea, he being but fifteen yeares old.

1183 *Andronicus Comnenes*, the sonne of *Isaake*, entred on the empire of *Constantinople*, after his cosine germain *Alexius*, whom cruelly he had caused to be murdered, in the yeare 1183. *William*, king of *Sicily*, made warre vpon him, to reuenge the death of *Alexius*. And as he was assailed on all sides, *Isaacke*, surnamed the *Angell*, (contrary to all opinion) came so suddenly vpon him, that he not onely foiled him, but dieected him from the empyre, and hauing seized vpon his person, hee caused one of his eies to be pulled out, and then set him vppon an Asse, with his face backward, crowning him with a wreath of rotten Garlicke or Onions, and holding the stalke of one of them in his hand, in stead of a Scepter. In this order was he shewen through the Citty of *Constantinople*, men, women, and children, doing many iniuries vnto him, casting both durt and filth in his face, smiting him also with stones and staues. In this manner being cruelly bruised and murdered, he was hanged vp: when yet the women would not leaue him so, but dismembred him into the smallest pieces.

1185 *Isaack* the *Angell*, toke the empyre on him after *Andronicus*, in the yeare 1185. He qualified the tyranie of many, and entertained magnificently *Frederick* Emperor of Rome, who passed into *Syria*. Hee redeemed (with a great sum of mony)

mony) his younger brother *Alexius*, whoe (moſt vnthankefully) bereft him, both of his eies and Empire, becauſe he ſeemed to fauour the *Venetians*. He kept him likewiſe in priſon, vntill that *Alexius*, the ſonne of *Iſaac*, (in deſpite of his vncles mallice) by teares and faire intreats, obtained ſuccour of the *French* and the *Venetians*, wherewith he deliuered his Father: who very ſon after died, hauing taken too much the freſh ayre, after his ſo long cloſe impriſonment.

*Alexius* the *Angell*, murderer of his Brother *Iſaac*, helde the Empire of *Conſtantinople* after him, in the yeare 1195. He was moſt wicked, & cruelly handled his elder brother, onely to vſurpe the Empire. The like hee would haue done to his Nephew *Alexius*, who eſcaping from him, was carried by Sea into *Dalmatia*, where hee found the Nobility of *France*, with *Baldwin* and the *Venetians*, whom he moued to warre againſt his vncle, promiſing them thirty thouſand marks of gold, and all kind of victuals, if his impriſoned father, or himſelfe, might (by their meanes) regaine the Empyre. Hereupon, thoſe valiant lords hoyſed ſaile towards *Conſtantinople*, and toke it; hauing firſt broken the chain which thwarted the Sea. *Alexius*, ſaued himſelfe by flight, *Iſaac* was deliuered out of priſon, who died ſome after: and his ſonne *Alexius* the younger, was elected Emperor. 1195.

*Alexius* the yonger, being ſonne to *Iſaac*, was ſeated in the Empire, in the yeare 1204. by an agreement made betweene him, and the *French* 1204

and *Venetians*. It is said, that then it was sought to haue the Patriarch of *Constantinople* subiect & inferior to the Pope of Rome: and that the Emperor should recompence the *French* and *Venetians*, for the damages which *Manuell* had done vnto them. But scarcely was he entred into his gouernment of the Empire, and employing his paines to accomplish his promises, when as *Murziphilus* (no Noble man, yet one whom he hadde aduanced to great authority) killed him. And so this yong and innocent Prince died by Treason. *Murziphilus* finding his sinne much misliked, in the night time fledde away, with his Wife, his strumpets, and treasure: yet, not long after, hee was brought backe againe from *Morea*, as a Captiue to *Constantinople*, where he died miserably. By this meanes, both the Citty and empire of *Greece* remained to the *French*, and *Baldwine* was the first Emperour of the French Nation.

1205 *Baldwine* Earle of Flanders, was after *Alexius* the younger, elected emperour of *Constantinople*, by all the warlike souldiors of *Flaunders*, as also the Marquesse of *Montferrat*, of *Sauoy*, and of *Venice*, in the yeare 1205. Before this election, there was a condition thus determined: That if the emperor (who was to be elected) should be of the *French*, the *Venetians* should make a Patriarch; as it happened. *Baldwine* then recouered all that belonged to the Empire of *Constantinople*, except *Adrianople*: which *Theodor*, kinsman to *Alexius* the murderer, held as his liues dowry, and kept there his Empire. But as the *French*

laide

laide ſiege thereto, and were vpon the very point of ſurpizing it : *Baldwine* was there taken and put to death, hauing ſcarſly gouerned one yeare.

*Henry* the brother of *Baldwine*, was made Emperor after him. Hee purſued the beſieging and aſſault of *Adrianople*, but the *Sarazins* comming to ſuccour it, he retyred to *Conſtantinople*, which then he ſtrongly fortified. He made peace and alliance with the *Vallachians*, toke their Dukes daughter in marriage, and (both farre off, and at home) guided all affaires prouidently. Hee conſtituted *William*, (ſon to *Boniface*) K. of *Theſſaly*, ſoon after his fathers death, leauing his daughter *Iolanta* as his heyre, who was married vnto *Peter* of *Auxerre*, that ſucceeded him in the Empire. 1206

*Peter de Courtnay*, or (to ſpeake better) of *France*, being the yongeſt ſonne of *Lewes le gros*, and Earle of *Auxerre*, (by the meanes and right of his wife *Iolanta*, in reguard that *Henry* hadde lefte no heyre male) ſucceeded in the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, the yeare 1216. He returning to Rome after his Coronation, beſieged *Baudras*, in fauour of the *Venetians* : But it proued in vaine, for at a gallaunt Banquet, hee was beheaded by *Theodor Laſcarus*, who called himſelfe Emperor of *Adrianople*, and of the *Græcians*. This trechery was performed vnder the ſhadow of a feigned peace, with a faithfull promiſe made vpon a falſe Oath. Others ſay, that *Laſcarus* had laid ambuſhes in the Forreſt of *Theſſaly*, in the place called *Tempe*, and that he ſurpriſed *Peter* in ſuch man- 1216.

ner, ſhutting him vp in Captiuity, and that ſo he died. His wife *Iolanta* during this his thraldom, held the Empyre two yeares.

1220. *Robert*, ſonne to the forenamed *Peter*, ſo ſoone as he heard the tidings of his fathers hard aduenture, departed preſently from *Fraunce*, and went directly to *Conſtantinople*, where he was receyued as Emperor, in the yeare 1220. There hee carried himſelfe valiantly, vntill ſuch time as hee toke to wife a young Lady, who was promiſed & troth-plighted to a Gentleman of *Burgundy*, that neither could or would endure ſuch a ſhame. But he, boldly comming into the Pallace, did cut off the Ladies noſe, and threwe hir mother into the Sea, becauſe ſhe had been the procurer of this vniuſt marriage. To all which the Emperour durſt not ſay one word, but went to Rome to receiue the Crowne: And returning thence not long after, with an intent to bee reuenged, he died of a ſtrange diſeaſe in *Achaia*,

1228 *Baldwine* the ſecond, ſonne to the ſaid *Robert*, ſucceeded his Father in the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, in the yeare 1228. But becauſe he was ouer-young, *Erennius* King of Ieruſalem (in title onely) was ſent from *Italy*, to be ioyned with him as his gouernour: whoſe daughter hee married, making none account of the daughter of the king of *Pontus*, whereby great warres enſued. *Baldwine*, being but barely ſtored of money for theſe warres, and very hardly preſſed: engaged his ſon to the *Venetians*, and to the King S. *Lewes*, a peece of the true Croſſe, as it was reported to be,

and

and many precious Reliques of the Church. So leuying a great Army, he planted it at the entrãce of the ſtraite of *Conſtantinople*: But in the meane while (by ſecret intelligence) *Michaell Paleologus* had gotten into the Citty. Then *Baldwin* flying thence, with the Patriarch, betoke themſelues to *Negropont*, dreading only the outward harmes, while they within were ten times worſe. Then did the *Greekes* recouer the Empire of Conſtantinople, which the *French* hadde helde almoſt the ſpace of threeſcore yeares.

*Michaell Paleologus*, hauing thus cunningly ſeized on the Empire, and got it into his owne poſſeſſion: held it ſtil very manfully, for the ſpace of two and twenty yeares. But hee ran into his peoples hatred, for making agreement with pope *Gregory* the tenth, in the Councell at *Lyons*, and acknowledging duty to him. After him, his ſon ſucceeded. 1239.

*Andronicus*, who within a while after, toke his ſonne *Michaell* to be his aſſociate in the empire. But *Michaell* being dead, his ſonne *Andronicus* the younger, made warre vpon his graundfather *Andronicus*, and compelled him to accept him as companion with him in the Empire. Whereat the Emperour *Andronicus* conceiued ſuch inward diſlike, that he ſoone after died, hauing raigned 43. yeares. 1261

*Andronicus* the yonger, carried himſelfe both wiſely and valiantly in gouerning the Empyre. He died of a burning Feauer, hauing raigned 33. yeares, his ſonne ſucceeding. 1304.

1341. *Iohn Cantacuzen*, who was Schoolmaister to *Iohn Paleologus*, and fellow also with him in the Empires gouernment, of whom more shalbe said in the life of *Iohn Paleologus*.

1341 *Iohn Paleologus*, called also *Caloian*, succeeded his father in the Empire of *Constantinople*, the yeare 1341. He being very young, had for his Tutor and companion in the Empire *Iohn Cantacuzen*, who was expulsed by the seditious deuises & sleights of a man of meane birth, but yet quicke, derterious, and full of courage, which made him the better accepted in Court: It is said also, that the ambition of the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, was thereto a great furtherance. But he being impatient at such an iniurie, made warre for fiue yeares, against the mother of *Iohn Paleologus*, and against *Iohn* the said Emperour, and was the first man, that brought the Turkes in Armes into *Europe*. At length, *Constantinople* yeilded it selfe vnto him, and when he toke it, he did no wrong to any one, but carried himselfe as fellowe Companion of the Empire, giuing his daughter in marriage to the said Emperour *Iohn*. Afterward, he made warre vpon the *Genowaies*, speeding one while well, and another ill, hauing (neuertheless) with him the *Venetians*, and the men of *Arragon*. Then *Iohn Paleologus*, whoe had beene banished, made warre vpon him, being principally ayded by the Turkes, and to whome hee gaue first habitation in Europe: by which meanes, he cunningly entred *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1357. And then *Cantacuzen* (forsaking

the

the Empire) entred into a monaſtery, and liued there as a Monke. But *Matthew*, his ſonne, ſeeking to be Competitor with *Paleologus*, was conſtrained to deſiſt. So *Paleologus*, hauing had the victory in diuers warres, died in the yeare 1384. hauing raigned ſixteene yeares with his Tutour *Cantacuzen*, and 27. yeares alone by himſelfe, in all 43. yeares. After him was Emperour (for the ſpace of three yeares) *Andronicus* the eldeſt ſonne; who neuertheleſſe is not ſet in the number of the Emperors.

*Manuell* (by ſome called *Emanuell*) ſon to the ſaid *Iohn Paleologus*, held the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, in the yeare 1387. And the moſt remarkable matter in his life, was that he left ſeauen ſonnes: of which, *Iohn* the eldeſt, ſucceeded in the Empyre, in the yeare 1421. 1387.

*Iohn*, eldeſt ſonne to *Manuell*, entred on the Empire after his fathers deceaſe. He being more addicted to peace and quietneſſe, then War, gaue his aſſiſtance in the Councell at *Ferrara*, which was afterward tranſferred to *Florence*, *Eugenius* the fourth, then being Pope. As Emperour of the Eaſt, he was graciouſly welcommed by both the Churches, the *Greek* and *Latine*, which were then made one. Returning home to his Empire, he liued no long time after, but died, not leauing any poſterity of him, in the yeare 1445. 1421.

*Conſtantine* the eleauenth, and ſonne of *Manuell*, after the death of his brother *Iohn*, held the Empire, called the *Greeke* Empire, in the yeare, 1445. He hauing bin King of *Morea* before, was 1445.

called *Draco*, for the cruelty which hee exercised against the Turkes. But when *Constantinople* was taken by *Mahomet* the second, son to *Amurath* the second: Then, all trembling, and hee retiring to a gate of the Citty, to escape by flight, was stifled to death, in the preasse and confusion of people, that likewise fled away, the 29. day of May, 1453. His head was carried on the point of a Launce, to be shewn through the enimies camp in derision. And vndoubtedly, it is a matter worthy note, as also of some meruaile, that *Constantinople*, edified or re-edified, enriched, and eralted by *Constantine* the first, sonne to S. *Helena*, and after the manner of Rome: shoulde vnder this *Constantine* the eleauenth (hauing his mother to beare the same name of *Helena* likewise) bee surprized, and kept vnder the power of the Turkes, euen to this instant.

(.˙.)

# A briefe Hiſtory or ſumma-

*rie of the* Othomans *or Emperors of the* Turks, *for the ſpace of three hundred yeares.*

*Thoman*, the ſonne of *Orthogules*, was Emperor of the Turkes, in the yeare of our Saluation 1300. He was the firſt of this Nation that carried this name; which he had, in regard of a Caſtle that he took in *Galatia*, And he was the firſt alſo, that renewed the glory and honor of his Nation. For theſe people hadde taken *Ieruſalem*, in the yeare 1008. but they were conquered by the Chriſtians, vnder the conduct of *Godfrey of Bullen*, and thoſe that then remained of the Turkes, retired themſelues to *Nicea*, hauing (neuer after) any one K. of renowne vntill this man; who made himſelfe a Monarch, & hath the firſt place in the Hiſtory of the *Turkes*. He was but of meane deſcent, yet of great ſpirit, cunning, dilligent, and ambitious: hauing euermore (in his hart) a deſire to raigne, and pondered vpon all meanes, that thereto might beſt aduance him. In this high diſpoſition, hee founde Fortune very fauourable to him: for he ſubdued 1300.

the

the greater part of *Bithinia*, & toke many fortes neere to the *Pontick* Sea. But his very greatest honour, was, the surprising of *Sina*, a Citty anciently called *Sebastia*. He died aged, in the first yeare of *Phillip de Valois*, King of France, and *Edward* the third, King of *England*.

1328 *Orchanes*, Son to the said *Othoman*, was Emperour of the Turkes after his father. He would not alter a iote of this newe authority, no more then his father did, and whom he farre surpassed in Warlike actions. By his liberality and good carriage, he won the hearts of his people, pursuing on (very well) what his father had begunne. By his industry, vigilancie, and prouidence, he won the Countries of *Mysia*, *Lycaonia*, *Phrygia*, and *Caria*, and toke in Warre *Prusya* (which is now called *Bursia*) and which was the aboade of the Kings of *Bithynia*, where he receiued a hurt, whereof he died, in the first yeare of the raigne of *Io.* K. of *France*, *Edward* the third of *England* stil raigning. He raigned 22. yeares, leauing *Soliman* and *Amurath* his sons and successors.

1348. *Soliman*, sonne of *Orchanes*, raigned 2. yeares after his Father. He made warre vpon the *Greekes* passed from *Asya* into *Europe* where he vanquished the *Bulgarians*, and toke many places from them: especially in *Thrace*, he got the Cities of *Adrianople* and *Philopolis*. Some say that he died in his Fathers life time, with a fall from his horse in hunting, and that (very soone after) his father died with greefe. And this is the reason, why some doe not set him in the rank of *Turkish* Emperors.

*Amu-*

*Amurath*, firſt of that name, and ſonne to *Orchanes*, was Emperor of the Turkes, in the yeare 1350. God Fortune attended on him, as ſhee did on his Graundfather, and on his own Father likewiſe: But he was as contrary to his graund father by the mothers ſide, as his father had been to his predeceſſor, who bereft him of a great part of *Cilicia*, by killing his ſonne. *Amurath* (incited thereto by *Iohn Paleologus*) ſent twelue thouſand Turkes for ſeruice of the ſaid *Paleologus*; which was the ſource and beginning of the ruyne of *Conſtantinople*. For, being allured with the riches of *Europe*, to make another voyage, he paſſed (in the *Genowaies* gallies) ſix thouſand *Turks*, vnder colour of (yet) giuing freſh ſuccour to the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, and to expell his enemies out of the Empire: But it was with full intention, to vſurpe *Greece*. So he croſſed the arme of the *Helleſpont* Sea to *Abydos*, ſeazing *Calypolis*, and other Cities. Afterward, with a verie ſtrong power, he ſet vpon the Emperor himſelfe, who no way doubted him: Then toke he *Seruia* and *Bulgaria*, whoſe Princes he foiled, comming in good manner againſt him. But one of the followers of *Lazarus*, *Deſpote* of *Seruia*, in reuenge of his Maiſters death (ſlaine in the fight) killed *Amurath* in the yeare 1378. 1350

*Baiazeth*, King or Emperor of the Turks, firſt of that name, after the death of *Amurath* his Father, ſlew his elder brother *Solyman* by Treaſon, and enioyed the Empyre of the Turkes alone to himſelfe. To reuenge the death of his Father, he 1378.

made

made warre against *Marke*, Lord of *Bulgaria*, both vanquishing and killing him, and subduing beside a great part of his country. In short while after, he ran thorow the Countries of *Hungaria*, *Albania*, and *Valachia*, and doing great hurt vnto them, toke many Christians, whom he carried Prisoners into *Thrace*. In regard of most bold attempts in his Martiall businesse (wherein hee was both hot and suoden) hee was called *Baiazeth Hildrin*, that is to say, *Heauens Lightning*. He subdued almost all *Greece*, being assisted with the guifts and graces of Nature, both in body and mind. He besieged *Constantinople*, for the space of eight yeares, the Emperor whereof was gon into France, to require assistance, which was granted him. Neuertheless, *Baiazeth* had the victory ouer the *French*, *Hungarians*, *Germaines*, *Seruians*, & *Mysians*, at once assembled against him. And so returning to *Constantinople* with a fresh besieging, and finding no meanes to preserue the Empire of *Constantinople*: suddenly *Tamberlain* came against *Baiazeth*, and gaue him battel on mount *Stella*, where *Pompey* fought with *Mithridates*. There did *Tamberlain* conquer him, bound him in chaines of gold, & placing him in a Cage of yron, led him in that manner thorough *Asya* and *Syria*. In which miserable estate *Baiazeth* died, and after his decease, we find that there was *interregnum*, vntil *Mahomet* one of his sons came.

1407. *Iosuah* or *Cyriscelebes*, whom some wrongly name *Calapine*, the eldest sonne of *Baiazeth*, after the foyle of his Father, was defeated of *Asya* by

by *Tamberlain*, & led Captiue to *Conſtantinople* for the Emperor, as a ſingular prize. But he was vſed as the ſonne of a Prince, and ſoon after (with great hnmanity in the Emp.) releaſed, and ſent home into *Aſya*, where he recouered his Fathers kingdome. After, when he had well reeſtabliſhed his forces, he ſtoutly reſiſted *Sigiſmond* King of *Hungary*, who came to aſſaile him, and had won diuers Prouinces from him: preſuming that the Turks could no way releeue him, after ſo great an ouerthrow giuen by *Tamb.* But Fortune ſpake no friendlier to *Sigiſmund*, then ſhe had formerly don to him, when he fought againſt *Baiazeth* at *Nicopolis*, his people being al larded with arrows before they could fall into order of battell. For the Horſmen turned bridle euen at the firſt ſhocke & noiſe of the Enemy, and *Cyriſcelebes* remained conqueror, who was ſlaine by his brother *Muſtapha*, otherwiſe called *Muſulman*, in the very flower of his age, the yeare 1407.

*Muſtapha* or *Muſulman*, was Emperor of the Turks a very ſmall time, for his brother *Moyſes* poſſeſſed himſelfe of the State, and expelled him. Som, name this *Muſtapha*, *Orchanes* the ſecond; whom they tearme to be ſon and heire to *Ioſuah* or *Cyriſcelebes*, and that he was ſlaine by *Moyſes*, his vncle by the fathers ſide: but *Moyſes* quickly did ſuffer his deſerued punniſhment. For loſing both goods and life together, himſelf was alſo ſlain by his owne brother *Mahometh*. There be that write, that this *Mahometh* raigned next after his father *Baiazeth*, making no mention of *Ioſuah*, 1408

or

or *Cyriſcelebes*, neither of *Muſtapha* or *Orchanes*, nor of *Moyſes*: but after *Baiazeth*, do make his ſonne *Mahometh*, preſently to follow.

1409 *Moyſes* was expulſed, and put to death by his brother *Muſtapha*, or (as others ſay) his nephue *Orchanes*, and ſone after, he was likewiſe ſlaine by his brother *Mahometh*: And theſe twoe (by ſome) are not ſet in ranke with the Turkiſh Emperors, becauſe they are ſaid to raigne very little time, or not at all.

1409 *Mahometh*, firſt of that name, brother to *Ioſuah*, *Muſtapha*, and the forenamed *Moyſes*, is ſaid (notwithſtanding the reſt) to be Emperor of the Turkes, in the yeare 1409. There are ſom that do attribute only to this man, all thoſe matters which are reported of *Ioſuah* or *Cyriſcelebes*. He ouer ran the Countries of the *Bulgarians* & *Valachians*, impoſing great Tributes and Taxations vpon them. Then he entred on the *Satrapes* of *Aſya*, recouering all thoſe places which *Tamberlaine* had taken. He chaſed out of *Galatia*, and the Countries of *Pontus* and *Cappadocia*, his own kindred and Allies, without extending any pitty, to any Princes and Lordes of his owne blood: albeit it is true, that he left ſome in their own intire dwellings. Being returned into *Greece*, hee came to *Adrianople*, (the Metropolitan Citty of *Thrace*) and there he conſtituted the ſeate of his Empire, expelling thence the Chriſtians that had there any abiding. He died in the twelft yeare of his Empire, which is reckoned to be in the yeare 1418. leauing his ſonne *Amurath* the ſecond, to be his ſucceſſor.

*Amurath*

*Amurath* the ſecond, Sonne to the forenamed *Mahometh*, ſucceeded his Father in the Turkiſh Empire, in the yeare 1418. He (vnderſtanding the death of his father, and deſiring to paſſe from *Aſya* into *Thrace*) vanquiſhed his Vncle *Muſtapha*, to whom the Greeks gaue fauour and ſuccour. He was the firſt, that (for the guard of his perſon) made election of Chriſtian *Renegados*, to bee his *Ianiſſaries*, by the power and courage of whom, both he and his ſucceſſors haue ſubdued almoſt the whole Eaſt. He aſſailed with his forces, and did great dammages to the Countries of *Hungaria*, *Boſnia*, *Albania*, *Valachia*, & *Greece*. He toke *Theſſalonica* from the *Venetians*. He had victory againſt *Ladiſlaus* King of *Poland*, againſt the Cardinall *Iulian*, and againſt *Huniades*. He held the Empire or Kingdome of the Turks, for the ſpace of 32. yeares, and then left it to *Mahomet* his Sonne. 1418

*Mahomet* the ſecond, Emperor of the Turks, ſucceeded his Father *Amurath* in the year, 1450. He began his reigne as an Homicide, cauſing his younger Brother to be murthered, becauſe his fathers body ſhould not be buried alone. He was a moſt wicked and ſinfull man, not beleeuing in any God. For he would ſay, that his *Mahomet* was a falſe Prophet, like vnto himſelfe, & made a mockery of the Saintes, Prophets, and Patriarches. He woon and left the ſirname of *Great*, to the houſe of the *Otthomans*. Hee ruyned the Empyre of *Conſtantinople*, which he ſeized by aſſault the 29. day of May, 1453. as hath beene already 1450

ready declared, in the report of the life of *Constantine* the eleauenth; together, with the Empire of *Trebisonde*. He toke twelue kingdomes, & two hundred Cities, from the Christians, in the year 1479. He besieged the Isle of *Rhodes*, which was then held by the knights of S. *Iohn* of *Ierusalem*, but his labour was in vaine, for it was couragiously defended by the said Knights, & their great maister *Peter d' Aubusson*, or *d' Ambois*, a *French man*. At length, he died of the Collick, the fourth day after he sickened; hauing liued 58. yeares, & reigned one and thirty.

1481 *Baiazeth*, second of that name, and sonne to *Mahomet* the second, by meanes of the Janissaries, was made Emperor of the Turkes, in the yeare 1481. He conquered and expulsed *Zizim*, his younger brother, whom the chiefest Lordes would haue had to be Emperour: but hee beeing fled for refuge to the Isle of *Rhodes*, the great maister of the Knights, sent him to King *Charles* the eight. *Baiazeth* vanquished *Caraman*, and recouered all whatsoeuer hee hadde gotten from the Turkes, on either side of the Mount *Taurus*. He subdued *Valachia*, and so went on against the *Sultane* of *Ægipt*, who was too strong for him: For, hauing receiued the fugitiue *Mamelukes*, after the death of *Caraman*, and entertaining (besides) a great number of *Arabes*, for his defence, oftentimes hee conquered and put *Baiazeth* to flight. Afterward, *Baiazeth* subiected the Inhabitants of the *Ceraunian* Mountaines, and toke from the Venetians *Lepanto*, *Modon* and *Durazo*.

In

In the end, his youngeſt ſonne *Selim*, whoe (by meanes of the Ianiſſaries) had gotten preferment before the eldeſt, and was declared to be Emperor in his fathers life time: enforced him to flight, and afterward poiſoned him, in the yeare 1512. at the very ſame time, when the battell of *Rauenna* was fought, vnder the happy reigne of King *Lewes* the twelfth.

*Selim* hauing expulſed, and after poiſoned his Father, becauſe he liued too long, was Emperour of the Turkes, in the yeare 1512. To this parracide, he added the murder of his brethren *Achmet* and *Corcuthus*, and cauſed ſeauen of his Nephewes to be ſtrangled, that were the Children of his brothers. He conquered and expelled the *Sophi* of *Perſya*, and (in diuers battels) diſcomfited the two *Souldanes*, *Campſon* and *Tomombens*, with the *Mamelukes* and *Arabes*. Hee added *Ægipt* and *Arabia* to his Empire, and tooke the great *Cayro*. Then returning home to his country of *Greece*, an vlcer ingendred in his Raines, which increaſing continually like a Canker, procured his death, in the eight yeare of his reygne, Anno 1519. 1512.

*Soliman*, whom ſome tearme to be the ſecond of that name, Emperor of the Turks, carried that name (as is ſaid) becauſe he very wiſely prouided for all affaires, whereunto the yſſue of them was alſo as correſpondent. For this name of *Soliman* (by ſom tranſpoſed ſillables) deliuereth the name of *Salomon*, the moſt renowned King for Wiſedome. There was not any before him, nor of the 1510

race of the *Othomans*, more seuere and valiaunt. For the deedes and warres of *Soliman*, came not one iote behinde those of his Father: hauing recouered *Syria*, vanquished *Gazel* that was reuoulted, and surprised *Belgrade* and *Rhodes*; then afterward *Buda* two seuerall times, and put to the worse the Army of *Austria*, that fled away before him. And nere vnto *Buda*, had the victory ouer *Rokandolphe*, who had a great Army. He vanquished the *Spaniards* at *Castelnoua* in *Dalmatia*, and put to flight the Army by Sea, which seemed
1543. inuinsible. In the yeare 1543. he toke *Strigonia* and *Alba Regalis*, two worthy Citties of *Hungaria*. He conquered the kingdomes of *Assyria* and *Mesopotamia*, with the Citty of *Babylon*, that might be compared with *Memphis* and *Ægypt*, conquered by his Father. He ouerran and wasted the frontiers of *Armenia*, *Medea* and *Persia*, and twice toke *Tauris*, the principall Cittye of *Persia*, chasing the *Sophi* (farre off before him) into the mountaines. For the rest, the Turks themselues doe confesse, that for 200. yeares before, they neuer had Lord that was a greater Iusticer, more sober, wise, and humane, then he was. But this humanity ceased in him, when he caused his eldest sonne *Mustapha* to bee strangled, to please his Concubine *Rosa*, who desired that hir Sonne *Selim* might be Emperour after his Father. Hee was repulsed by the Emperour *Charles* the fift, when hee came (with a powerfull Army) to besiege the Citty of *Vienna* in *Austria*. He besie-
1565. ged also the Isle of *Malta*, in the yeare 1565.

whe-

whether the Knights of S. *Iohn* of *Ieruſalem* had retired themſelues, after the ſurpriſall of *Rhodes*. But the Iſle was manfully defended by their great maiſter, being a Frenchman, named *Peter Pariſot*, called alſo; *le Valette*, and *Soliman* was compelled to raiſe his ſiege. In the yeare 1566. He died in *Hungary*, at his ſiedge before the Caſtle of *Sighet*, hauing raigned 47. yeares.

*Selim*, ſecond of that name, Emperour of the Turks, ſucceeded in the Empire (by the meanes of Balha *Mehemet*) after the death of *Soliman* his Father in *Hungary*, which for a time was concealed, and hee entred into poſſeſſion of the Empire, before the death of his Father was diſcouered. He ſubdued *Ainan* in *Arabia*, and tok the Iſle of *Cyprus*, in the yeare 1571. In the end, he loſt his Nauall Army, in the battell of *Lepanto*, which he had againſt the Chriſtians, in the very ſame yeare 1571. But ſone after, he came vpon them againe, and then renewed peace with the *Venetians* and their Common-wealth. Afterward, he recouered *Thunis* & the *Goulette*, which the king of *Spaine* had made vſe of in *Affrica*: And he died in the yeare 1574. hauing reigned eight yeares. But all the forenamed memorable actions, were performed by his *Baſhaes*, and not by himſelfe: for hee (all the while) toke his pleaſure, being greatly giuen to women and wine. 1566. 1571.

*Amurath*, third of that name, and ſon to *Selim*, was created Emperour of the Turkes, and enioyed the Empire after his fathers death, within eight daies, in the yeare 1574. By a cruel and 1574.

barbarous custome of the Contrey, he caused fiue Brethren of his owne to be slaine, and two Concubines of his Fathers, whoe were great with Child: to the end, that he might solely reigne alone, without feare or suspition, and so be annoyded of all impeachments, which he wel vnderstood might ensue by parity, and such as shoulde laye claime to the like Fortune. He began his gouernment somewhat yong, being aged but 28. years, being a wonderfull louer of his paternall Mahometane Religion, a great Iusticer, and imitator of his Graundfather *Soliman*. He toke som cities in *Hungarie* and *Sclauonie*, which afterward were regained from him. Some say, that he was dull and lumpish of spirit, and fell (oftentimes) with the falling sickneſſe, which made his face to look blemished, and of a leaden colour. He gaue himselfe to women and great feeding, for he was the Father of 102. children, and yet became very grosse and corpulent. Hee died in January, 1595. the 21. yeare of his raigne, not hauing attained to fifty yeares of age.

1595. *Mahometh* the third, succeeded his Father *Amurath* the third, in the yeare 1595. And to shew himselfe the sonne of his father, and no whit to degenerate from his Auncestors, he caused 19. of his brethren to be barbarously murdered, and many of his Fathers Concubines to be drowned, that were found to be great with childe after his decease, so that no child should remaine, to trouble him in his gouernment. But, as cruelty and barbarousnesse doth commonly dwell in a negligent

gent ſpirit, addicted to ſloth and puſillanimity: euen ſo, did not he any thing deſeruing memory, he being wholy giuen to his bodies voluptuouſneſſe. He did put to death his eldeſt ſonne, and the mother of that ſonne, becauſe they had inquired of Aſtrologers, how long time hee ſhoulde raigne. In the yeare 1603. the *Sophi* of *Perſya*, regained *Tauris* and *Bages*, and thoſe great countries, which the predeceſſors of this *Mahometh* had inuaded, as hath bin already declared, in our report of *Selim* the firſt, and *Soliman* the ſecond. He died of the Plague at *Conſtantinople*, in January 1604. hauing raigned nine yeares.

*Achmet* ſucceedes his father in the Empyre, being but ſeauentéen yeares old, in the year 1604. 1604

In the yeare 1605. he toke *Strigonia*, and ſome other places in the Kingdome of *Hungaria*. It is ſaid, that (in his Army) he cauſeth his Fathers dead body to be caried, embalmed and encloſed in a Coffin of Lead: holding opinion, that his military deſeignes and ereployts ſhall thereby proue the more fortunat. He hath made peace with the Emperour *Rodulphus*, and thoſe of the houſe of *Auſtria* for fifteen yeares, which makes it therefore the more beléeued, that hee will conuert his forces againſt the *Sophi*. He now reigneth, this yeare 1611. and (by outward appearance) couets to be feared.

# A briefe Discourse concerning the Sarrazins, the Originall of their name, and what People they haue been, euen to this day.

HAuing deliuered a shorte Suruey of the Turkish *Ottomans*, from their first King or Emperor to the man that now gouerneth: I thought it not impertinent to my purpose, to say somwhat also of the *Sarazins*, who are held to be before them, and much more auncient then they. Nor list I here to call in question, those errors committed by *Sabellicus*, *Blondus*, the *Tyrian* Bishop, *Volatteranus*, & many other graue Authors, who (in their writings) doe tearme the *Mahumetists* or *Turks* to be Sarazins: for they neuer knewe any such name, neither were at any time so called, but only *Mulsulmans*, which is as much to say, as, people faithfull in the Law. Some others, who haue thought their iudgements to be much more pregnant, sticke not to say: that this name of *Sarazin*, did come of *Sarra*, the wife of *Abraham*, of whose race the great Prophet *Mahomet*, (inuenter and deuiser of the Law or Religion, helde at this present by the Sarazins and Turkes) they say was discended. But this opinion likewise is not receiueable: for they desired rather to be called *Agarians*, in reguard of *Agar*, handmaide to *Sarra*, and mother of *Ismaeli*; or else *Ismaelites*, because they iudged themselues to be yssued of the said *Ismaell*, bastard son to the forenamed *Abraham*.

Mulsulmans what it signifieth.

Whence the Sarazins deriue their discent.

But

But let vs leaue theſe falſe etymologies, which neither carry or yeeld any true likelihood, & come to the very Originall of the name Sarazin. The error grew from hence, that ſome ſhort while before *Mahomet* (or *Muhamet*, as others tearme him) aroſe, and began to extend himſelfe as well towards *Suria* as *Perſya*: there liued then in the Rocky *Arabia* and *Idumea*, certain *Arabes*, who made their abode or dwelling (and yet doe to this day) vnder ſmall Tents or encloſures, and hadde not any other trade or maintenance for their liuing, but by thefts and robberies, which they daily exerciſed vpon all paſſengers, were they *Turks*, Chriſtians, Pagans or whatſoeuer. Of which Robbers and Theeues, the Countrey coulde neuer be freed, nor can be at this day: as ſuch doe faithfully affirme, who haue trauailed on pilgrymage to Mount *Sinai* in *Ieruſalem*. And the Turkes themſelues doe confeſſe, that when Deuotion drew them forth on Pilgrimage, to the citty of *Medinat al Nabi*, that is to ſay: the Citty of the Prophet, ſcituate in *Arabia fœlix*, where the Sepulcher of *Mahomet* is: and when likwiſe they doe yet paſſe thorow the very greateſt ſolitudes and deſarts, as many times the Chriſtians doe: They finde them to bee peopled with theſe wicked kindes of Theeues, as formerly hath bin ſaid, who name themſelues *Sarracenis*, not in regard of Religion or bloud, but by an auncient appellation of the ſaid people, of whome *Ptolomey* makes mention, and ſaith, that their liuing is in *Idumea*.

Sarazins were people dwelling in the deſert of Arabia, and Idumea

Amia-

*Ami, Marcel, in vita Iul, Apost, lib,14*

*Amianus Marcellinus*, in the Hiſtory of *Iulian* the *Apoſtat* Emperour, makes a deſcription of them, and ſaith: that Thoſe places (more than two hundred yeares before the Originall of *Mahomet*, or of his *Alcoran*) were fully furniſhed with the ſaid *Sarrazins*: and *Aſſyria* afterward, euen ſo farre as the Cataracts of *Nylus*, or the kingdome of *Preſter Iohn*, where they vſed the ſame courſes, violences & thefts vpon merchants, and inhabitants of the neighboring Countries, according as the *Arabes* or *Alarbes* doe at this day. Whereupon, becauſe that their chiefeſt habitation was in the Deſarts and Mountaines, which are in *Arabia* and the neighbouring quarters or Countries, as *Chaldæa*, *Aſſyria*, *Meſapotamia*, *Suria* and *Ægipt*, when the *Arabes* aroſe with their new Religion, and had frequented the foreſaid Regions: the nearer Countries ſuppoſed that theſe people were thoſe former Sarazins, by ignorance of their Language, as alſo by raſhneſſe of ſome Writers, who liued then in *Suria*, and ſince that time in *Spaine*, ſeeming to haue good knowledge of thoſe people, and therefore continually then called *Sarazins*.

The antiquity of the Sarazin people

Moreouer, to confirme that vaine appellation, thoſe Interpreters in *Spaine*, who (by commandement of S. *Bernard*) were appointed to interpret the *Alchoran*, in euery place where they found the vocable *Mulſulman*, which is as much to ſay in the *Arabian* tongue, as, *Peaceble, and faithfull towards God*: they interpreted the ſame *Sarracenis*, or *Sarazins*. This *Mulſulman* then

Error in trāſlatiō of the Alchoran

is the vocable, whereby al that beléeue in the *Alcoran* will be called; whether they bee *Arabes*, *Syrians*, *Perſians*, *Tartars*, *Turks*, or *Moores*.

Whoſoeuer then would enter into any peaceable and friendly conference with them, (albeit none doe hate their name more than the Turks) muſt call them *Mulſulmans*, as we do our ſelues Chriſtians, or faithfull people. So are they all named, by the Author of the *Iſmaell* or *Iſmaelitiſh* race, and by their Baſtard Prophet. After our manner, and in reſpect of Religion, they term a man *Mulſulmam*, and a woman *Mulſulmina*, or *Mulſulminet*: albeit ſome ſay *Muſſim*, by a corrupt pronunciation. As we may well conceiue by our owne ſelues, who do vſe to call thoſe diſfigured wanderers, that walke among vs with deformed faces, and long vſauored lockes, vſing all ſubtle Thefts, pilferies, and legerdumaines they can deuiſe, we nick-name them to be Sarrazins, *Ægiptians*, or *Gypſies*.

Sarazins wil be called Mulſulmans

I thus conclude then, that when Hyſtorians write, that the Sarrazins inuaded and made vſe of *Rhodes*, next of *Thrace*, then of *Italy*, *Spaine*, and other Countries: it is to be vnderſtood of the Orientall people and *Affricanes*, that were of the Mahometan Religion, becauſe they vſed the ſelfe ſame cruelties, thefts, and robberies, as the Sarazins of rockie *Arabia* did. And to ſpeak truly, all *Europe* wold (at this inſtant) haue bin haunted with thoſe people, if they had not béene formerlie expelled and ſpoiled. It remaineth yet freſhe in memory, that the great Graundfather to *Phillip*

What people are ment by the Sarazins.

king

At what time the Sarazins were expulsed out of Spaine.

king of Spaine (not long since deceased) named *Ferdinand*, expulsed them out of the Kingdom of *Granado*, with their king called *Melen*, and he bestowed six whole years together in stout wars, onely in foiling them: And then the dominion, which the Sarazins and *Moores* held in *Spaine*, had finall conclusion. After which time, those faithlesse Mahumetists durst neuer presume any more vpon *Spaine*, where they had held the Kingdome of *Granado* eight hundred yeares.

A great slaughter of the Sarazins in Spaine.

Before the said *Ferdinand*, king *Alphonsus*, in the yeare of our Lord 1233. slew in diuers places aboue two hundred thousand of them, when they held strong forts and Citties in *Spaine*, which he forced them to forsake, and since then haue beene vtterly ruined. *Henry* the Emperour made another great massacre of them, in the yeare of Jesus Christ 1010. in *Italy*, expelling them wholy out of that Countrey. Among the Sarazins, there were not only very generous persons: but likewise some men of great learning: as *Auicen*, *Mesuus*, *Isaac*, *Mansor*, *Auerroes*, and many others. Now, as all things haue their vicissitude, and alteration by courses: so after that the Sarazins had raigned in *Africa*, and partly in *Europe*, for about the space of eight hundred yeares, there came a people from diuers parts of *Scythia*, which at this day we call *Turks*, who in lesse than twoe hundred yeares, ouercame in Armes those people called *Sarazins*, with many other Christians beside, not onely in *Asya*, but in Europe and *Affrica*. And albeit that those Turks were of the same

Another in Italy.

The Turks ouercame the Sarazins.

Sec-

Religion, to wit, *Mahumetiſts*: yet did they not abſtaine from vering and troubling them with warre, euen in like manner as they did the Chriſtians. For in the yeare 1012. they took *Ieruſalem* and all *Iudæa* from them: but the Sarazins of *Ægipt* recouered them againe, and held them for three hundred yeares after. Neuertheleſſe, they were yet againe deiected thence in the year 1517 by the *Turks*, the Sarazins loſing then not onlie *Paleſtine*, and the Holy-land, but likewiſe *Egipt*, *Syria*, *Arabya*, and the very ſame Countrey of *Idumea*, where as the Sarazins had their original, and are there ſubiect to the Turkes nowe at this inſtant. For *Campſon* their King, loſt the daie againſt *Selim*, Emperor of the Turks, and *Tomombeus* his ſucceſſour, being next choſen to bee King in his place, was taken, and afterward ignominiouſlie ſtrangled in the graund Caire, the very principall Citty of Egypt, where we may behold the end of the Sarazins, not any part of them now remaining, except ſuch few, as are in the Turks ſeruility.

The Sarazins laſt King ſtrangled.

This ſhort diſcourſe giues vs to vnderſtand, that Sarazins were not all ſuch as are called *Mahumetiſts*, but they that had their beginning in the Countries of *Idumea*, and the deſart or rockie *Arabia*, and all thoſe that (being ioined with them) commanded vnder them in diuers Countries, rendring other Nations ſubiect to them by Armes. Vncill ſuch time, as they were exterminate by the people, whoſe Countries they vniuſtlie vſurped, and planted their Religion by war:

as

As also (at length) by the Turkes, although they be of the same Religion. For warre is maintained among them, for desire of soueraignty and ambition, euen as well as among vs that are Christians.

## ¶ A briefe Collection of the

*Byshops and Popes of Rome, from the yeare* 44. *to this instant* 1611. *With the seuerall Ages of the Church, since the Ascension of our blessed Sauiour Iesus Christ vp into Heauen.*

The years of Grace.

OVr Lord Iesus Christ, the Nazarite, God and man, Messias, Sauiour of the world, Holy of holies, Soueraigne and Eternall Highe Priest, head of the Church.

44. 1 *Peter*, called *Cephas*, borne in *Bethsaida*, the sonne of *Iohn*, and first called of the Apostles, is said to hold his seat seauen yeares at *Antioch*, and afterward at *Rome*, xxiij. yeares, vnder the Empire of *Claudius* and *Nero*, who caused him

to

to be crucified in the ſame place. *Simon Magus*, being reputed to be the firſt Heretique, was then condemned by him. Then was the firſt Councel holden at *Ieruſalem*, and then alſo was the firſt Perſecution.

2 *Linus*, the ſonne of *Herculanus*, born at *Volterra* in *Tuſcane*, was ſaid to be the Diſciple to S. *Peter*, and his Coadiutor. He held the See, eleuen yeares, fiue Moneths, and twelue dayes: And had his head ſmitten off vnder *Nero*. 57

3 *Clement*, the ſon of Romain *Fauſtinus*, firſt Prieſt of the Romain Church, was deſigned by S. *Peter* his ſucceſſour. He was baniſhed to *Pontus*, and was drowned, hauing an Anchor faſtened about his necke. He held the See, ry. Moneths, eleuen daies. *Sede vacante*, riy. daies. 68

4 *Cletus*, ſon to *Emilianus* the Romaine, was martyred vnder *Domitian*. He held the See, ry. yeares, one moneth, eleuen daies. *Menander*, *Ebion* and *Cerinthus*, were then Hereticks: And the ſecond Perſecution. 77.

*The firſt Age.*

IN this firſt Age, liued & wrote, *Philo* the Iew, *Dioniſius Areopagita*, *Ioſephus*, and S. *Ignatius*. In this Age, were two ſeuerall Perſecutions of the Church: The firſt vnder *Nero*, & the ſecond vnder *Domitian*.

5 *Anacletus*, ſonne to *Antiochus* the *Athenian*, a Prieſt of the Romain Church, was martired vnder *Nerua* and *Traian*. He held the See, nine yeares, two moneths, ten daies. *Vacante*, thirteen daies. 84.

6 *Eua-*

6. *Enaristus* a *Greeke*, Son of *Iudas* the *Bethleemite* Iew: was martyred vnder *Traiane*. Hee held the See, nine yeares, ten months, two daies *vacante* six. dayes. *Saturnine*, *Basilides*, and *Isidorus* Heretickes liued then: And then was the third persecution.

96.

7 *Alexander*, Sonne of *Romaine Alexander*, was Martird vnder *Traian*. He held the See seuen yeares, ten Months, two daies, *vacante* xxv daies.

109

8 *Sixtus*, Son of *Romaine Pastor*, a Priest of the *Romaine* Churchs, was Martyred vnder *Adrian*, He held the See, ten yeares, three Moneths, and xx. daies. *vacante* foure daies. Then liued, *Carpocrates*, *Epiphanes*, and *Prodicus*, authors of the *Gnosticke* Hereticks. The fourth persecution.

117

9 *Telesphorus* a Greeke, sonne to *Anachoretus*, Priest of the Romaine Church, was martyred vnder *Adrian*. He held the See, eleuen years, three moneths, xxv. daies. *vac.* foure daies. *Aquila* of *Pontus*, the Heretick, then liued.

127.

10 *Higinus* a Greeke, son to an *Athenian* Philosopher, was Priest of the Romain Church, vnder the Empire of *Antoninm*. He held the see, 4. yeares, three moneths, foure daies. *vac.* 4. daies.

138.

11 *Pius* of *Aquilea*, sonne to *Ruffinus*, Priest of the Romain church vnder *Antoninus*: He disputed concerning the feast of Easter, at *Laodicia*. He held the See, nine yeares, three Monethes, foure daies. *vacante* foure daies. Then were hereticks, *Valentinus* and his Disciples, *Marcus*,

242

*Secundus*,

*Secundus, Baſſus, Colarbaſus* and *Heracleo.*

12 *Anicetus* a *Syrian*, the ſonne of *Iohn*, mar- 153
tired vnder the Emperour *Antonius verus*. Hee held the Sée, nine yeares, foure monethes, xiij. daies. *vacante* xvij. daies.

13 *Sother*, ſonne to *Concordius*, a Natiue of *Fundi*, vnder *Verus*. He held the Sée nine yeares, ij. months, two daies, *Vacante* xxi. daies. Then was *Tatian*, of whom came the *Encratites*, *Severus* and *Ammonius* Hereticks.

14 *Eleutherius* of *Nicopolis*, ſonne to *Habun-* 171
*dius*, was Deacon of the Romain Church, vnder *Commodus*. He held the Sée, xv. yeares, ij. moneths, two daies. *Vacante* fiue daies. *Montanus* the *Phrygian*, Author of the *Cataphriges*, *Theod. Themiſt. Alexander* and *Symmachus* Heretiques then liuing.

15 *Victor* an *Affricane* borne, the Sonne of 186
*Fœlix*, vnder the Emperor *Pertinax*. Hee helde the Sée ten yeares, three months ten daies: *vacante* xxi. dayes. A Synod was then at Rome; ſome Counſels in *Paleſtine*, concerning Eaſter. *Theodotus*, *Æſclapiodothus*, *Hermopilus*, and *Apollonides*, were then Heretiques.

16. *Zephyrinus* a *Romaine* borne, Sonne to 198
*Habundius*, vnder *Antonius Caracalla*. Hee held the Sée ſeauen yeares, ſeauen months, ten daies, *vacante* fiue dayes.

17. *Calixtus*, Sonne to *Domitius* a *Romayne*, 218
was martired vnder *Aurelius Seuerus*: He helde the Sée fiue yeares, one month, tenne daies, *Vacante* vi. dayes. Then was the fift perſecution.

*The*

*The second Age.*

2 In this second Age, liued *Iustine* the Phylosopher and Martir: *Dionisius* Byshoppe of *Corinth* S. *Policarpus*, S. *Ireneus*; *Clemens*, *Alexandrinus*, and *Tertullian*. In which Age, were three persecutions: one vnder *Traiane*: the second vnder *Marcus Antoninus*, and the thirde vnder *Seuerus*.

223 18 *Vrbane*, Sonne to *Pontianus* a *Romaine*, martired vnder *Alexander*. He held the See foure yeares, ten months, twelue dayes, *vacante* one month.

231 19 *Pontianus* a *Romaine* borne, and sonne to *Capurnius*, dyed in exile in *Sardignia*, vnder *Alexander*. He held the See nine yeares, fiue moneths, two daies, *Vacante* x. daies.

236 20 *Antherus* a *Greeke* by birth, son to *Romulus*, martired vnder *Maximinus*. He held the See fiue yeares, one month, twelue daies, *Vacante* xiij. daies. Then was the first persecution.

237 21 *Fabian* a *Romaine*, sonne to *Fabius*, vnder *Maximinus*. He held the See, fifteene yeares, eleuen dayes, *Vacante* six daies. *Gordianus*, *Philip* and *Decius* were then martired. The *Ælchesites*, and *Nouatus* chiefe of the *Nouatians*, with some *Arabian* Heretickes, were then. A Counsel was holden at *Rome*, against *Nouatus*: The seuenth persecution.

251 22 *Cornelius* a *Romaine*, son to *Castinus* Priest of the *Romaine* Church, and martyred vnder *Decius* and *Gallus*. He held the See two yeares, two months, three daies: *Vacante* one moneth, and three

three daies. Then was the *Nouatian* Anti-pope, and firſt ſchiſme in the Church. Two Synodes were held in *Affrica*, againſt *Nouatian*. The ſée being vacant, a Synode was held at *Rome*, concerning them that had denied the Faith.

23 *Lucius* a Romain, and ſonne to *Porphirius*, was martyred vnder *Gallien* and *Valerian*. He held the Sée three yeares, three moneths, iij. daies, *Vacante* one month, v. daies. Two councels were held at *Carthage*, one concerning the doubt, whether Heretiques ought to bee rebaptized: and the other about baptizing of Infantes. Two other Councels were likewiſe in *Aſya*, vpon the doubt, whether Heretiques were to be receiued, comming to reſipiſcence or knowledge of their error. Now was the eight Perſecution. 253.

24 *Stephen* a Romain, ſonne to *Iulius*, Archdeacon of the Romain Church, martyred vnder *Valerian* and *Gallien*. He held the Sée, 7. years, fiue Moneths, and ij. daies. *vacante* xxij. daies. A Synode was held in *Affrica*, againſt *Baſilides* and *Martiall*, two renegate Biſhops. 255

25 *Sixtus* the ſecond, an *Athenian* borne, ſon to a Phyloſopher, and martyred with S. *Laurence*, vnder *Valerian* and *Gallien*. He helde the Sée, two years, ten months, xxij. daies: *vacante* one moneth, fiue dayes. Then were liuing *Noëtus* and *Sabellius*, Author of the *Sabellian* hereſie, with the heretick *Paule* of *Samoſata*. 257

26 *Denis* or *Dioniſius*, a Monke vnder *Claudius* the Emperour. He held the Sée, fiue yeares, two moneths, foure daies. *vac.* ſix daies. *Nepos* 260

the Heretick then renewed the *Chiliastes*, Two Synodes were at *Antioch*, against *Paule* of *Samosata*: And a Synode at Rome, for the cause of *Denis* of *Corinth*.

271. 27 *Felix* a Romain, son of *Constantius*, martyred vnder *Aurelian*: He held the see, 4. yeares, three moneths, xv. daies. *vacan.* fiue daies. The ninth Persecution.

275 28 *Eutichianus*, sonne to *Maximus*, borne at *Luna* in *Tuscane*, martired vnder *Aurelian*, *Tacitus* and *Florian* Emperors: He held the See, one yeare, one Moneth, *vacante* eight daies. Then was *Manes*, head of the *Manichean* Heretiques.

283 29 *Caius*, the son of *Caius*, borne at *Salona*, in *Dalmatia*, martyred vnder *Carinus*, *Numerianus*, *Diocleſian* and *Maximianus* Emperors. He held the See, eleuen yeares, foure Moneths, xv. daies, *vacante* eleuen daies.

296 30 *Marcellinus* a *Romaine*, son to *Proiectus*, martyred vnder *Diocleſian* and *Maximianus*. He held the See, six yeares, two moneths, xvi. daies, *Vacante* seauen yeares, seuen moneths, and xxv. daies. Then was the tenth and bloudy Persecution: And a Synode holden at *Sinüeſſa*, for the cause of Pope *Marcellinus*.

*The third Age.*

3 In this third Age flourished *Origen*, *Minutius*

*tius Fœlix, S, Cyprian, S. Gregory,* cald the worker of myracles; *Dioniſius* biſhop of *Alexandria*, *Victorinus*, Biſhop of *Poictiers*, *Arnobius*, and *S. Methodius* Byſhop of *Tyre*. In this age were fiue perſecutions. The firſt vnder *Maximinus*, the ſecond vnder *Decius*, the third vnder *Valerianus* and *Gallien*, the fourth vnder *Aurelianus*, and the fift vnder *Diocleſian*.

31. *Marcellus* a *Romaine*, the Sonne of *Bennet* or *Benedict*, Prieſt, Cardinall of the *Romaine* Church, vnder *Conſtantine*. Hee helde the Sée ſix yeares, fiue months, three dayes, *vacante* xx. dayes. 304

32 *Euſebius* a *Greeke*, ſonne to a Phyſitian, vnder *Conſtantine*, He held the Sée foure yeares, one month, three daies, *Vacante* three dayes. 310

33 *Miltiades* or *Melchiades* an *Affricane*, Cardinall Prieſt of the *Romaine* Church vnder *Conſtantine*. He held the Sée, foure yeares, ſeauen months, nine dayes, *vacante* xx, daies. Then was the Schiſme of the *Donatiſts* in *Affrica*: the *Elibertine* Synod in *Spaine*; the Synod of *Rome* and of *Carthage*. 311

34. *Sylueſter* a *Romaine*, ſonne to *Ruffinus*, Cardinall Prieſt vnder *Conſtantine*. Hee helde the Sée three and twenty yeares, ten months, eleuen dayes, *vacante* fifteene dayes. Then were the Synodes of *Ancyra* and *Neocæſaria*: The generall Counſell of *Nice*, wherein *Arrius* was condemned, and the third Synod holden at *Rome* 315

35 *Marcus* a *Romaine*, the ſonne of *Priſcus*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Conſtantine*, hee helde 336

the Sée two yeares, eight months, twenty daies, *vacante* twenty daies.

336 36 *Iulius* a *Romaine*, sonne of *Rusticius*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Constantine* and his children. Hee helde the Sée fiftéene yeares, two moneths, ten dayes, *Vacante*, two dayes. Then wer the *Asterians*, *Anthropomorphites*, *Eusebians*, *Macedonians*, *Dulians*, *Luciferians*, and *Marcellian* Heretiques; with *Photinus*, *Acacius* and *Ærius*: The Synodes of *Rome*, *Cullen*, *Sardis*, *Ierusalem* and *Alexandria*.

353 37 *Liberius* a *Romaine*, the son of *Augustus*, a Cardinall Deacon, was sent into exile vnder *Constance*. He held the Sée, twelue yeares, three moneths, foure daies: *Vacante* fiue daies. Then was the persecution of the church by the *Arrians*, and second Schisme betwéene *Liberius* and *Fœlix*.

355 38 *Fœlix* the second, a *Romaine*, and Son of *Anastasius*, a Cardinall Deacon: was created Pope in the life time of *Liberius*, vnder *Constance* and martired by the faction of the *Arrians*. He held the Sée, one yeare, four months, two daies.

366. 39 *Damasus* a *Portuguize*, sonne of *Antonio*, Cardinall Deacon, vnder *Valentinian*, *Valens*, *Gratian*, *Theodosius* and *Arcadius*. He helde the Sée tenne yeares, three monethes, eleuen daies, *Vacante* xi. dayes. The third Schisme betwéene *Damasus* and *Vrsicinus* then happened, and Synods were held at *Rome*, in *Spaine*, and at *Valentia* in *France*. As also the *Euuomina*, *Entichian*, *Prisciillianists*, *Apollonarian* and *Messalian* Hereticks.

retickes. A generall Counſell at *Conſtantinople*, againſt *Macedonius*.

40 *Siricius* a *Romaine*, ſon of *Tiburtius*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Arcadius* and *Honorius*. He held the Sæ fifteene yeares, eleuen months, fiue and twenty daies, *vacante* rr. daies. Some Synods were then held at *Carthage*: *Heluidius*, *Dorotheus* and *Vigilantius* heretickes, were then. 384

*The fourth age.*

IN this fourth Age liued *Lactantius*, *Euſebius* of *Caſaria*, *S. Athanaſius*, *Iuvencus*, *Sa. Hillarie* Biſhop of *Poictiers*, *Optatus* Byſhop of *Maltha*, *S. Baſile*, *S. Gregory Nazianzene*, *S: Ambroſe*, *S: Hierom*, *S: Iohn Chryſoſtome*, *S: Epiphanius*, *S: Cyrill* of *Ieruſalem*, and *Martine* Archbiſhoppe of *Tours*.

41 *Anaſtaſius* a *Romaine*, ſonne of *Maximus* Cardinal Prieſt vnder *Honorius*: he held the Sæ thræ yeares, ten daies, *vacante* rri. daies. Then were the ſynodes of *Cyprus* and *Tolledo*. 398

42 *Innocentius* a Natiue of *Albania*, or *Scotland*. ſonne of *Innocentius*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Honorius*: he held the Sæ fifteen yeares, two months, fiue & twenty daies, *vacante* rry. daies. The hereticks then were *Arcadius*, *Theodoſius*, and *Pelagius*. 401.

43 *Zoſimus* of *Cappadocia*, ſonne of *Abraham*, Cardinall Prieſt vnder *Theodoſyus* the younger: he held the Sæ one year, iij. months, rii. daies. *vaca.* ri. daies. Then was the firſt ſynod of *Carthage* 416

410 44 *Bonifacius* a *Roman*, Son of *Iocundus*, Cardinall-Priest vnder *Theodosius*: he held the See three yeares, eight months, 9. dayes, *vacante*, nine daies. The Schisme of *Eulalius* Anty-Pope.

423 45 *Celestine* a *Romaine*, Sonne of *Priscus*, Cardinall-Deacon: he held the See eight years, ten months, seauentæn daies: *vacante*, 21. daies. Then was the generall Councell of *Ephesus*, against *Nestorius*, vnder *Theodosius*.

432. 46 *Sixtus* the third, a *Romaine*, and Son of *Sixtus*, Cardinall-Priest vnder *Valentinian*: hee held the See 8. yeares, eighteene daies.

440 47 *Leo* the Great, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Quintian*, Cardinall Arch-deacon vnder *Theodosius*: he held the see one yeare, one month, 13. daies *vacante*, 8. daies. Then was the generall Councell of *Chalcedon*, against *Dioscorus* and *Eutichus*.

461 48 *Hillarius*, borne in *Sardignia*, son of *Crispinus*, Cardinall-deacon vnder the Empire of *Leo*. He held the See 7. years, three months ten daies, *vacante* ten daies.

467 49 *Simplicius*, a Native of *Tiuoli*, sonne of *Castinus*, or *Castorius*, vnder *Leo*, he held the see fifteene yeares, one month, seauen daies, *vacante* 26. daies.

482 50 *Felix* the third and younger, a *Romaine*, son of *Felix* a Priest, Cardinall vnder *Zeno*. He held the see fiue yeares, eleauen monthes, seauentæne daies, *vacante* fiue daies.

51 *Gelasius* an *Affricane*, sonne of *Valuerus* [illegible], vnder the Empire of *Anastasius*: hee held

held the See fiue yeares, eyght months, ſcauenteene daies, *vacante* ſcauen daies.

52 *Anaſtaſius* the ſecond, a *Romaine*, ſonne of *Peter*, vnder *Anaſtaſius*. He held the ſee 1. yeare, ten monthes, twenty foure daies, *vacante* foure daies. 496

*The fift Age.*

IN this fift age liued Saint *Auguſtine*, *Oroſius*, *Caſſianus*, *Eucherius* of *Lyons*, *Cyrillus Alexandrinus*, *Vicentius Lyrinenſis*, *Socrates*, *Sozomenes*, *Theodoret*, *Proſper*, *Petrus Chryſologus*, *Salnianus* Byſhop of *Marſeillis*, *Sidonius Apollinaris*, *Gennadius*, *Petrus Diaconus*, *Boetius*, and many others.

53 *Symmachus*, a Natiue of *Sardignia*, Sonne of *Fortunius*, vnder *Anaſtaſius*: he held the See fifteene yeares, fiue months, twenty two dayes, *vacante* ſcauen daies. Then was the firſt ſchiſme betweene *Symmachus* and *Laurentius*, who afterward was Byſhop of *Nocera*. 498

54 *Hormiſda*, borne in *Terra di Lauoro*, or the Land of *Labour*, Sonne of *Iuſtus*, vnder *Anaſtaſius* and *Iuſtine*: hee helde the ſee nine yeares, eighteene dayes, *vacante* ſix daies. The Synods of *Geronda*, of *Cæſar-Auguſtus*, and of *Conſtantinople*. 514

55 *Iohn*, a Natiue of *Tuſcane*, Sonne of *Conſtantius*, Cardinall-Prieſt vnder *Iuſtine*: Hee dyed in Priſon at *Rauenna*, hauing then 523

bin taken by *Theodoric* king of the *Goths*; he held the See two yeares, eight months, eight & twenty daies, *vacante* one month.

526 56 *Felix* the fourth, a *Samnite* borne, sonne of *Castorius*, Cardinall Priest of *S: Syluester*, vnder *Instine* and *Iustinian*: he held the See foure yeares, two months, three daies, *vacante* thirteen daies. The second synod of *Tolledo*.

530 57 *Boniface* the second, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Sigultus*, Cardinall Priest of *S. Cecily*, vnder *Iustinian*: hee held the See two yeares, two daies, *vacante* two months. The first schisme betweene *Boniface* and *Dioscorus*. Three synodes holden at *Rome*.

530 58 *John* the second, surnamed *Mercurius*, a Romaine, sonne of *Projectus*, Cardinall Priest of *S: Clement* vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See two yeares, foure months, *vacante* six daies.

534 59 *Agapetus* a Romaine, sonne of *Gordianus*, Cardinall Arch-Deacon of the Romaine Church vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See eleuen Months, nineteene daies, *vacante* one month, prin. daies. A synod holden at *Constantinople*.

535 60 *Silverius*, borne in *Terra di Lauoro*, sonne of Pope *Hormisda*, sub-Deacon of the Romaine church vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See one year, fiue monthes, twelue daies, *vacante* fiue dayes. When he was expulsed and banished into the Isle *Pontia*, where he died. The second synode of *Orleans*.

537 61 *Vigilius* a Romaine, sonne of *John* that had bin Consull, Arch-Deacon of the Roman Church vnder

vnder *Iuſtinian*. He held the Sée eighteen years, ſix months, ſixe and twenty daies, *vacante* three months, fiue daies. The ſeauenth Schiſme betweene *Siluerius* and *Vigilius*, and the fifte Generall Counſell of *Conſtantinople* againſt the *Origeniſts*. Alſo the third Synod of *Orleans*.

62 *Pelagius* a Romaine, ſonne of *Iohn Vlcarianus*, Arch-Deacon of the Romaine Church, vnder *Iuſtinian*: he held the Sée ſixe yeares, ten moneths, eight and twentie daies, *vacante*, three months, and ſix and twentie daies. Two Synods at *Paris*. 553

63 *Iohn* the third, *Catelline* a Roman, ſonne of *Anaſtaſyus*, vnder *Iuſtinian* and *Iuſtine*: he held the Sée twelue yeares, eleuen months, ſixe and twenty daies, *vacante* ten monthes, three daies. Then beganne the *Lombardes* to raigne in *Italy*. 561

64 *Bennet Bonoſus*, a Romaine, ſonne of *Boniface*, vnder *Iuſtine*, and *Tyberius Conſtantine*: he held the See foure yeares, one month, eight & twentie daies, *vacante* two months, ten daies. 575

65 *Pelagius* the ſecond, a Romaine, ſonne of *Vinigildus*, vnder *Tiberius* and *Mauritius*: hee held the See ten yeares, two months, ten daies, *vacante* ten months, x. daies. The Patriarchate of *Aquilea* was then transferred to *Grada*. 579

66 *Gregory* ſur-named the Great, a Romaine Monke, and Doctor of the Church, ſon to *Gordianus* the Senator, and *Syluia* a moſt holy woman, Arch-Deacon of the Romaine Church, Legate or Agent for the holy ſee, at *Conſtantinople* towards the Emperor, called alſo the Apoſtle of the Engliſh, 590

lish, vnder *Tyberius*, *Mauritius*, and *Phocas*, he held the see thirteene yeares, fire monthes, tenne daies, *vacante* fiue months, nine daies.

*The sixt Age.*

IN this first Age flourished *Cassiodorus*, *Benet Abbat*, *Fortunatus* Bishop of *Poictiers*, *Euagrius*, *Michaell Syngelus*, *Gregory* of *Tours*, and others.

604 67 *Sabinianus*, borne in *Tuscanie*, son of *Bonus*, Cardinall-deacon, and Legate to the Emperour *Phocas* at *Constantinople*. He held the see, 1. year, 5 months, 9. daies, *vacante* 11. months 26. daies.

605 68 *Boniface* the third, a *Roman*, son of *Iohn*, Cardinall-priest vnder *Phocas*. He held the See nine months, *vacante* one month nine daies.

606 69 *Boniface* the fourth, borne at *Marsia* in *Lombardy*, sonne of *Iohn* a Phisition, Cardinall-Priest vnder *Phocas* and *Heraclius*. Hee held the see fire yeares, eyght months, thirteen daies, *vacante* seauen months, fifteens daies.

613 70 *Deus-dedit*, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Stephen Subdeacon*, cardinall-Priest vnder *Heraclius*. He held the see three yeares, three months, 20 daies, *vacante* one moneth, 16. daies. The Synod of *Auxerre*.

617 71 *Boniface* the fift, borne at *Naples*, sonne of *Iohn*, vnder *Heraclius*. He held the see fiue years, twenty daies, *vacante* thirteene daies.

622 72 *Honorius*, borne in *Terra di Lauoro*, son of *Petronius*, that had been Consul vnder *Heraclius*.

*clius*. Hee helde the See twelue yeares, eleauen months, ſixteene daies, *vacante* one year, ſeauen months, thirteene daies. The foure and fiue ſynods of *Tolledo*.

637

73 *Seuerinus* a *Romaine*, ſon of *Labienus*, vnder *Heraclius*: he held the ſee one year, 2. months *vacante* foure months 29. daies.

639.

74 *Iohn* the fourth, borne in *Dalmatia* ſon of *Venantius* the *Scholaſtick*, cardinall-deacon vnder *Heraclius*: hee helde the ſee one yeare, nine months, nine daies, *vacante* foure monthes 13. daies, the ſixt ſynod of *Toledo*.

647

75 *Theodorus* a *Grecian*, ſonne of *Theodorus* the Bythop, vnder *Conſtantine* and *Conſtans*, he held the ſee ſixe yeares, fiue monthes, 18. dayes, *vacante* one moneth 22. daies. A ſynod at *Rome*, and three in *Affrica*.

647

76 *Martine* a *Tudertine*, ſonne of *Fabritius*, vnder *Conſtans*, by whom he was baniſhed (for the faith) to *Gerſonna* in the Iſle of *Pontus*, where he dyed: he held the ſee ſixe yeares, one month, 26. dayes, *vacante* one yeare, two monthes. A ſynod at *Romo*, another in *Spaine*, againſt the *Monotholites*.

654

77 *Eugenius* a *Roman*, ſonne of *Rufinianus*, vnder *Conſtans*. He held the ſee two yeares, nine months, *vacante* foure monthes fifteene daies: ſynod eight of *Toledo*.

657

78 *Vitalian* a *Latine*, ſonne of *Anaſtaſius*, vnder *Conſtans* and *Conſtantine*: he held the ſee 14. years, ſix months, *vacante* one yeare, one month, 8. daies. A ſynod at *Chaalons*, & of *Toledo* 9. and 10

79 *Ades*.

672 79 *Adeodatus* a Romain Monk, son of *Iouinianus*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Constantine*: hee held the See foure years, two months, v. daies, *vacante* foure months, twenty dayes. Synodes then at *Hertford* in England, *Toledo* the xi. and at *Eracharensys* the third.

676 80. *Domnio* or *Domnus*, a Romaine, sonne of *Mauritius* vnder *Constantine*: he helde the See, fiue yeares, fiue months, ten daies, *vacante* two months, sixteene daies.

679 81 *Agatho*, borne at *Palermo* in *Sicily*, a monk, and sonne of *Pannonius*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Constantine*: he held the Sée two yeares, six moneths, fifteene daies, *vacante* one yeare, fiue monethes. Then was the first generall Counsell of *Constantinople* against the *Monotholites*.

682 82 *Leo* the second, a *Sicillian*, sonne of *Paule*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Constantine*: hee held the Sée one yeare, *vacante* eleuen months, xxi. daies. The xiy. Synod of *Toledo*.

684 83 *Bennet* the second, a *Romaine*, and sonne of *Iohn*, Cardinal Priest vnder *Constantine*: he held the Sée ten months, twelue daies, *vacante*, two months, fifteene daies.

68[illegible] 84 *Iohn* the fift, borne at *Antioch* in *Syria*, son of *Cyriacus*, Cardinall Arch-Deacon vnder *Constantine* and *Iustinian*: he held the Sée one yeare, *vacante* two months, nineteene daies. The seauenth and eight Schisme betweene *Iohn* the fift, and two Anti-popes, *Peter* and *Theodor*.

68[illegible] 85 *Cuno*, or *Conon*, a Natiue in *Thrace*, sonne of *Bennet*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Iustinian*: hee

helue

held the Sée eleuen months, three daies, *vacante*, two months, three and twenty daies.

86 *Sergius* borne at *Antioch*, ſonne of *Tyberius* Cardinall Priest vnder *Iuſtinian*, *Leontius*, and *Tyberius*: he held the Sée thirteene yeares, eight moneths, and three and twenty daies: *vacante* one moneth, 11. daies. The ninth Schiſme, betweene *Sergius*, *Theodor*, and *Paſchall*. Three Synods at *Toledo*. 687

*The ſeauenth Age.*

IN this ſeuenth Age, liued *S. Iſidore* the biſhop, *Georgius Alexandrinus*, *Andoemus* Byſhop of *Rouen*, *Iulianus* Arch-Byſhoppe of *Toledo*, and others.

87 *Iohn* the firſt a *Greeke*, ſonne of *Paturnus*, or *Patronus*, or *Petronius*, vnder *Tyberius*: he helde the Sée three yeares, three months, *vacante* one month, nineteene dayes. A Synod in England. 701.

88 *Iohn* the ſeauenth, a *Greeke* alſo, ſon of *Plato*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Tyberius*, and *Iuſtinian*: he held the Sée two yeares, ſeuen months, ſeuenteene daies, *vacante* three months. 705

89 *Syſinnius*, a Syrian, ſonne of *Iohn*, vnder *Iuſtinian*. Hee helde the Sée 11. daies, *vacante* one month, eighteene daies. 707.

90 *Conſtantine* a *Syrian*, ſonne of *Iohn*, vnder *Iuſtinian* and *Phillippicus*: he held the Sée ſeauen yeares, twenty daies, *vacante* two moneths, ten daies. A Synod holden at *London* in England. 707

91 *Gregory* the ſeconde, a Romaine, ſonne of *Marcellus*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Anaſtaſius*, *Theodoſius*, 716.

*Theodosius* and *Leo*: he held the Sée xvi. yeares, nine months, eleuen daies, *vacante* one moneth. A Synod holden at *Rome*, about Images, & another synod at *Moguntia* or *Mentz* in *Allemaign*.

731. 92 *Gregory* the third, a *Syrian*, son of *Iohn*, Cardinall priest vnder *Leo Isauricus*. Hee helde the Sée, x. yeares, ix. months, xviij. daies, *Vacante* vij daies. A synod at *Augusta*, vnder *Bonifaco*.

741 93 *Zacharias* a *Greeke*, sonne of *Polycronius*, Monke and Cardinall, Priest vnder *Constantine Copronymus*: He held the see, x. years, ij. months, *Vacante* xj. dayes. Synods at *Rome*, & in *France*.

752. 94 *Stephen* the second, Cardinall Priest vnder *Constantine*. He held the Sée three daies.

752 95 *Stephen* the third, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Constantine*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Constantine* and *Leo*. He held the Sée v. yeares, one month, *vacante* one month.

757. 96 *Paule* a Romaine, son of *Constantine*, and brother to *Stephen* the third Pope, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Constantine* and *Leo*. He held the Sée x. yeares, x. months, *Vacante* one month, the tenth schisme betwéen *Paul* and *Theophylact*: synods in *Bauaria*, and in *Allemayne*.

767 97 *Constantine* the second Duke *Nepesius* son, being a Lay-man, was created pope perforce. But he was afterward shut vp in a Monastery, after ý they had pluckt out his eies. He held the Sée, four months, ij. daies *vacante*, ix. dayes. The eleuenth schisme was betwéene him and *Phillip*.

668 98 *Stephen* the fourth, a *Sicilian* Monk, the son of *Olibryus*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Constantine*, and

and *Leo*. He held the See, 4, yeares, 6. months, xiiij. daies, *Vacante*, ix. daies. A ſynode was at *Rome*, to take order for enſuing ſchiſmes, and another ſynod was holden at *Wormes*.

99 *Adrian* a Romain of a moſt noble family, and ſon to *Theodor*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Leo* the fourth, & *Conſtantine* his ſon. He held the See xxiij. years, x. months, xvi. daies. Then was the ſeuenth generall *Nicene* counſell, againſt the *Iconomaches*: and after that *Didier* was taken, then ended the raigne of the *Lombards*. 772

100 *Leo* the third, a *Romaine*, ſon of *Azzupius*, cardinall Priеſt vnder *Conſtantine*, 8. and *Nicephorus*: he held the See twenty yeares firſt, and reſeated xvi. years. 6. months, xviij. daies, *vacante* xvij. daies. In this *Leos* time, was *Charles* the Great, king of *Fraunce*, created Emperor of the Weſt, to whom he fled for refuge. 796

*The eighth Age.*

IN this eight age liued the learned venerable *Bede*, *S. Iohn Damaſcene*, *Germaine* Partriark of *Conſtantinople*, *Paulus Diaconus*, *Vſuardus*, and *Paulinus* of *Aquileia*.

101 *Stephen* the fift, a Roman, ſon of *Inlius Marinus*, cardinall Priеſt vnder *Lewes* the meeke Emperor: he held the See ſix months, foure and twentie daies, *Vacante* xi. daies. 816

102 *Paſchall* a Romaine, Monke and Abbot, ſon of *Maximus Bonoſus*, cardinall Priеſt vnder *Lewes* and *Lotharius*. Hee held the See ſeauen yeares, three moneths, ſeuenteene daies, *vacante* foure daies. 817

103 *Eugē-*

824 103 *Eugenius* the second (sur-named the poores Father) a Romaine, son of *Boëmond*, Cardinall Arch-Priest vnder *Lewes* and *Lotharius*: he held the Sée foure yeares, sixe months, foure & twenty daies, *vacante* three daies. The xij. Schisme betweene *Eugenius* and *Zinzinus*.

827 104 *Valentine* a Romaine, sonne of *Leontius*, Cardinal Arch-Priest vnder the same Emperors, he held the Sée one month, tenne daies, *vacante* three dayes.

827 105 *Gregory* the fourth, a Romaine, sonne of *Iohn*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Lewes* and *Lotharius*. Hee holde the Sée sixteene yeares, *vacante* fifteene daies. Two Synods in *Allemayne*.

844 106 *Sergius* the second, a Romaine, sonne of *Sergius*, Cardinall Arch-priest, vnder *Lotharius*: he held the Sée three years, *vacante* two months, fifteene daies.

847 107 *Leo* the fourth, a Romaine Monke, sonne of *Rodolphus*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Lotharius* and *Lewes* the younger: hee helde the Sée, eight yeares, three months, sixe daies, *vacante* fifteene daies. The Synod of *Mentz* vnder *Rabanus*.

855 108 * *Bennet* the third, a Romaine, sonne of *Peter*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Lewes* the yonger, he held the Sée two yeares, sixe months, ix. daies, *vacante* fifteene daies. The xij. Schisme between *Bennet* and *Anastasius*.

*This is the man that supplies the place for Pope *Ioane*.

858 109 *Nicholas* the Great, sonne of *Theodor*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Lewes*. He held the Sée nine yeares, seauen months, thirteene daies, *vacante* seauen months.

110. *Adrian*

110 *Adrian* the ſecond, a Romaine, ſonne of *Talarus* the Byſhoppe, Cardinall Prieſt vnder *Lewes*. He held the Sée fiue years, nine months, twelue daies: *vacante* twelue daies. The eight generall counſell at *Conſtantinople*, againſt *Photius*. 859.

111 *Iohn* the eight, a Romain, ſonne of *Gundus* Cardinall Arch-Deacon vnder *Lewes* the younger, *Charles* the Balde, *Lewes* the Stammerer, and *Charles le Gros*. He helde the Sée x. yeares, two daies, *vacante* two daies. 872

112 *Martine* the ſecond, otherwiſe called *Marine*, borne in *Tuſcane*, ſonne of *Palumbas*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Charles le Gros*: He helde the Sée one yeare, fiue months. 881.

113 *Adrian* the third, a *Romaine*, otherwiſe called *Agapetus*, ſonne of *Bennet*, vnder *Charles le Gros*: He helde the Sée, two yeares, two monethes, *vacante* xij. daies. 884

114 *Stephen* the firſt, otherwiſe called *Baſile*, ſon of *Adrian*, vnder *Charles le Gros* and *Arnould*: he held the Sée fiue yeares, eleuen dayes, *vacante* fiue dayes. A Synod at *Cullen*. 885.

115 *Formoſus* of *Portua*, ſonne to *Leo*, Byſhop of *Portua*, vnder *Arnould*. He helde the Sée, fiue yeares, fiue months, *Vacante* two months. This is the firſt man, that (of a Byſhoppe) was made Pope. The xiiij. Schiſme, betweene *Formoſus* and *Sergius* the third, who afterward was Pope. 891

116 *Boniface* the firſt, a Romaine, ſonne of *Adrian*, byſhop vnder *Arnould*, or *Arnulphus* Emperor: He helde the Sée, fiue and twenty daies,

*Vacante* fourteene daies.

896 117 *Stephen* the seuenth, a *Romaine*, Sonne of *Iohn* the Priest, Byshoppe of *Anagnia*, vnder *Arnulphus*. He held the See one yeare, 3. months, *vacante* 3. daies. A synod at *Tiburtium*.

897 118 *Romanus* borne in *Tuscany*, Son of *Constantine*, who was Brother to *Martine* the second Pope, vnder *Arnulphus*: he held the see three daies, *vacante* eight daies.

897 119 *Theodorus* the second, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Photius*, vnder the Empyre of *Arnulphus*: he held the see twenty daies, *vacante* eleauen daies.

897. 120 *Iohn* the ninth, a *Tiburtine* Monke, son of *Rempoaldus*, Deacon of the Romain Church, vnder *Arnulphus*, and during the Schisme of *Sergius*. He helde the See two yeares, fifteene dayes, *vacante* nine daies.

## *The ninth Age.*

IN this ninth Age liued *Aymonius Monachus*, *Theophilact*, *Rabanus Maurus*, *Anſegiſius*, & *Anaſtaſius*.

899 121 *Bennet* the fourth, a Romaine, sonne of *Mammolus*, vnder *Lewes* the fourth, son of *Arnulphus*: he held the see three yeers, four months, *Vacante* six daies.

903 122 *Leo* the fift, borne at *Ardea*; he forsooke the Papacy, and became a Monke, vnder *Lewes* the fourth. He held the See one moneth, tenne daies.

123 *Chriſto-*

123 *Chriſtopher*, a *Romaine*, ſonne of *Leo*, Cardinall-Prieſt vnder *Lewes* the fourth. Hee gaue ouer his dignity to *Sergius* the third, & made himſelfe a Monk. He held the ſee, ſeuen months. The xv. Schiſme betweene *Leo* the fift, *Chriſtopher* and *Sergius* the third. 903

124 *Sergius* the thirde, a *Romaine*, Sonne of *Bennet*, one of the Earles of *Tuſculum*, Cardinall-Prieſt vnder *Lewes* the fourth. Hee held the ſee ſeauen yeares, foure monthes, ſixe daies, *vacante* vij. daies. Two Synods at *Rheimes*. 903

125 *Anaſtaſius* the thirde, a *Roman*, Son of *Lucian*, vnder the Empire of *Conrade*, Emperor. He held the ſee two yeares, *vacante* two daies. 911.

126 *Lando*, a *Sabine* borne, ſonne of *Tiamus*, vnder *Conrade*. He held the See ſix months, xvi. daies, *Vacante* xvi. daies. 913

127 *Iohn* the tenth of *Rauenna*, ſonne of *Iohn*: Of Byſhop of *Bologna*, he was made Arch-Byſhop of *Rauenna*, vnder *Conrade* and *Henry*, ſurnamed the Fowler, Emperors: hee helde the ſee, thirteene yeares, two monethes, and thirteene dayes. 914

128 *Leo* the ſixt, a *Romaine*, ſonne of *Chriſtopher*, vnder the fore-named *Henry*: he helde the See ſeauen moneths, fifteene daies, *vacante* one month. 928

129 *Stephen* the eight, a *Romaine*, Sonne of *Teudemunde*, vnder *Henry*: hee helde the See, two yeares, and one Moneth, *vacante* tenne daies. 928

130 *Iohn* the xi. a Romain, the natural ſon of 930

*Sergius*, third Pope, one of the Earles of *Tusculum*, vnder *Henry*: He held the Sée, four years, ten months fifténe daies, *vacante* twelue daies.

935 131 *Leo*, the seauenth, a Romaine, vnder *Otho* the Great, who was the first *Allemayne* Emperor. He held the Sée three yeares, six moneths, ten daies, *vacante* three daies.

939 132 *Stephen* the ninth a Romaine, vnder the Empire of *Otho*: he holde the Sée three yeares, foure moneths, twelue daies, *vacante* ten daies.

942 133 *Martine* the third, whom some others doo tearme *Marine* the seconde, a Romaine, vnder *Otho*. Hee holde the Sée three yeares, foure moneths, twelue dayes, *Vacante* twelue daies: A Synod at *Bononie*.

946. 134 *Agapetus* the second, a Romain, vnder *Otho*: he held the Sée seauen yeares, nine months, ten daies. *vacante* twelue daies. Then was the *Ingelheimensian* Synod.

956 135 *Iohn* the twelfth, a Romaine, called also *Octauian*, the sonne of *Albericus* a Romaine Prince, & an Earle of *Tusculum*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Otho*: hauing was deposed in a Synod at *Rome*: he held the Sée ir. years, three months fiue daies, *vacante* one day.

963 136 *Leo*, a Romaine sonne of *Iohn*, vnder *Otho*: hee holde the Sée, one yeare, foure months. The viii. Schisme after *Iohn* the 12. betwéen *Leo* the 8. and *Bennet* the 5.

964 137 *Bennet* the fift, a Romain Cardinall Deacon, was elected in the schisme after the death of *Iohn* the twelfth: he forsoke the Papacy, by constraint,

ſtraint, and was exiled to *Hamborough* in *Saxony*, where he died: he held the Sæ one yeare, ſixe monthes.

138 *Iohn* the xiij. a Romaine, ſonne of *Iohn* the Byſhop: he was Byſhoppe of *Naruia*, vnder *Otho*: He held the Sæ ſix years, eleuen months, fiue daies, *vacante* xiij. dayes. 965

139 *Domnus* the ſecond, *Donus*, or *Domnio*, a Roman vnder *Otho*: hee held the Sæ one yeare, *vacante* two daies. 973

140 *Bennet* the ſixt, a Roman, ſonne of *Hildebrand*, vnder *Otho*: he held the ſee eight years, ſix months, *vacante* fiue daies. 972

141 *Boniface* the ſeauenth, a Romaine, ſonne of *Franco-Ferrutius*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Otho* the ſecond: he held the Sæ ſeauen moneths, fiue daies, *vacante* twenty daies. The ſeauentæenth Schiſme betwæn *Boniface* the 7. and *Bennet* the 7. 974.

142 *Bennet* the ſeauenth, a Romaine, ſonne of *Deus-dedit* an Earle of *Tuſculum*, Byſhoppe of *Sutrium*, vnder *Otho* the ſecond: he held the Sæ eight yeares, ſix months, *Vacante*, fiue dayes. 975

143 *Iohn* the fourtæenth, called alſo *Peter*, born in *Pauia*, and Byſhop of the place where he was borne; vnder *Otho* the third: he helde the See, thræ months. 984

144 *Iohn* the xv. a Romaine, ſon of *Leo* Prieſt vnder *Otho* the third: hee held the See eight moneths, *vacante* ſeauen daies. 985

145 *Iohn* xvi. a Romain, ſonne of *Robert*, vnder *Otho* the third: he helde the See ten yeares, 995

six months, ten daies: *vacante* sixe dayes.

995 146 *Gregory* the fift, a *Saxon Allemayne*, called *Bruno*, the son of *Otho*, vnder *Otho* 3: he held the see two yeares, fiue moneths, ten daies. The xviij. Schisme, betweene this *Gregory*, and *Iohn* the xvij. This is he, in whose time the Princes Electors were first created in *Allemaign* or *Germany*.

998 147 *Sylvester* the second, a Frenchman born in *Aquitain*, called *Gerebert*, Monk of S. *Floure*, Abbot of *Bobie*, of Arch-bishoppe of *Rheimes*, he was made Arch-bishop of *Rauenna*, a very great Philosopher, vnder *Otho* 3. He held the see, foure yeares, 1. month, 1. daies, *vacante* xviij. daies.

1003 148 *Iohn* the xvij. a Romaine, called *Sicco*, of very meane descent, vnder *Henry* the second. He held the See ten months, *vacante* twenty daies.

## *The tenth Age.*

IN this tenth Age liued *Ado* of *Vienna*, *Odo* Abbat of *Clugnie*, *Suidas*, *Luitprandius*, *Regino*, and *Wirichinde*.

1008 149 *Iohn* the xviij. a Romaine, called *Fasanus* or *Fanassius*, vnder *Henry* the second: he held the See foure monthes, twenty daies, *Vacante* nineteene dayes. A great synod holden in *Allemaign*.

1009 150 *Sergius* the fourth, a *Romain*, called *Peter*, the sonne of *Martine*: he held the See, two yeares, and fifteene daies, *Sede vacante* eyght dayes.

1012 151 *Bennet* the eight, a Roman, son of *Grego-*

*rie*

*gory* Earle of *Tuſculum* vnder *Henry*. Hee helde the See, eleuen yeares, one moneth, thirteene dayes. The ninetéene Schiſme, betweene *Bennet*, and one whoſe name is not truely known.

152 *Iohn* the rix, a *Romaine*, and Earl of *Tuſculum*, ſonne to *Gregory*, and Brother to *Bennet* the eight. Pope, Byſhoppe of *Portua*: hee helde the ſee foure yeares, foure months, *vacante* rix. daies. 1034

153 *Bennet* the ninth, a *Roman*, Earl of *Tuſculum*, called *Theophilact*, Sonne of *Albericus*, Brother to *Bennet* the 8, and *Iohn* the rix. Popes. Cardinal Deacon vnder *Conrado* & *Henry* 3. He held the See, rix. yeares, foure moneths, nine dayes. The xx. Schiſme betweene him and *Iohn* the 20. called *Syluester* the third. 1032.

154 *Iohn* 20. called *Silueſter* the 3. a *Romain*, ſon of *Laurentius* Byſhop of *Sabina*, vnder *Henry* 3. He held the ſee one month, rix. daies. 1045

155 *Gregory* the firſt, a Romain, called, *Iohn Gratian*, ſonne of *Peter Leo*, Arch-Prieſt vnder *Henry* 3. he held the See two yeares, vj. months. 1045

156 *Clement* the 2. a *Saxon Allemayn* or *Germaine*, called *Suidegerus*, Byſhop of *Bemburg*, vnder *Henry* 3. He helde the See, nine monthes. *vacante* nine moneths. 1047

157 *Damaſus* 2. of *Bauaria* in *Allemaign*, called *Pope Bagniarius*, byſhoppe of *Breſcia*: After that *Damaſus* the ſecond, and *Bennet* the ninth, had beene deposed, hee helde the See, fire moneths, according as hee had helde it nine moneths, and fiftéen daies, after *Clement* the ſecond. 1048

he helde the See three and twenty daies, *vacante* six months.

1049 158 *Leo* the ninth, an *Allemayne*, called *Bruno*, Count of *Hasburg*, otherwise termed *Egghisem*, sonne to *Hugh* byshop of *Toul*, vnder *Henrie* the third, and was created at *Frusina*: hee helde the See fiue yeares, two months, six daies, *vacante* xi. months, xxvi. daies.

1055 159 *Victor* the second of *Swethen*, called *Gebhard* Count of *Gaba*, sonne of *Arduigus*, byshop of *Eistat*, Counsellor to *Henry* the third, and his Kinsman, as also to *Henry* the fourth his sonne, and was created at *Mentz*: he held the See two yeares, three months, foure daies, *vacante* foure daies.

1057 160 *Stephen* the tenth, borne in *Lorraine*, called *Fredericke*, sonne to *Gozzelon* Duke of *Lorrain*, Cardinal Arch-Deacon vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See seauen moneths eighteene daies, *vacante* thirteene dayes: The one and twentith Schisme betweene him, and *Bennet* the tenth.

1058 161 *Bennet* the tenth, called *Iohn Mintius*, son to *Guy* Count of *Tusculum*, Byshop of *Velitræ*, vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See nine moneths, twentie dayes.

1058 162 *Nicholas* the second of *Sauoy*, called *Gerard* the *Burgundian*, Byshop of *Florence*, vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See three yeares, six moneths, six and twenty daies, *vacante* xv. dayes.

1061 163 *Alexander* the seconde, a *Milanois*, called *Anselme de Badagio*, son of *Anselme* a Chanon Reguler, Byshoppe of *Luca* in *Tuscanie*, vnder

*Henry*

*Henry* the fourth: he held the Sée eleuen yeares, ſix months. The xxy. Schiſme betwéen him and *Honorius* the ſecond.

164 *Gregory* the ſeauenth, a *Tuſcane* of *Soana*, called *Hildebrand*, one of the *Pitilian* Countes, ſonne to *Bonicius* Priour of *Cluny*, Abbot of S. *Paule* at *Rome*, Cardinall Arch-Deacon, vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the Sée twelue yeares, one month, three daies, *vacante* one yeare, foure months, ſeauen and twenty daies. The three & twenty Schiſme, betweene him, and *Clement* the third, who was an Antipope, in the times of *Victor* the third, *Vrban* the ſecond, and *Paſchal* the ſecond. And this Schiſme continued for longe time. 1073

165 *Victor* the third of *Beneuentum*, called *Didier*, ſonne to the Prince of *Beneuentum*, a Monk of Mount *Caſſina*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Henry* the fourth: hee helde the Sée one yeare, foure months, *vacante* fiue months. 1086

165 *Vrbane* the ſecond, a *Frenchman*, borne at *Chaſtillon* in the Dioceſſe of *Rheimes*, called *Otho* the ſon of *Milo*, a Canon Reguler of *Laterane*, Monke of *Cluny*, and Byſhoppe of *Oſtia*; vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the Sée twelue yeares, foure moneths, nineteene daies, *vacante* thirteen daies. 1088

*The eleuenth age.*

IN this eleuenth Age liued *Burchardus Fulbertus*, Byſhoppe of *Chartres*, *Petrus Damianus*, *Lanfran-*

*Lanfrancus*, *S. Anselme*, *Yues* Bishop of *Chartres* and *Bruno*, *&c.*

1097 167 *Paschall* the second, a *Tuscane* of *Bleda*, called *Rainerius*, sonne of *Crescentius*, Monke of *Cluny*, Abbot of *S. Laurence* and *S. Stephen* without Rome, Priest Cardinall vnder *Henry* the 4. and *Henry* the fift: hee held the See xviij. yeares, sir months, seuen dayes, *vacante* three daies. *Albert Atellan*, *Theodorick* a Romaine, & *Sylvester* Anti-popes vnder *Paschall* 2. who caused the body of *Clement* 3. to be digged vp, and after burned which had bin buried at *Rauenna*.

1118 168 *Gelasius* 2. a *Caietane*, called *Iohn*, sonne to *Crescentius* Monke of Mount *Cassina*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Henry* the fift. He held the see, one yeare, *vacante* two dayes. The 24 Schisme betweene him and *Gregory* the eight, a Spaniard, called *Maurice Bonodin*.

1119 169 *Calixtus* 2. a *Burgundian*, called *Milo*, otherwise *Guy*, son to *William* Count of *Burgundie*, Arch-bishop of *Vienna* vnder *Henry* the fift: he held the See fiue years, ten months, six daies. *vacante* eight yeares. The generall counsaile of *Laterane*, against these Anti-popes, wherat were present (almost) a thousand Prelates.

1124 170 *Honorius* 2. a *Bolognian*, called *Lambert de Fagnano*, Chanon Reguler of *Laterane*, Cardinall bishop of *Ostia*, vnder *Henry* and *Lotharius*, *Saxons* and Emperors. He held the See fiue yeares, two monthes, *vacante*, eight dayes. The 25. Schisme betweene him and *Celestine* the second.

171 *Inno-*

171 *Innocentius* 2. a *Romaine*, ſonne of *Iohn Guidon*, Chanon Reguler of *Laterane*, the firſt of the Cardinal Deacons vnder *Lotharius* of *Saxony* and *Conrade*. He held the See, fourteen years, ſeauen months, thirteene daies. The 26. ſchiſme betweene him and two Anti-Popes, *Anacletus* the ſecond and *Victor* the fourth. The ſecond generall counſell of *Laterane*, whereun aſſiſted well neare a thouſand byſhops. 1130

172 *Celeſtine* the 2. a *Tuſcane*, called *Guy de Caſtello*, cardinall-deacon, and afterward Cardinall prieſt vnder *Conrade*. He held the See, fiue months, and thirteene daies, *vacante* thirteene daies. 1143

173 *Lucius* the ſecond, a *Bolognian*, called *Gerard*, *Cecianimicus*, ſonne of *Albert*, Chanon Reguler, Cardinall Prieſt, and Chancellour to the Apoſtolique See vnder *Conrade*: he held the ſee eleuen months, and foure dayes, *vacante* two daies. 1144

174 *Eugenius* the thyrd, of *Piſa*, called *Peter Bernard*, a *Ciſteaux* Monke, Scholler to *S. Bernard*, Abbot of *S. Vincent*, and *S. Anaſtaſius* at *Rome*, vnder *Conrade* and *Fredericke Barbaroſſa* Emperors. He held the See, eight yeares, foure months, 11. dayes, *vacante* two dayes. 1145

175 *Anaſtaſius* the fourth, a Romain, called *Conrade* of *Suburra*, ſonne of *Bennet*, Canon Reguler, Abbot and Cardinall, byſhoppe of *Sabina*, vnder *Fredericke Barbaroſſa*: he helde the See, one yeare, foure months, four and twenty daies, *vacante* one day. 1153

176 *Adrian*

1154 176 *Adrian* the fourth, an Englishman, called *Nicholas Break-speare*, sonne of *Robert* a Monk, Chanon Reguler and Abbot, Cardinall Bishop of *Alba*, vnder *Barbaroſſa*: He helde the Sæ iiij. yeares, ten months, *vacante* three daies.

1159. 177 *Alexander* the thirde, borne at *Sienna* in *Tuſcanie*, called *Rowland Bondinelli*, ſon of *Ranutius*, Cardinall Deacon, and afterwarde Cardinall Prieſte, and Chancellour of the *Romaine* church, vnder *Barbaroſſa*: hee helde the Sæ xxi. yeares, nineteene daies, *vacante*, foureteene daies. The third generall counſell of *Laterane*. The ſeauen and twenty Schiſme, beeing moſt great, during which time, againſt *Alexander* was created *Victor* the fourth, nexte *Paſchall* the third, then *Calixtus* the thirde, and *Innocentius* the third, who (by conſtraint) renounced the Papacie.

1181 178 *Lucius* the third, a *Tuſcane* of *Luca*, called *Vbaldus Allucingolus*, ſonne of *Bonagiunta*, Cardinal Prieſt, and afterward Biſhop of *Oſtia*, and of *Velitræ*, vnder *Barbaroſſa*: he held the Sæ foure yeares, two months, eighteene daies, *vacante* twelue daies.

1185 179 *Vrbane* the third, borne in *Milaine*, called *Lambert Cribell*, ſonne of *Iohn*, Cardinall Prieſt and Arch-Biſhop of *Millaine*, vnder *Barbaroſſa*: hee held the Sæ one yeare, ten months, fifteene daies, *vacante* eleuen daies.

1187 180 *Gregory* the eight, of *Beneuentum*, called, *Albert Spanachio*, otherwiſe of *Mora* Cardinall Deacon, and afterwardo Cardinall Prieſt, and

Chan-

Chancellor to the holy See, vnder *Barbaroſſa*: hee held the See one month, ſeauen and twenty daies, *vacante* xx. daies.

181 *Clement* the third, a Romain, called *Paule* the Scholler, ſonne of *Iohn*, Cardinall of *Palæſtrina*, vnder *Barbaroſſa*: he held the See three yeares, fiue months, *vacante* eight months. 1188

182 *Celeſtine* the third, a *Romaine*, called *Haicinthus Bobo*, ſonne of *Peter* Cardinal Deacon vnder *Henry* the firſt: he held the See ſix yeares, ſeauen months, eleuen daies. 1191

*The twelfth Age.*

IN this twelfth Age liued *Sigebert*, *Zonarus*, *Cedrenus*, *Rupertus*, *Sa. Bernard*, *Hugo de S. Victor*, *Peter Lombard*, *Peter Comeſtor*, *Euthimius*, *Nicetas Coniates*, and diuers others.

183 *Innocentius* the third, of *Anagnia*, called *Lotharius*, one of the Counts of *Signia*, ſonne of *Tranſimund*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Henry* the firſt, *Otho* the fourth, and *Fredericke* the ſeconde Emperors: he held the See eighteen yeares, vij. months, ſixteene daies, *vacante* one day: The 4. generall counſell of *Laterane*, for reformation of the church, where a thouſand Prelates were preſent. 1198

184 *Honorius* the third, a *Romaine*, called *Cencius Sabellus*, ſonne of *Amerie*, Cardinal Deacon, Chamberlaine of the church, and afterward Cardinall Prieſt vnder *Fredericke* the ſecond: he held the See ten yeares, ſeauen moneths, thirteene daies. 1216

daies, *vacante* one day.

1227. 185 *Gregory* the ninth of *Anagnia*, called *Hugolin*, one of the Counts of *Signia*: of a Cardinal Deacon he was made cardinall Bishop of *Ostia* vnder *Fredericke* the second: he held the see fourteene yeares, three months, *vacante* one month, one day.

1241. 186 *Celestine* the fourth, a *Milanois*, cald *Gaulfridus Castellio*, of Cardinall-Priest, was made Bishop of *Sabina* vnder *Frederick* 2. He held the see eightene daies, *vacante* one yeare, nine moneths.

1243 187 *Innocentius* the fourth, borne in *Genewaie*, called *Sinibaldus de Fiesca*, a Count of *Lauinum*, sonne of *Otho*, Vice-chancellor, was made Cardinall-Priest vnder *Fredericke* the seconde, *Conrade* the fourth, *Henry* the fourth, & *William* Emperors. He held the Sée vi. yeares, six months, vii, daies, *Vacante* three daies. The generall counsell of *Lyons*, vnder *Frederick* the second.

1254 188 *Alexander* the fourth of *Anagnia*, called *Rainald*, one of the Counts of *Signia*, sonne of *Girard Retraent*, otherwise called *Phillip*, of Cardinall-deacon was made bishop of *Ostia*, & Deane of the Cardinal Bishops, vnder *William*, *Richard* and *Alphonsus*. He held the Sée sire yeares, fiue monthes, fiue daies, *vacante* three months, four daies.

1261 189 *Vrbane* the fourth, a French-man of *Troy* in *Champaigne*, called *Iacques Pantaleon*, Patriarcke of *Ierusalem*, vnder *Richard* and *Alphonsus*: he held the See three yeares, one month, 4. daies,

daies, *vacante* fiue monthes.

190 *Frances*, by ſome called *Clement*, of *Narbona*, called alſo *Guy* the Groſſe, ſonne of *Fulcodius*, Arch-byſhop of *Narbona*, and cardinall Biſhop of *Sabina*, vnder *Richard* and *Alphonſus*: he held the ſee fiue yeares, vi. daies, *vacante*, two yeares, nine months. 1265.

191 *Gregory* the tenth of *Placentia*, called *Theobald* Vicount, Arch-byſhoppe of *Leige* vnder *Rodolphus*: He held the See foure yeares, two moneths, ten daies, *Vacante* nine daies. The ſecond generall Counſel of *Lyons*, for recouery of the Holy Land. 1271

192 *Innocentius* the fift, a *Burgundian*, called *F. Peter* of *Tarentaſe*, of the Order of the preaching Fryers, of Arch-byſhoppe of *Lyons*, he was made Byſhop Cardinall of *Oſtia*, and great Penetentiarie, vnder *Rodolphus*. He held the See ſix months, two daies, *Vacante*, nine daies. 1276.

193 *Adrian* the fift of *Genes*, called *Othobon*, one of the Counts of *Lauinum*, ſonne of *Thediſius*, Brother to Pope *Innocent* the fourth, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Rodolphus*: Hee held the See one month, nine daies, *vacante* eight and twenty daies. 1276

194 *Iohn* the one and twentith, a *Portugais* of *Liſbone*, called *M. Iohn Peter Iuliani*, byſhop Cardinall of *Tuſculanum*, vnder *Rodolphus*. He held the ſee eight months, *vacante* ſixe moneths, ſeauen daies. 1276

195 *Nicholas* the third, a *Roman*, called *Iohn* 1277

*Caie-*

*Caietane de Vrſini*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Rodolphus*: he held the See three yeares, eight moneths, fiftecne daies, *vacante* fiue moneths, 11. dayes.

1281 196 *Martine* the fourth, borne in *Tours*, called *Simon de Brie*. Cardinall Priest vnder *Rodolphus*: hee helde the See, foure yeares, one month, *vacante* three daies.

197 *Honorius* the fourth, a Romaine, called, *Giacomo Sabella*, sonne of *Luke*, first, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Rodolphus*. He held the See two yeares, one day *vacante* ten months.

1288. 198 *Nicholas* the fourth, a Natiue of *Asculum*, called *F. Hierom*; a generall Minister of the Friars Minors: he was made Cardinall Priest, afterward the *Prænestine* Bishop, vnder *Rodolphus*, and *Adolphus*. He held the See foure years, one month, eight daies: *vacante* two yeares, 3. moneths, two daies.

1294 199 *Celestine* the fift, borne in *Isernia*, called *F. Peter de Morone*, sonne of *Anglerius*, vnder *Adolphus*: he voluntarily forsoke the Popedom, and was the beginner of the *Celestines* order: he held the See fiue months, seauen dayes, *vacante* ten daies.

1294 200 *Boniface* the eight, of *Anagnia*, called *Benet Caietane*, Sonne of *Luitfroy*, who was borne in *Spaine*, Cardinall Deacon, afterward Cardinall Priest, vnder *Adolphus* and *Albertus*. Hee instituted the Jubilæ of an hundred yeares, and did first celebrate it, in the yeare 1300. He held the see viii. years, nine months, seuenteen, daies,

*vacante*

*vacante* ten daies.

*The thirteenth Age.*

IN this thirteenth Age liued S. Faunces, S. Dominicke, Albertus Magnus, Mathew Paris, Thomas Aquinas, S. Bonauenture, Cabaſilas, Henry of Segusium, Cardinall of Oſtia, Nicholas de Lyra, Accurſius and others.

201 Bennet the eleauenth, a Treuiſane, called F. Nicholas Bocaſino: of Generall Miniſter of the Preachers Order, was made Cardinall Priest, and afterward Byſhop of Oſtia, vnder the Emperor Albertus. He held the See, eyght moneths, ſeauenteene dayes, *vacante* one yeare, one month. 1303

202 Clement the fift, a French-man in Gaſcoigne of Burdeaux, called Raymond Goth, ſon of Bertrand: of Byſhop of Cominges, he became Arch-Biſhop of Burdeaux, vnder Albertus and Henry the ſeauenth: he held the See eight years, ten months, fiftæne dayes, *vacante* two yeares, thræ months, ſeauentæne dayes. The generall Counſell of Vienna in France, for reformation of the Church. 1304

203 Iohn the xxij. a Frenchman of Cahors, called Iacques d'Oſſa, Sonne of Arnaulde, Cardinall Biſhop of Portua, vnder Lewes the fourth of Bauaria: he held the See ninetæne years, four months, *vacante* ſixtæne daies. The 28. Schiſm betweene him and Nicholas the fift. 1316

204 Bennet the xij. a Frenchman of Toloſa, 1334

called F. Iacques Forneen de Sauardun, a Ciſteaux Monke, a Diuine, Byſhoppe of Mirepoix, and Cardinall-Prieſte vnder Lewes the fourth, He helde the See ſeauen yeares, three monethes, ſeauenteene dayes, *vacante* fifteen dayes.

1342 205 Clement the firt, a French-man, borne in Lymoſine, called F. Peter Monſtrie, ſon of Roger, Monke of Maumont, a Diuine, Abbot of Feſcamp, Arch-Byſhop of Arles, afterwarde of Sens, and laſtly of Rouen, cardinal Prieſt vnder Lewes the fourth. He celebrated the ſecond Iubilee, in the fiftith year, 1350. And held the See, eightéene yeares, ſixe moneths, eightéene daies. *vacante* ten daies.

1352 206 Innocent the firt, a French-man of Lymoſine, called Stephen d'Albert, Biſhoppe of Clermont, cardinall Prieſt, after made byſhop of Oſtia, and great Penetentiary vnder Charls the fourth: he held the See nine yeares, eight moneths, and ſixe daies, *vacante* one yeare, fiue moneths.

1362 207 Vrbane the fift, a French-man of Lymoſine, likelwiſe, called F. Guillaume de Griſac, ſon of Grimauld, Monke and Abbot of S. Victor de Marſeillis, vnder Charles the fourth: hee helde the See eleauen yeares, eight months, *vacante* ſeauenteene dayes.

1370 208 Gregory the eleuenth, a French-man of Lymoſine, called Peter, Earle of Beau-fort. He was made Cardinall Deacon by Clement the firt, Pope and his Vnckle. He returned to Rome and brought the See thither agayne, which h[ad] bin

bin at Auignon for the ſpace of ſeaucnty yeares. And becauſe the Romaines ſtode in ſome doubt, leaſt the Sée might againe bee tranſerred out of Rome, after the decease of this Gregory, the eleuenth, they toke especiall order, that not anye French Cardinall ſhoulde afterwards bee elected Pope: which procured the moſt pernicious ſchiſm that euer had bin in the Churche, and continued for the ſpace of fifty yeares, beginning with Clement, called the ſeauenth: he held the Sée ſeauen yeares, two months, ſeauen & twenty daies, *vacante* eleuen daies.

209 Vrbane the ſixte, a Neapolitane, called Bartholomew Prignano, Arch-byſhop of Acherontia, and afterwarde of Carre, vnder Wenceſlaus. Hee helde the Sée, eleauen yeares, eyght months, *vacante* ſeauenteene dayes. The nins and twentith Schiſme, betweene him and Clement, called the ſeauenth, who was a Frenchman of Geneua, named Robert, one of ý Counts of Geneua, Byſhop of Cambray. This Vrbane the ſixt, inſtituted the Iubilee of ſixe and thirtie yeares. 1378

210 Boniface the ninth, a Neapolitane, called Peter, or Perin Tomacelli, of Cardinall deacon, became Cardinall Prieſt, vnder Wenceſlaus, and Robert Emperors. In the yeare 1390. He celebrated the third Iubilee inſtituted by his predeceſſor: and in the yeare 1400. the fourth Iubilee, after the ancient manner. In his time were two Popes, at Auignon, Clement, called the ſeuenth, and Bennet the thirteenth: he held the Sée 1389

eleauen yeares, eight months, vacante fifteene daies.

## The fourteenth age.

IN this foureténth age, liued William de Nangis, Nicephorus, Bartolus Palanudes, Iohannes Andreas, Petrarche, Franciſcus Maronis, deuiſer of the Sorbonne, William of Auxere, and others.

1404. 211 Innocentius 7. of Sulmona, called Coſmatus Melioratus; of Arch-byſhop of Rauenna, and of Biſhop of Bolognia, he became Cardinal Prieſt, and Chamberlaine of the Church, vnder Robert Emperour: He held the ſæ two yeares, twenty two dayes, vacante twenty thræ daies. Bennet the thirtænth was (in his time) Pope at Auignion.

1406. 212 Gregory the twelfth, a Venetian borne, called Angelo Corrario, Patriarch of Conſtantinople, and Cardinall-prieſt vnder Robert and Sigiſmond: He helde the ſæ two yeares, ſeauen months, fiue daies, vacante ten daies. Then was the Councell of Piſa, for auoiding of Schiſmes, where Gregory the twelfth, and Bennet the thirtænth, were both depoſed.

1409. 213 Alexander the fift, of Creete or Candie, called Peter Philargo, of the Fryers-minors order, a Diuine, Arch-biſhop of Millaine, and Cardinall-Prieſt vnder Robert: hee was created in the Councell at Piſa (Bennet the thirtænth beeing

ing then Pope at Auignion.) And helde the Sée tenne monthes, eyght dayes, vacante twelue daies.

214 Iohn the twenty thrée, a Neapolitane, called Balthazar Coſſa, Cardinall-Deacon, vnder Sigiſmond. He held the Sée fiue yeares, fiftéene dayes, vacante two yeares. The generall Councell was then at Conſtance, to take away all Schiſmes: where were depoſed Iohn the 23. and Bennet the thirtænth again. Bennet would not obey the Councell, but with-drew himſelfe into Spaine, to Paniſcola: and in the ſame generall Councel, Gregory the twelfth (by his Atturney) renounced the Papacy. 1410.

215 Martine the fift, a Romaine, called Otho Colonna, Sonne of Agapetus, Cardinall Deacon: he was elected Pope in the Councell of Conſtance, vnder Sigiſmond: he held the ſée fouretéene yeares, thrée monthes, vacante two dayes. In his time, after the deceaſe of Bennet the thirtænth, Clement, called the eyght, was created as Anty-pope at Paniſcola: But he forſoke the Papacy, in the yeare 1428. and (by that meanes) the twenty nine ſchiſme ceaſed, which had continued fifty yeares, or thereabout. This Martine the fift, in the year 1425. celebrated the fift Iubilie. 1417.

216 Eugenius the fourth, a Venetian, called Gabriell Condelmer, Sonne of Angelus, a Celeſtine Chanon, Byſhoppe of Sienna, Cardynall-Prieſt vnder Sigiſmond, Albert, and Fredericke the third. This manne helde 1431.

the See fiftéene yeares, eleauen months, one and twenty daies, *vacante* twelue daies. The counsell of Basile was then, where Eugenius was deposed: but he vnwilling to obey, caused the generall Counsell of Ferrara to bee assembled, which Counsell ended at Florence, for reduction of the Greeke Church. The 30. Schisme betwéen Eugenius 4: and Felix the fift, called Amades, sometime Duke of Sauoy, who was elected in the Counsell of Basil, 1437. and was Pope 11. yeares, fiue months. In the end, for good of the Church, he forsoke the Papacy, and continued Cardinal byshop of Sabina, and Legate in Germany.

1447 217 Nicholas a Native of Luna, called Thomas de Sarzana, or Lucana, sonne of Bartholomew a Physitian, Doctor in the Arts and Diuinity, of Byth of Bologna, was made Cardinal Priest vnder Frederick the third: hee held the See eight yeares, nineteene dayes, *Vacante* four daies. In the yeare 1450. he celebrated the first Iubilee, and the Schism ceased by Felix the 5. renouncing the Papacy.

1455 218 Calixtus 3. a Spaniard of Valentia, called Alphonso Borgia, sonne of John: of byshoppe of Valentia, became Cardinall Priest vnder Frederick the third: hee held the See three yeares 3. months, and sixteene daies, *vacante* seauenteene daies.

1458 219 Pius the seconde, borne in Sienna, called Eneas Syluius Picolhomini, sonne of Syluius: of byshop of Sienna, was Cardinal Deacon, afterward Cardinal Priest vnder Frederick the third:

he

he held the See fiue yeares, eleuen months, xxvi. daies, *vacante* xvi. daies.

220 Paule the ſecond, a Venetian, called Peter Barba, ſonne of Nicholas, elect byſhoppe of Vincentia, Cardinall Deacon, and afterward Cardinall Prieſt, vnder Frederick the 3. He held the See ſix years, ten months, *vacante* eleuen dayes. 1464

221 Sixtus the fourth of Sauona, called F. Frances de Rouere, ſonne of Leonard, of Miniſter generall of the Fryers Minors, was made Cardinall Prieſt, vnder Fredericke the third. He celebrated the ſeauenth Iubilee, in the yeare 1475. and held the See thirteene yeares, fiue daies: *vacante* xv. daies. 1471.

222 Innocentius the eight, borne in Genewaie, called Iohn Baptiſta Cibo, ſonne of Aaron: of Biſhop of Melphes, was made Almoner. and Cardinall Prieſt, vnder Fredericke: he held the See eight yeares, ſix and twentie daies, *vacante* two daies. 1484

223 Alexander the ſixt, a Spaniard of Valencia, called Rodericke Borgia, ſonne of Geffrey, Byſhop of Valencia, Cardinall Deacon, after Prieſt, and laſtly byſhop of Alba, Vice Chauncello; and Deane of the Church, vnder Maximilian. He celebrated the eight Iubilee, in the yeare 1500, and held the See eleuen yeares, 8. dayes, *vacante* foure dayes. 1492

*The fifteenth Age.*

IN this fifteenth Age liued Iohn Gerſon, Eneas Syluius, Froiſſard, Baldus, Angelus, Bel-

tion, Chalcondilus, Platina, Nauclerus. And not long after, Martine Luther, Iohn Eckius, More, Hosius, Iohn Caluine, &c.

1502. 224 Pius the third, a Siennois, called Frauncis Todescin Picolhomini, Sonne to the sister of Pope Pius the second, who maried with Nannes: hee was Arch-byshop of Sienna, and Cardinall-Deacon, vnder Maximilian: and held the See sirteene dayes, vacante twenty foure daies.

1503. 225 Iulius the second, of Sauona, called Iuliano de Rouero, sonne of Raphaell, Brother to Pope Sixtus the fourth, of Cardinall-Priest, became Byshoppe of Alba, afterward Byshop of Ostia, and great Penitentiary, vnder Maximilian. Hee held the See nine yeares, three moneths, twelue dayes, vacante seauenteen dayes. The generall Councell of Laterane was then.

1503. 226 Leo the tenth, a Florentine, called Iohn de Medicis, sonne of Laurence, Cardinall Deacon, vnder Maximilian, and Charles the fift: He held the see eyght yeares, eight months, twenty one dayes, vacante one month, seauen daies.

1522. 227 Adrian the first, a native of Vtreicht in Galia-belgica, sonne of Florent; of Byshop of Ertusa, was made Cardinall-Priest, vnder Charles the fift, to whom hee was Schole-mayster: he held the see one yeare, eight months, fire daies, vacante two months, foure daies.

1523. 228 Clement the seauenth, a Florentine, called Iulius de Medicis, Knight of Hierusalem, nephew

phew to Pope Leo the tenth, elected Arch-Byſhoppe of Florence, Cardinall-Deacon, afterward Prieſt & Chancellour of the Church, vnder Charles the fift: he celebrated the ninth Iubilie, in the yeare 1525. And helde the ſee ten yeares, tenne monthes, eyght dayes, vacante ſirteene daies.

229 Paule the third, called Alexander Farneſe, ſonne of Peter Lewes, Cardinall-deacon, was afterward Byſhoppe cardinall of Tuſculanum, Palæſtrina, Sabina, Portua, and Oſtia, and Deane of the cardinals, vnder Charles the fift and Ferdinand. Hee held the ſee fifteene yeares, nineteene daies, vacante two months, 29. daies. The generall councell of Trent beganne Anno. 1525. 1534

230 Iulius the third, borne at Arezza, called Iohn Maria de Monte, ſonne of Vincent Arch-Byſhop of Sipontum, cardinall-prieſt, and afterward Byſhop of Palæſtrina, vnder Charles and Ferdinand. Hee celebrated the tenth Iubilie, in the yeare 1550. and held the ſee fiue yeares, one moneth, ſirteene dayes, vacante ſeauenteene daies. 1550

231 Marcellus the ſecond, a Tuſcane, called Marcellus Ceruinus, ſonne of Richard; of Byſhoppe of Caſtello Nouo, hee was made cardinall-prieſt vnder Charles the fift, and Ferdinand. He held the See twenty two daies, vacante ſeauenteene daies. 1555

232 Paule the fourth, a Neapolitane, called Iohn Peter Caraffa, ſonne of Iohn Alphonſo, 1555

Count

Count of Mataluna, of Archbyshop of Naples, he became Cardinall Priest of Alba, Sabina, Tusculanum and Ostia, and Deane of the cardinals, vnder Charles the fift, and Ferdinand: he held the See, foure yeares, two Moneths, seauen and twentie daies *vacante*, foure monethes, fire dayes.

1559 233 Pius the fourth, a Milainois, called Iohn Angelo de Medicis, sonne of Bernardino, Cardinall Priest vnder Ferdinand and Maximilian the second: he helde the See fiue yeares, eleauen moneths, eight daies. *vacante* nine and twentie dayes. In his time the counsel of Trent was concluded, an. 1563.

1566 234 Pius the fift, an Alexandrine Lombard, of the preaching Freers order, called F. Michael Giller, of byshop of Surrina, and Nepesina, became cardinall Priest, Graund Inquisitour, and byshop of Montreall, vnder Maximilian 2. Hee held the See fir yeares, three moneths, firteene dayes.

1572 235 Gregory the thirteenth, a Bolonois, called Hugo Bon-compagnio, son of Christopher, Cardinall Priest, vnder Maximilian the second, and Rodolphus the second. He celebrated the eleauenth Iubilee, in anno 1575. and helde the See twelue yeares, xi. months, xii. daies, *vacante* eleauen dayes.

1585 236 Sixtus the fift, De la Marche d'Ancona, cardinall de Montalto, called F. Fœlix Peret, of the Friars Minors order, cardinall Priest vnder Rodolphus the second: Hee helde the See, fiue yeares,

yeares, foure months, xvi. dayes, vacante foure-teene daies.

237 Vrbane the ſeauenth, a *Romaine*, called Iohn Baptiſta Caſtagnia, Sonne of Coſimo, cardinall of S. Marcellus, vnder Rodolphus the ſecond: He helde the See fifteene dayes, vacante two months. 1590

238 Gregory the fourteenth, a Milanois, called Nicholas Sfondratus, cardinall of S. Cecilia vnder Rodolphus the ſecond: Hee helde the See ten monethes, tenne dayes, vacante fifteene dayes. 1590

239 Innocentius the ninth, a Bolognois, called Iohn Baptiſta Fachineti, cardinall of SS. quatuor, vnder Rodolphus the ſecond, he helde thee See two months, vacante two months. 1590

240 Clement the eight, a Florentine, called Hyppolito Aldobrandino, Sonne of Syluester, Auditor of Rota, and Datary or Almoner to the Pope: was made cardinall Prieſt of S. Pancratia, and great Penitentiary. He was ſent Legat into Poland, by Pope Sixtus the fift, in the yeare 1592. Hee was elected Pope vnder Rodolphus the ſecond, and held the See thirteene yeares, one moneth, fiue dayes, vntill the thirde of March, 1605. and then died. During his Pontificate, which deſerueth to bee noted, hee procured peace betweene the two Kings moſt Chriſtian and catholicke, and the Duke of Sauoy: hee reduced Ferrara vnder obedience to the S. See: and celebrated the twelft Iubilee, in the yeare 1600. 1592

241 Leo the xi. a Florentine likewiſe, called Alexan- 1605

Alexander de Medicis, Sonne vnto Octauian, of the moſt famous houſe of the Medici, of Byſhoppe of Piſtoya, became Byſhoppe of Florence, and Ambaſſadour of Fraunces de Medicis, great Duke of Tuſcany, vnto Pope Gregorie the thirteenth. Hee was made Cardinall, beeing entitled with Saint Quirice and Saint Iulita, after, of Saint Iohn, and Saynt Paule, and in the ende, of Saint Praxedes. Beeing ſent Legate into Fraunce, by Pope Clement the eyght: Hee mediated the peace with the Spanyarde: and returning to Rome, hee was made chiefe of the Congregation of Byſhoppes. And the ſecond of Aprill, 1605. hee was created Pope: But his Pontificate, was of ſmall continuance, becauſe he helde the See but ſeauen and twenty dayes onely, and dyed the ſeauen and twenty day of the ſayde moneth, vnder the ſame Rodolphus the ſecond.

1605 242 Paule the fifte, a Romaine, Originally deſcended from Sienna, called Camillo Borgheſe, who had beene Referendary vnto eyther Signature: Vicar of the Patryarchall Churche of Saint Maria Maior, Vice-Legate to Bolognia, Generall Auditour of the Apoſtolique Chamber: and Nuntio from the S. See into Spayne. Hee was made Cardinall Prieſt of Saynt Euſebius, in the yeare of our Lorde, 1596. by Pope Clement the eight, and afterward Byſhoppe of Eſino, in the Marchia d'Ancona. After the deceaſe of Pope Leo

the

the eleauenth. Hee was elected in his place, the ſirtænth daye of May, 1605. As yet to this preſent yeare 1611. Hee remayneth liuing and hath held the Papacie, the ſpace of fiue yeares, and ſomwhat moze.

To

# TO THE HO-

## nourable Company of the Marchant Taylors; being the Society of Saint *Iohn Baptiſt*.

¶ A brieſe Collection of the Originall and Progreſſe, of the Knights of the worthy Order of S. *Iohn* of *Ieruſalem*, who were afterward called Knights of *Rhodes*, and Knights of *Malta*: Likewiſe their exployts in warre, vnder the conduct of their Great Mayſters, from the yeare 1099. vntill this preſent. With ſome, as brieſe report alſo, of the Knightes Templers, and all other Orders of knight hood thorough the world.

THe Militarie Order of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem, had her byrth and firſte Originall in the holy Citty of Ieruſalem, and paſſed there her firſt yeares of Infancie, with a great part of her adoleſcentie. When as the Sarazins were Maiſters of the holy Citty, and of the countrie 1099

try all about the sacred Sepulchre of our Lorde, which was ruined about the yeare of saluation, 1012. by the commandement of Equin Califfe of the Sarrazins, and continued so ruined, vntill the time of Constantine Monomachus, Emperor of Constantinople, who at the intreaties of the christians which then dwelte in Ierusalem (with the consent of Bomensor Elmonius Stensabus, Califfe or Soldane of Egypt) built it againe at hys owne charges, in the yeare, 1048. About which time, certain Gentlemen and Italian Merchants of the Citty of Melphes, frequenting the Portes and Maritane Citties of Syria and Egypt, and bringing good Marchandizes into those Countries, won themselues much loue and liking not onelie of the citties Gouernours, but also of the Califfe of Egypt: and being wel disposed christians, they would oftentimes goe to Ierusalem, to visit the holy memorable places: and hauing no place of retirement in the citty, they obtained fauour and permission of the Califfe, to builde there a Church and a Pallace, for their owne vse and habitation, as also for others of their Nation, in that quarter of the cittie, where the christians might dwell neere to the holy Sepulchre. There they erected two Monasteries, one in honor of the blessed Virgin Mary, called S. Maria de la Latina (differing from the Greeke churches whych were in Ierusalem, and placed there an Abbot of Mont-Cassina) and was builte to lodge christian Pilgrims therein. The other was dedicated to S. Mary Magdalen, as a place of entertainment

of

of all ſuch women, as ſhould aduenture thither in pilgrimage, they being both Religiouſly gouerned. Not long after, they builded an Hoſpital, wherein to lodge as well all ſickly trauaylors, as any other Pilgrimes of honeſt diſpoſition, with a Church alſo thereto belonging, beeing both dedicated to S. Iohn Baptiſt. Theſe Monaſteries, Churches, and Hoſpitals, were long time maintained by the care and coſt of the Amalphitanes, who founded them: and vntill ſuch time as the Citty was conquered by the Chriſtians from the Infidels, and that Godfrey of Bullen was there elected King, which was in the yeare 1099.

1. The Citty being thus wonne, F. Gerard 1099
was the firſt Rector or Gouernor of the hoſpital of S. Iohn, who, when the Citty was beſiedged by the Chriſtians, was very ill dealt with by the Infidels, & was long time (by them) kept a captiue priſoner, becauſe they diſtruſted, that he had ſome ſecret intelligence with the Chriſtians, which beleagered the Citty. But after that the Chriſtians were maiſters thereof, he was delyuered out of priſon, and gouerned both wiſely and charitably the Hoſpitall of S. Iohn, perſwading and inducing Chriſtian Kinges and Princes, to enrich and endow it with their liberality, which (indeed) they did in bountifull manner, ſo that in France, Italy, Spaine, and other Prouinces of chriſtendome, the Hoſpitall of S. Iohn, founde good Benefactors, and attained (in ſhort time) to great reuennewes and poſſeſſions. In the yeare
1113. Pope Paſchall the ſecond, receiued F. Ge- 1113.

rard, and the Knights of S. Iohn vnder protection of the Apostolique Seate, and graunted them great priuiledges, ordayning, that after the decease of F. Gerard, they shold proceed cannonically to the election of another Rector or Gouernour: who was afterward called Great Mayster of the Order or military hospitall, of S. Iohn of Ierusalem, a name which continueth yet to this present after fiue hundred yeares from the beginning thereof.

1118. 2 In the yeare 1118. F. Gerard departed out of this life, in the Papacie of Gelasius the second, and when as the order of the Knights Templers began. After his decease, there succeeded him by election, F. Raymond de Puy, who was a professed Knight of the Order: Albeit, some holde opinion that F. Roger succeeded deceased Gerard, and gouerned the hospitall of S. Iohn, from the yeare, 1118. vntill the death of Baldwine, second of that name, King of Ierusalem, who died in the yeare, 1131. F. Raymond (in a generall Chapter, assembled in Ierusalem, with aduise of the other Knights) made Statutes for the Order, formed and instituted a rule of life, which all the following Knights were to obserue. Hee was called Great Maister of the Order, and yet he qualified that Title, by calling himselfe Seruant vnto the poore of Christ Iesus, and Guardian of the hospitall of *Ierusalem*. This Great Maister, perceiuing that the reuennewes of the Hospitall did daily encrease, and that hee could not better employ such wealth, then against the Infidelles by

The beginning of the Knightes Templers.

making

making war vpon them: he made offer to the K. of Ieruſalem, of himſelfe, his ſtrength, and all his Knightly Brethren, who bare in their ſtreamers & Enſignes, a Croſſe Argent, in a fielde Gules. And thence forward, theſe religious brethrē were diſtinguiſhed into three degrees: for one company were knights, another Captains, & the third Seruants, not hauing (from the beginning) any other difference among them, but that ſome were Eccleſiaſtical perſons, & the other Layicks. And from that time forward, there was not any enterprize in Paleſtine againſt the Infidels, but the Great-Maiſter was preſent thereat in perſon, with his religious Knights: who were firſt called knights Hoſpitallers, or of the hoſpital of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem, afterward, knights of the Rhodes, & laſtly, knights of Malta. They grew into ſo great credit and reputation, that they were employed in the managing & guiding al affaires of chiefeſt importance. Among others, Gerard Gebert, Knight of this Order, was ſent by Foulkes K. of Aniou into England, to treat on the marriage of Conſtance (Princeſſe of Antioch, Neere to the D. Meliſenda, & daughter to Prince Boemond) with Raymond ſon to the Earle of Poictiers, who was then in the Court of Henry King of England. In like maner (this mariage being thus concluded, by ỳ ingenuity of this knight) at the ſame time, Raymond Berengarius, earl of Barcelona, & Prince of Cathalonia (who had cõquered the iſles of Maiorica & Minorica from the Mores, & (in ſingle combat) defended ỳ chaſtity & honor of Mahauld, wife to

Knightes Hoſpitallers of the Hoſpitall of S. Iohn in Ieruſalem: became afterward to be Knights of the Rhodes, & laſtly Knights of Malta.

to the Emperor Henry the fift, against two Allemaigne Knights, that had falsely accused her of Idolatry) to shut vp the conclusion of his dayes, resolued to take the habite of this famous Brotherhood, and in that sacred profession, hee perseuered al his life time after, which was in the year
1131. 1131. Not much differing from this time, it is reported, that three Knights of this Order, beeing natiue Frenchmen of Picardie, & detained then by the Soldan of Egypt in captiuity, were admirably deliuered, and transported out of Egypte, with Ismeria, daughter to the saide Soldane, to the place where (at this instant) is the church of Nostre Dame de Liesse, and this hapned in the
1139. yeare, 1139. In the yeare 1153. Raymond the Great Master, caused the siedge to be continued before the cittie of Ascalon, which the Infidelles had defended against the christians more then fiftie yeares: and at length, it was yeilded to the saide Maister, the 12. day of August, 1154 which was in the tenth yeare of King Baldwine the 3. In acknowledgement of a prize so signale, and beneficiall to all christendome, Pope Anastasius the fourth, gaue and granted verie great priuiledges, to the Order of these Knights of S. Iohn of Ierusalem, the first day of November in the same yeare, exempting them from the iurisdiction and controule of the East Ecclesiasticall Prelates, which was the cause of great troubles, betweene the Bishops of the country there, and the knights of this order: albeit the Pope and his Cardinals maintained them still stoutly. Some haue held, that

that this Great M. Raymond was a Florentine, but the moſt credible opinion is, that hee was a French-man, a Natiue of Daulphine, iſſued of a verie Noble houſe, called du Puy: whereof, namelie, Iacques Boſius the Italian (who hath amplie written the hiſtorie of this Order) is an ingenuous witneſſe. Hee died in the yeare, 1160. with this reputation; that hee had bin a man of good and vertuous life, fearing god, valiant, wiſe, and aduiſed in the affaires of the world, and one wel approued in warlicke exercises.

3 After that Raymond was deceaſed, there ſucceeded in the Maiſter-ſhip and gouernment of the Order, *F. Auger de Balben*, of whome there is found nothing deſeruing memorie: but that (in his time) died King Baldwin the third, who was not onlie much bemoaned of the christians, but likewiſe of the Infidelles, who ſaide: That the Chriſtians had iuſt cauſe to lament for the death of *Baldwine*, becauſe they had loſt a Prince, that had not his equall in the world. This Great-Maiſter *Auger*, after he had gouerned his charge in peace and repoſe about three yeares, died in the yeare, 1163. 1160

4 Arnold de Comps, was next elected Mayſter in his place, who was a man of great ſpirite, valour, and councell. And in ſhort time after his election, he entered into Egypt, with Amaulrie, the new King of Hieruſalem, who made warre vpon the Califfe of Egypt; becauſe he refuſed to continue and pay the annuall tribute, wherein hee had bound himſelfe to King Baldwine the third, 1163

for a perpetuall payment to the Kinges of Hierusalem. Arnold after he had (with great wisedom and courage) gouerned the Hospitall of S. Iohn about foure yeares, died in the yeare 1167. and then succeeded him

1167. 5 Gilbert d'Assaly, or de Sailly, who was of stout mind, and so liberall; that hee flowed in bounty, especially to his Souldiers, so that he fel into great expences, and wasted the whole treasure of the house. Insomuch, that hee was enforced to borrow Money at interest, with condition; that if he toke from the Infidels the Citty of Belbeis (anciently called Pelusium) he should stand acquitted to his Brother-hood, as indeed he did, and victoriously performed his promise, the third day of Nouember, 1168. In which yeare he held a Chapter generall in Hierusalem, where perceiuing that he was greatly indebted, and had charged the Hospitall, with more than an hundred thousand Crownes of meere debts; beeing also much gricued, that his attemptes found not equall Issue to his high desires: hee determined to renounce his great Maistership, which he did in the yeare 1169.

1169 6 By his resignation, or renunciation rather, another Knight was chosen Great Maister, named F. Gastus, or Castus; of whom there is nothing found, that makes to any purpose of this our briefe History. And the breuity of his time of gouernment was the cause, by reason he was not a full yeare in the charge, but dyed in the very same yeare of his election, and had

F. Iou-

7 F. Ioubert, a very religious man, for his ſucceſſor, who in the yeare 1176. ioyned himſelfe with Phillip Earle of Flanders, that was then come into Syria, to aſſiſt King Baldwine the fourth againſt Saladine, who had a very powerfull Army, miraculouſly banquiſhed by the Chriſtians, that were but few in number, in the moneth of Nouember 1177. at which time the Emperour Frederick Barbaroſſa, and Pope Alexander the third were reconciled together. At length, Saladine withdrew himſelfe from the Countrey of Damas, in the yeat 1179. And then dyed Ioubert Maiſter of the Hoſpitallers, a man very charytable to the poore, and ſickly. It is ſaide, that meere conceite of griefe, to behold (ſo manyfeſtly) the ruine of chriſtian affaires in Syria, with the ſhamefull and damageable truce, made betweene the King of Ieruſalem, and the Earle of Tripoli (by his example) with Saladine; was the onely cauſe of abridging his dayes, hauing gouerned the Order of Saint Iohn, about tenne yeares. 1169.

8 In his ſtead was elected Roger de Molins, a man of high diſcretion and courage. In his time happened a great diſſention betweene the Prince of Antioche, and the Patriarch of the ſaid place: and this Roger was choſen to be mediator of peace and agreement betweene them, which followed in the yeare 1181. This Roger (with Heraclius Patriarch of Ieruſalem, and Arnald de Trogo, Maiſter of the Knights Templers) was ſent by the King of Hieruſalem (in 1179.

quality of an Ambaſſador) into the Weſt, to require ayde of the Chriſtian Princes. Theſe Ambaſſadours were kindly entertained by the Emperour, King Phillip Auguſtus, Gods gift, ſirnamed the Conquerour, the Kings of Sicily, England, and Hungary: they returned back againe into Syria, all but the Maiſter of the Templers, who dyed by the way. In the yeare 1187. the Earle of Tripoli, being leagued and confederated with Saladine; graunted him paſſage, and releeued his Army with victuals. And Saladine hauing beſiedged the citty of Ptolomais, the Knights of Saint Iohn and the Templers (ioyning together) diſordered the whole Army, and Roger the great Maiſter, fighting valiantlie, there dyed, with the fall of his Horſe vpon him, and ſmothered in his Armour, as alſo being much troden on with the enemies Horſes. His body being afterward found among the dead, was buried with great woe and ſorrow. And notwithſtanding this loſſe of the great Maiſter; yet the Knights of Saint Iohn and the Templers, won the day of battaile againſt the Turkes and Sarrazins; of whom died then in the field about fiftæn thouſand, the firſt day of May, in the yeare 1187 After whom

1187 9 F. Garnier of Naples in Syria (which was the ancient citie of Sichem in Canaan) was elected great Maiſter. In his time was a bloudy battaile fought betweene the Chriſtians and Infidels, wherein the King of Hieruſalem (named Guy de Luſignan) was taken Priſoner, with the

the very chiefe Lordes of his Kingdome. It is ſaid alſo, that the Chriſtians had then the true Crolle in the battell, but it was taken from them by the Infidels: and almoſt all the Knightes of Hieruſalem, and the Templers, were one part ſlaine in the battaile, and the reſt beheaded in cold bloud. F. Garnier, after he had fought verie manfully, yet being mortally wounded in many places of his body; by the goodneſſe and ſwiftnes of his Horſe, eſcaped into the Citty of Aſcalon: where ten daies after, hee departed into a better life, the foureteenth of July, hauing bæne great Maiſter but two months and ſixe daies.

10 The twenty day of the ſaide moneth of July 1187. the Knights that were in Ieruſalem, chooſe F. Ermingard d'Aps, to bee their Mayſter. The ſecond day of October, in the ſame yeare, the Citty of Hieruſalem was ſubmitted to the power of Saladine: 88. yeares, two months and ſeauentæne daies, after that it was deliuered (by Godfrey of Bullen) from the handes of the Infidels: Frederick the firſt, ſirnamed Barbaroſſa, then holding the Empire of the Weſt, and Iſaac the Angell, that of the Eaſt, at Conſtantinople, Vrbane the third beeing Pope of Rome, and Phillip the ſecond, called Auguſtus, Gods Gift and Conquerour, raigning in Fraunce. Then were erpulſed out of Hieruſalem, the Knightes Hoſpitallers, Templers, and al the Latine Chriſtians, of which Chriſtians, the Hoſpitallers redéemed from captiuity of the barbarous, to the number of two thouſand with their Money. All 1187

the

the Churches of the cittie were then polluted and prophaned, except the Temple of the Resurrection; which was bought with a great summe of Money, by the Christians of the East. After the losse of Hierusalem, the Knights Hospitalers were continually in Armes, faithfully assisting the Christian Princes, that had put on Crosses, for the recouery of the holy Land, and did actions (of high desert) at the siedge of Ptolomais: which, after a long siedge of three yeares, was regayned from the Infidels by the Christians, the
1191 twelft day of July, 1191. And in that Citty, the Knights of Saint Iohn kept then their ordinary aboad and residence. And in the verie same yeare, the Christians wonne a notable victorie against the Barbarians, and Saladine their chiefe: wherein they were worthily assisted by the knightes Hospitallers and Templers. The
1192 yeare following, beeing 1192. in Winter, dyed Ermingard d'Aps the great maister, in the cittie of Ptolomais, and then was chosen in his place

11 Geoffrey de Duisson. In his time there was truce taken for fiue yeares, betweene the Christians that were in the holy Land, and Saladine, by which meanes, many Lords and Gentlemen of diuers Nations, who had worne the Crosse, and gotten great store of goodes and possessions: returned home to their Countries, and gaue their goods to the Brotherhood of saint Iohn, which greatly did augment their renennewes. And after the death of Henry Earle of Champaigne; the Hospitallers and Templers remay-

ned

ned gouernours, and adminiſtrators of the kingdome of Hieruſalem: howbeit, that (by the fewer number of Chriſtians there abiding) election was made of Amaury de Luſignan, who had ſucceeded the king of Ieruſalem in the kingdome of Cyprus, with conſent of the Patriarch, the Prelats and Barons of the Realme, in the yeare 1194. when ſone after died Duiſſon the Great-Maiſter, and then ſucceeded him, by election

12 F. Alphonſo of Portugall, a knight of the Order of Saint Iohn, and of the Royall houſe of Portugall, though it dooth not appeare certainely, to what king he was Sonne. He made very worthy and commendable ſtatutes, whereof (to this day) there are ſome inuiolably kept. But becauſe he was of too ſtiffe nature, ouer-rough, ſurely and ſeuere: hee encurred the hatred of the greater part of the Knights Hoſpitallers. Which was the cauſe that hee renounced his Maiſterſhippe, and ſhipt himſelfe for returne home to Portugall, in the ſame yeare of his election: But he dyed the firſt day of March, in the yeare 1207. 1194

13 The ſame yeare that Alphonſo renounced the Great Maiſterſhippe, to wit, in the yeare 1194. Geoffrey le Rat, who was Graund-Pryour of Fraunce, was choſen Mayſter: And Saladine then dying, his Sonne Noradine (Lord of Alepo) ſucceeding him. About this time, Simon, Earle of Montfort, was ſent by King Phillip Auguſtus, with an Army into Syria; where finding much diſorder, he tooke truce 1194

for

for tenne yeares with the Infidels, in the yeare
1198 1198. In the time of this tranquile estate, there chanced a great difference, betweene the Knights Hospitallers and Templers, grounded on this occasion. The Hospitallers complayned, that the Templers had enterprised too farre vppon their iurisdiction, with much contempt and violation thereof. Which quarrell (after manie rough encounters and skirmishes) was appeased & accorded, by the interposition of king Amaury, the Patriarches of Antioch and Hierusalem, and other Princes and Christian Prelats, who compromitted this difference, in the name of Innocentius the third, which fell out very successfuely. For, after that God (the onely Staffe and stay of all affaires in the holy Land) had permitted this friendly vnity, betweene these two millitary Orders of Knight-hood, King Amaury of Lusignan so preuailed, that the Great Mayster and Knights of Saint Iohn, might liue with him in the Isle of Cyprus, where hee graunted the gouernment of the Kingdome to them. In
1205 the yeare 1205. King Amaury dyed, so did Queene Isabell, who appointed her Daughter Mary (which she had by Conrade of Monferrat) to be her heire, and he left her to be tutoured and guided by the Knightes Hospitallers and Templers. In the yeare 1260. Geoffrey le Rat, the Great Mayster dyed, and then succeeded him

1260 14 Guerin de Montagu, of the language of Auuergne, who (with the Knights of his or-

der

der) ayded Lyuon, King of Armenia, againſt the Turkes and Barbarians, that had intruded into his Kingdome. In recompence whereof, he gaue them the citty of Salef, with the caſtles of Camard and new caſtle, and their dependances. Yee likewiſe recommended his heire and Kingdome, to the Knightes of the Hoſpitall of Saint Iohn; which guift was confirmed by the Pope, the fift of Auguſt 1209. Then were Iohn de Brienna, and Mary his Wife (Heire to the Kingdome) crowned King and Quéene of Hieruſalem. At length, in the yeare 1230. Guerin the great Maiſter died in the citty of Ptolomais, and during his tyme, all the Chriſtians affaires in the holy Land, depended (very much) vppon the Knightes Hoſpitalers and Templers: who albeit they had many contentions betweén them, yet did they ſtill agrée together (in all matters) againſt the Infidels. After him ſucceeded

1230

15 One F. Gerin, of whom no other name is found remembred. Richard Duke of Cornewal, and Brother to Henrie (then King of England) arryued ſoone after in Paleſtine, with an Army of forty thouſand men, and did many worthy actions there. The great Maiſter alſo, and his knights with him (bearing him company) fought valiauntly againſt the Coraſmine Infidelles. There the ſaide Mayſter was taken, and ſent as a Priſoner to the Soldane of Egypt, where he died, and in his place, the Knights of S. Iohn elected (in the citty of Ptolomais) for their great Maiſter

1240

This is miſtaken, for this was K. Richard the firſt himſelfe.

16 Ber-

1345 19 Bertrand de Comps, in the time of Pope Innocent the fourth, and when the Generall Counsell was called at Lyons, 1245. This great Maister was present in a furious battaile, fought against the Turcomans, that wasted all the country about Antioch, in the month of August, 1248 where, having receiud sundry deadly wounds, he ended his daies: And in the Citty of Ptolomais, on the 24. of Aug. was elected as Great maister

1248 17. Peter de Villebride. In his time, Lewes K. of France, called S. Lewes, toke on him the crosse against the Infidels, with many Princes & Prelates of France, who went and besieged Damieta where they were ayded by the knightes hospitalers & Templers, and the City was son after surrendred to K. Lewes in the yeare 1250. Then did the Soldan of Egypt giue battel to the christians, wherein King Lewes with his brethren, Charles and Alphonsus, the King of Cyprus, as also the Great maister, & many knights of the hospitalers & Templers, were all taken prisoners. Which surprizall, caused an attonement betweene King Lewes and the Soldane, & the hospitall knights lent mony to King Lewes, to pay his ransom. In the year 1251. Villebride the great maister dyed in the City of Ptolomais, & succeeded by election

1251 18 Guillaum de Chasteau-neuf, or de Castelno, of the speech of Auuergne. He was a great obseruer of Iustice, & pope Alexander 4. gaue to the knights hospitallers, ỹ castle & lands of Bethania, in the yeare, 1256. In his time, the Christians lost their vtmost hope, of any succour from the

Princes

Princes of Europe: and in the yeare 1280. the Great Maiſter of Caſtelno died, when as the Hoſpitall Knights of S. Iohn, elected in his ſted

19 Hugues Reuelle, or Reuel, in the tyme of Pope Viban the fourth, who gaue to the knights of S. Iohn, Mont-Tabor, 1261. and in Anno, 1262. they bought the Caſtle of *Aſſur*, but in the following two yeares, they toke from the Sarazins a Caſtle named Lilion, whereuppon, the Soldan of Egypt concluded, to worke the ruin of the Knights Hoſpitallers, and (as an inſtance) he forcibly toke from the ſaide Knights (in the year 1265.) the Caſtle of *Aſſur*, at the ſurpriſal wherof, there were ſlaine to the number of 90. knights of S. Iohn, which greatly abated their power and repute. And in the yeare 1267. the Knights hoſpitallers and Temples were aſſailed, and much confuſed in battaile by the Sarazins, neere to the City of Ptolomais, for they waſted and ſpoiled al the countrey thereabout. In the yeare alſo 1270 the Knights of S. Iohn loſt the Caſtle of Cracquo, which was aſſaulted by the Soldane, and all the knights within it, were put to the ſword. It is likewiſe ſaide, that this Great Maſter Reuel, aſſiſted King Lewes in the voyage to Tunis, where the ſaid King died of the plague, and that in the ende, about the yeare, 1278. the Great Maiſter Reuel ended his daies, hauing helde fiue Chapters, or aſſemblies of the Brother-hode of S. Iohn, wherein manie notable Statutes were made, for gouernement and reformation of the Order. 1260 1265

20 After

1278 20 After his decease, Nicholas Lorgus, was chosen Great Maister, who, not to swerue a iot from his predecessor (wel knowing, that nothing sooner procureth the ruine of Common-weales & Comminalties, then discord and dissention) toke such paines, to reconcile the Knights hospitallers with the Templers, that he drew them to accord, and made them good friends. In the yeare, 1282 the Knights of S. Iohn, won a famous victorie against the Sarazins, who proudely came to besiedge the Castle of Margate, their very principal Fortresse: which was very manfully defended by the Hospitallers, and in the ende, quitted (at composition) by the knights, who returned (with their Enlignes displayed) to the Citty of Ptolomais. And in the yeare, 1288. Lorgus the Great Maister died, with very griefe, because hee saw the Christian affaires in the Holy land, dailie to fall from il, to worse, without any means or hope of remedy.

1288 21 In the same yeare, Iohn de Villiers, a Frenchman borne, was created Great Maister of the Order. In his time, the Citty of Tripoly was taken from the Christians, by the Infidels, as (in like manner) were the citties of Sidonia & Baruth, in the yeare, 1289. all which were ransacked, ruined and burned, and the citty of Tyre brought vnder the Soldanes subiection, whereon the christians of Ptolomais were gladde to seeke their owne peace. During which time, the Great Maister went to Brundusium, with the Great Maister of the Templers, to sollicite the christian

Princes

Princes of the Croiſade, and the Soldane came to aſſaile the citty of Ptolomais, which was vertuouſly defended, by the Knights of the Hoſpitall and Temple, with many braue ſallies forth vpon the beſiedgers. Eſpecially the Great Maiſter Villiers, who was ſore wounded, with long ſuſtaining the whol charges of the Barbarian Infidels, the Knights Barricadoing themſelues in a quarter of the Citty, which yet was afterward taken on Friday the 18. of May, the ſame yeare 1292. With this great loſſe, the Chriſtians were driuen out of ỹ holy land, 191. years ten months, & thræ daies, after it had bin Conquered by Godfrey of Bullen. The Great M. with the reſt of his Knightes, fled (for ſafety) to the Iſle of Cyprus, where they were very kindly entertained by the K. of the Iſland, who aſſigned to thẽ & the Templers, the Citty of Limoſſon, which was a Port Towne or Hauen on the Sea. There did they inhabite, and there did the Great Maiſter aſſemble two generall Chapters, one in December, 1292. and the other in October 1293. making therein diuers good Statutes for the Order: and in the yeare 1294. he dyed at Limoſſon, & then ſucceeded him

22 F. Odo des Pins, borne in Prouence, in the time of Pope Boniface the eyght. He incurred the hatred and diſgrace of the knightes of his Order, by reaſon of his negligence and couetouſneſſe. And there was a purpoſed determination, to depriue him of his Great maiſterſhippe; but it was impeached by the Pope, to auoide ſcandall, 1294

and at length he was cited to appeare at Rome in person to answere to the complaintes of the Hospitallers, and thitherward he trauailed. But before he could see Italy, he dyed by the way, in the year 1296. hauing (in the precedent yeares) held two generall Chapters at Limosson. Hee caried also along with him a manuscript Chronicle, wherein hee had appealed certaine letters of the Popes, containing excommunication, whereby he pursued and relæued his owne appeale.

1296 23 The Knights hearing the death of their Great Maisters des Pins, elected (at Limosson) the twenty foure day of March 1296. F. Guillaume de Villaret to succeed him; who was of the same Countrey of Prouence, and Prior of S. Gilles, where he was at the time of his election. But hauing intelligence thereof, he trauailed immediatly to the Kingdome of Cyprus, and gouerned in his charge very prudently. In his time Vsau Cassanus, King of the Tartares, became a Christian, and recouered the Citty of Ierusalem, where hee placed the Knightes Hospitallers and Templers in Garrison, in the yeare 1300. Hee tooke the Citty of Damas likewise, but it was quickly regained by the Infidels, and the Hospitallers and Templers returned then to Cyprus againe, where the Great Maister departed out of this life, in the yeare 1308. hauing helde fiue generall Chapters at Limosson, and seene the vtter ruine of the Knights Templers.

1308 24 The great Maister being dead, Folquet de Villaret, of the same Nation of Prouence, was elected in his roome. He was a man of lue-

ly ſpirit and great courage, and ſeeing that he had attained to this Soueraigne dignity; he reſolued to put in execution a matter, which (in his predeceſſors daies) had often beene intended, but could not any way be effected (viz.) to depart from the Iſle of Cyprus, and to get a dwelling ſome where elſe, which hee very happily performed. For in Anno. 1308. the very yeare of his election, hée made a voyage to Conſtantinople, and afterward into France, where the Pope gaue him the Iſle of Rhodes, (if he could get it) which with his Knights he conquered, in the yeare 1309. and ſeauen other Iſlands nere adioyning. So that thither was the reſidence of ſaint Iohns knights tranſferred, and then they were afterward called, Knights of the Rhodes, yet keeping the Name of Saint Iohn of Hieruſalem ſtill. Not long after, Otthoman, firſt Emperour of the Turkes, came and beſiedged Rhodes with a Potent Army: but it was releeued by Amadis the fourth, Earle of Sauoy, and Otthoman was compelled to raiſe his ſiedge. After which time the Earles of Sauoy wore on their Armours, a Croſſe Argent, in a fielde Gules, in memory of the helpe they had giuen to the Knightes of the Rhodes. The order of the Templers (hauing beene vtterly ſuppreſſed, in a generall Councell holden at Vienna in Dolphine) the greater part of theyr goods was giuen to the Order of the Rhodes, and confirmed by Pope Clement the fift, 1312. In the yeare 1314. the Knightes of the Rhodes conquered the Iſle of Lango, with other Iſles in

The beginning of the Knights of the Rhodes who helde their firſt name of S. Iohns Knights ſtil

the Archipelagus. And in the yeare 1317. Folquet the Great Maister (pleasing his owne humour ouer-much in his victories and conquestes) beganne to grow haughty, proud, and insolent, which brought him into contempt of his companions: whereupon, the Knights reuoulted from him, and if he had not saued himselfe in a Castel, they had seized his person. But, in regard they could not get him, they deposed him from the dignity of Great Maister, & in his place, elected

1317 25 Maurice de Pagnac, whereof Pope Iohn the twenty two, beeing aduertised, hee was greatly offended thereat, and sent two Prelates to the Rhodes, to informe themselues of the fact, with commaund, to cite the Great Maister de Villaret and de Pagnac, to appear at Auignon in person, Gerard des Pins beeing appointed Lieutenant Generall in the meane while. At this instant time, Orchanes Emperour of the Turkes, came boldly and besiedged the Isle of Rhodes: but the knights had an admirable victory against him, for there were then tenne thousand Turkes hewen in peeces. In this Interim, Maurice de Pagnac, died at Montpellier, Anno. 1322. and Folquet de Villaret was re-established in the dignity of Great Maister. But hee perceiuing that it was against the liking of his fellowe knights, renounced his Great Maistership, in ỹ yeare 1323. and liued as a priuate Knight, vntill the first day of September, 1327. when he dyed, and was buried at Montpellier.

1327. 26 The same yeare that he gaue ouer his dignity

nity, the Knights of the Rhodes choſe Elion de Villeneufue, borne alſo in Prouence, and Priour of Saint Gilles. In the yeare 1343. a league was made betweene the Seigneury of Venice, the K. of Cyprus, and knights of the Rhodes. And the Great Maiſter hauing won the name of an happy gouernor, died the 27. of May at Rhodes. In his life time, he had encloſed the great Maiſters Pallace with wals & towers, and deuided the languages, Bayliwicks and other dignities of the Order.

27 After the deceaſe of Villeneufue, Deodon, or Gods-gift (a Natiue of Prouence) was elected Great Maiſter. About foure yeares before hee was promoted to this Dignity, hee had fought with an horrible and monſtrous Dragon, that greatly afflicted the Iſle of Rhodes. And hauing kild the Monſter, he was therefore ſo highly honored and eſteemed, that his memory yet remaineth renowned to poſterity. In the yeare 1347. he ayded the King of Armenia againſt the Soldane of Egypt. Pope Clement the ſixt helde the Knights of Rhodes in ſuch eſteeme, that almoſt all the Fortes in Italy (belonging to the See) were gouerned ſeuerally by one of them. In the yeare 1351. Conſtance King of Armenia, became a Brother Knight of Rhodes. And in the yeare 1353. the Sonne to Iohn Canta-cuzen, Emperour of Conſtantinople, came and required ayde of the Great Maiſter of Rhodes: who, after he had gouerned this Order of Saint Iohn ſeauen yeares, ſixe months, and ten daies, dyed the ſeauenth of September, in the ſaide yeare 1353

1346

1353. and was buried in the Church of S. Iohn of Rhodes. Hee builded Milles in the Citty of Rhodes, and engirt the Subburbs with walles, making them very strong on the Sea side.

1353 28 Next succeeded him by election (as Great Maister) Peter de Cornilian, Priour of S. Gilles, borne also in Prouence. Hee was Maister, but one yeare, eight months and seauentéene dayes: for, falling into a grieuous sickneſſe, hee died in the Citty of Rhodes, the 24. of August, 1355. He was a man of very exemplarie life, and so seuere, that hee was sur-named the Corrector of Customes. He held a generall Chapter at Rhodes, 1354. wherin many good Statutes were made.

1355 29 After the great Maister was deceased, according to acustomed form, Roger des Pins, born likewise in Prouence, did next succéde him. In his time, the Pope perswaded the Knightes of Rhodes, to buy the Principality of Achaia, of Iacques de Sauoy, Prince of Piedmont, and the Knights of Rhodes made a generall assembly in the Citty of Auignon, to effect the treaty of buying the sayd principality of Achaia, and to reform some abuses, crept into the Order. For their statutes were now traduced into the Latine tongue, and to all Princes were sent authenticall Copies or Volumes of them, by appointment of the great Maister: And in the yeare, 1359. the great Commander, & the Marshall of the Order, were sent into France (in quality of Ambassadors) to be visiters and reformers. There was an assembly of the Knights, called at the Cittye of Carpentras,

but

but it could not hold, in regard of the great Mayſters death, who dyed the 28. of May, 1365. and was much lamented, but by the poore eſpecially, to whom hee was a great and charitable Almoner.

30 Raymond Berengarius, of Prouence alſo, was nert choſen great Maiſter, who had bin before Commander of Caſtle Sarrazin. In his time the King of Cyprus, and the Knights of Rhodes made a league together, and toke (perforce) the Citty of Alexandria in Egypt, which they ranſackt, ſpoyld, and burnt. The *Armenians* being expulſed by the Sarazins out of their dwellinges, wer charitably entertained by S. Iohns knights, in the Iſle of Lango: and at the ſame time, the Citty of Tripoli in Syria, was taken and ſacked by the King of Cyprus, and the Knightes of the Rhodes. In the yeare, 1371. the Great Maſter was (by the Pope) electd Nuntio from the Apoſtolique ſeat, to appeaſe the rumors and diuiſions, which were then in the Kingdome of Cyprus: whether he went in perſon, and both by his Authority and wiſedome, he ſoone ſeaſed all the troubles and molleſtations. The Great Maiſter hauing gouerned his Order about eighteene yeares and an halfe, departed this life in the yeare, 1373 1365

31 In the ſame yeare, Robert de Iuliac, or of Gulich, great Priour of Fraunce, was choſen Great-Maiſter, who (at the time of his election) had the charge of his Priory: but vnderſtanding the newes, he went forthwith to *Anignon*, where he was receiued with great honor, an aſſemblie 1373.

general of this Knightly Order being then there held, and the Great Maister had the gouernment of Smyrna imposed vpon him, vnder paine of excommunication. At his comming to Rhodes, he qualified all the contentions, which had happned in the time of his absence. At this time went the Pope, to hold his seat at Rome againe, which he and his predecessors had kept at Auignon, for the space of seauenty one yeares 1376. In which yeare, the 29. of June, dyed the Great Maister, and then

1376 32 In his place came Iohn Fernandes d'Heredia, a Natiue of Arragon, in the Citty of Valentia, who was Prior of Cathalognia, and Castillian d'Emposta. Twice he had bin marryed, and (chancing to be a Widdower) he was made a Knight of Rhodes, in the time of Villeneufue, who was then Great Maister. Being then but a simple Knight, hee went to visite the holy Sepulchre, and other memorable places in the holie Land. He was also Ambassador from Pope Clement the first, to the Kings Phillip 6. of France, and Edward the third of England, and did verie good service to King Phillip, in the yeare 1346. For he being dismounted from his horse, on a day of battaile against the English he gaue him his owne horse, whereby the King escaped to a place of safety. In like manner he fortified the Bastions and new wals of Auignon, whereof hee was made Gouernor by the Pope. Being great Maister, hee toke his way to Rhodes, in the yeare, 1377. and being required by the Generall of the Vene-

Venetians Army, to vnite their forces together: they went to Morea, in the yeare, 1378. where they beſiedged the Citty of Patras, and toke both it and the Caſtle. The great Maiſter (fighting man to man with the Gouernor of Patras) ſlewe him manfully. Afterwarde, in an ambuſcado of Turkes, hee was taken priſoner, by reaſon hee was too well knowne to them: Whereuppon, to worke his liberty, Patras and other places (which had bin won from them) were re-deliuered to the Turkes. And yet notwithſtanding, they would néeds carrie him with them into Albania, where they kept him as a ſlaue three yeares. In the year, 1381. the great Maiſters frædome was bought with money, and hee returning to Rhodes, the Ambaſſadors of Smirna came to deſire ſuccour of him. In the yeare, 1391. Baiazeth, Emperour of the Turkes made ſome preparation to beſiege Rhodes, whereupon, Phillebert de Naillac, Priour of Aquitaine, was ſent by his fellow knights to Auignon, with Letters to the great Maiſter, to require aide againſt Baiazeth. Naillac returning to Rhodes, in the yeare, 1396. Heredia the great Maiſter died, and was buried at Caſpa.

33 Newes beeing brought to Rhodes, that Heredia the great Maiſter was dead: Phillebert de Naillac, grand Priour of Aquitaine, & borne in France, ſucceeded in his rome. At the Spring time, he was inuited by Sigiſmond King of Hungaria, to come and aſſiſt him with his knights againſt Baiazeth, which hee did in perſon, in the yeare, 1397. And then was a battaile fought at 1395.

Nicopo-

Nicopolis, where Baiazeth had the victorie, the K. of Hungary, being glad to saue himselfe (and with the Great Master) retyred to Rhodes. Thither also did the Emperor of Constantinople, send all his precious Iewelles, to be kept by the Great Maister, fearing least Baiazeth shoulde surprize Constantinople. But hee was disappointed by Tamberlain, who ouercame Baiazeth, and kepte him captiue in a Cage of yron, so long as he liued, and the siege of Constantinople being raised, the great Master sent home again the Emperors Iewels. After the foyle of Baiazeth, the great Maister de Naillac sailed with an army into Caria, & there builded an inexpugnable fortresse, which he named S. Peters Castle, in the year 1399. vnder the raigne of Charles the sixt king of France. In the yeare, 1403. there happened wars betweene the k. of Cyprus and the Genewayes; which was pacified and ordered by the wisedome and authority of the great Maister: to whom the Soldan of Egypt sent an Ambassador, for request of peace. In the yeare 1409. the Great Maister gaue his personall assistance in the Counsell of Pisa, assembled to quench the Schismes, which were then crept into the Church, and the guard of the Conclaue was committed to the great Maister, when Alexander the fift was elected Pope. The sayde Maister was likewise at the generall Counsell of Constance, where three Popes were deposed, and Martine 5 elected, an. 1414. the guard of the Conclaue being then againe giuen to the great Maister. Trauelling into France, he held a generall assembly

ſembly of his knights at Auignon, afterward at Florence, and laſt at Ancona: whence returning to Rhodes, an. 1420. he held there a general chapter, and in the beginning of June, 1421. he dyed. 1421.

34 And then in the deads place, Anthony de Fluuiano, or de Riuers, reported to be a natiue of Arragon (but more ſay of England) was created Great Maiſter. In his time began the generall Counſell of Baſile, 1430. And not long after, the Soldan of Egypt (puft vp with the victory which he wonne at Cyprus) brake the Truce, and prepared a great Armye, with intent to beſiedge Rhodes. But when hee heard, that the Great Maiſter was prouided of ſufficient ſtrength to withſtand him: he left off his determination, and ſo the Order that way remained in quiet. This Great Maiſter founded, and endowed a Chappel in the Citty of Rhodes, which (afterwarde) hee made a Church for his Knights. And the 29. of October hee died, after hee had gouerned (in his place) with much wiſedome, 16. years & an halfe.

This Anthony de Riuers was ſent for to Rhodes, he being then chief Commander of the Brotherhood, at S. Iohns of Ieruſalem, in Saint Iohns ſtreet.

35 The firſt of Nouemb. in the ſame year 1437 Iohn de Laſtic, borne in Auuergne was elected Great Maiſter, albeit he was abſent at his election, & remained in Auuergne, whereof he was prior. Before he wold go to Rhodes, he made a generall aſſembly of his knightes at Valentia, in the month of Decem. 1438. when he cam to Rhodes, he began to build the new hoſpital for ſick people, which the precedent great M. (by his wil) had appointed to be done at his expences. In his time, Pope Eugenius 4. was depoſed by the Counſell of 1437.

of Basile, and Fœlix the fift, created in his place, who was held at Rome to be an Antipope. In the yeare, 1440. the Soldane of Egypt, beeing come neer to the port of the isle of Cast-Lerouge (which appertained to the Knights) and from thence turning towards Rhodes, he was put to flight by an army of the Knights, who had but eight Gallies, and in the Soldanes army there were eighténe, and there were slaine about seauen hundred Sarazins, beside a great number that were wounded. This foile did so highly offend the Soldan, that he leagued himselfe with Amurath, Emperor of the Turkes, with intention to make himselfe Maister of the Isle of Rhodes, and to kill, or expell thence that famous Order of Knight-hood. Hereupon, in the yeare, 1444. he came and besiedged Rhodes, which was vertuously defended by the Rhodian Knights: and in the moneth of September the same yeare, a generall assembly was held at Rhodes, to helpe the ensuing necessities of the Order. So the yeare following, the Great Maister (by aduise of the Pope and the King of Cyprus) made peace with Amurath, and helde a generall Chapter at Rhodes. At whiche time, the Duke of Cleues passed by Rhodes, in his returne from Ierusalem, where he had visited the holy places. In the yeare 1451. a general assembly was made at Rhodes, wherein, the administration and gouernment of the Treasure, and whole Fraternity, was giuen to the Great Maister: who in anno 1452. after the death of Amurath, renewed the peace with Mahomet

the

the ſecond his ſonne. And yet the yeare following, Mahomet became Maiſter of the Cittye of Conſtantinople, the 29. of May: when (beeing not a little proude of this fortunate ſucceſſe) hee ſent to the great Maiſter of Rhodes, that he ſhold pay him (yearly) two thouſand Ducats, in nams of tribute, otherwiſe, he purpoſed not to hold (any longer) the peace ſworne betweén them. Whereunto the great Maiſter made a couragious aunſwere, to wit: That neither his Religion, the Iſle of Rhodes, nor himſelfe were ſubiectes to any, but God and his Church, and that he would neuer pay Turke any tribute, being rather reſolued to dye (both he and all his Knights) then to indure Chriſtian liberty (which euer had bin free) to come now (by his meanes) into thraldome. Whereupon, he ſent Ambaſſadors to the Pope and Chriſtian Princes, to entreat ſupplye from them, againſt the periured Mahomet. And in the yeare, 1454. the 19. day of May, he died, hauing valiantly gouerned his Order ſirtéene years, ſire months, and thirtéene daies.

36 Iacques de Milly, borne in Auuergne, whereof he was Prior, ſucceéded as Great Maiſter the firſt day of June 1454. being in his Priory when he was elected, & his Nephew George de Boiſrond, brought him firſt tydings thereof. Whereuppon hee immediatly went to Rhodes, and helde a generall Chapter the ſame yeare, in the month of Nouember. In the yeare 1456. the Iſle of Rhodes was greatly afflicted with Peſtilence and Famine, whereby it became halfe de- 1242

ſert

sert, and to re-people it againe, many generall citations were sent abroad to all the Knightes, to meete there at a certaine time. The yeare 1457. Mahomet besiedged the Isle of Lango, and the Castle of the Isle des Singes: but he was couragiously repulsed, the Knights hauing a very happy and signat victory against him; which caused Charles the seauenth King of France, to send the Knights (as a gift) sixteene thousand Crownes: The Bailiffes, Commaunders, and other Officers of the Order, being then enioyned (by a generall Chapter) to come to Rhodes, for more secure and strong defence thereof. The seuenteenth of August 1461. the Great Maister dyed, hauing (with much prouidence) gouerned his charge in hard and troublesome times, seauen yeares, two months, and sixteene daies. He was greatly lamented, because he was very benigne, affable, and humaine, desirous to preserue peace and vnity among his worthy Brethren.

1461. 37 Peter Raymond Zacosta, born in Arragon, and Castileon d'Emposta, was created Great M. next; he being then absent in Spaine; but at his comming to Rhodes, by a generall Chapter there holden, the eight language of Castile and Portugall, was then admitted into the Order. For till that instant, there were but seauen languages there before; to wit, three of Fraunce, Auuergne, and Prouence; one of Italy, one of Arragon, one of England, and one of Allemaigne or Germany. The yeare 1464. the Venetians Army besiedged the Citty of Rhodes:

but

but the ſiedge was ſoone raiſed, and the Venetians returned home to their Countrey, the warre beeing appeaſed by the wiſedome of the Great-Maiſter, who cauſed the Tower of Saint Nicholas to be built, at the mouth of Rhodes Port, in the very ſame place, where (in elder times) the great Coloſſus of the Sunne (numbred among the ſeauen wonders of the world) had ſtood. As a helpe to this building, Phillip Duke of Burgundy gaue tenne thouſand Crownes of Gold. The yeare 1465. the great Turke ſent Ambaſſadours to Rhodes, to mediate a peace betweén him and the Knights Hoſpitallers: but they worthily refuſed it, and in preſence of the Ambaſſadours, denounced Warre againſt the Turke. The generall Chapter beeing then transferred from Rhodes to Rome, and the Great Maiſter béeing preſent in perſon thereat: he died there the twenty one of February 1467. and was buried in the Church of Saint Peter.

38 Baptiſta Orſino, Prior of Rome, an Italian by Nation and tongue, ſucceéded the Great-Maiſter Zacoſta. No ſooner was hee come to Rhodes, but hee receiued intelligence, that the great Turke prepared a puiſſant Army, purpoſing to beſiedge either Rhodes or Negropont. Wherfore he ſent for a great number of the Knightes, that were then abſent, to come forth-with for defence of the Iſland. Moreouer, hee leagued himſelfe with the Seigneury of Venice againſt the Turke. Neuertheleſſe, in the yeare 1470. Mahomet forcibly tooke the Citty of Negropont, the 1467.

laſt

laſt day of July, committing very great and horrible cruelties, killing (in cold blood) all the Latines there to be found, and (by ſound of Trumpet) he proclaimed open war againſt the knights of Rhodes, which enforced them to ſeeke all meanes for their beſt defence, prouiding euerie way to withſtand the Turkiſh Army. But in this time of preparation, the eight day of June, the Great Maiſter died of a long lingering diſeaſe, which had afflicted him a whole yeare together: and after him ſucceeded

1476 39 Peter d'Aubuſſon, borne in Auuergne, Prior there, & Captaine of the Citty of Rhodes. He being choſen Great Maiſter, ſolemnely took his oath (according to cuſtom) to keep the ſtatutes of the Order. He viſited ỹ whole Iſle of Rhodes, and made very great prouiſion, to defend it againſt the Turkes Army: ſending for all knights and Commaunders appertaining to the Order, to repaire thither for defence of the Iſle, and renewing peace with the Soldane of Egypt. The ſame yeare, King Lewes preuailed to haue a Iubilie in Fraunce, in fauour of the Knightes of Rhodes, taking order, that the Monies thereby ariſing, ſhould ſoly be imployed for their defence: And by this Iubily came great ſtore of Money, wherewith Caſtles and fortifications were builded in the Iſle. Truce alſo was taken, betweene the Knightes and the King of Tunis, for thirtie yeares, and the Knights of the Sepulcher at Ieruſalem, were ioyned with the Rhodians of S. Iohn. In the yeare 1479. Mahomet the ſecond

Emperour

Emperour of the Turkes, held a ſolemne Councell, that Rhodes ſhould bée beſiedged with a powerfull Army, as indéede ſoone after it was: in which ſiedge, many ſallies forth were made, and the Turkes daily repulſed and chaſed, albeit they were an hundred thouſand fighting men, and the Army conſiſted of 160. Saile. The Great maiſter was much ſuccoured by Meſſire Antoine d'Aubuſſon his Brother, Vicount of Montelis, who was a great Warriour, and a moſt ſkilfull Captaine, he was elected Captaine Generall for the beſiedged. In ſelve daies, the Turkes gaue thrée thouſand and ſeauen hundred ſhot with the Cannon, againſt the Citty Wals, and a maruailous aſſault was made of forty thouſand Turks: who neuertheleſſe were valiantly reſiſted, albeit the Great Maiſter receiued (in this fight) fiue great woundes, one whereof was thought to bée deadly. In the end, ſo worthily were the aſſaylants withſtood, that they were enforced to raiſe their ſiedge, hauing loſt a great number of theyr Souldiers, and the Army of Turkes returned, (with mighty ſhame and diſgrace) to Conſtantinople, after they had beſiedged the Citty for the ſpace of 89. dayes. After this ſiedge, Mahomet the ſecond, concluded to com in perſon to Rhodes, whereupon, a generall aſſembly of the Knightes was made: But the death of Mahomet hindered this deſigne, and his Sonnes Baiazeth and Zizime performed the Warre, after the deceaſe of their Father, which gaue ſome breathing time of reſt to the Knights of Rhodes. And yet Zizime

(in person) came to assist the Great Maister, withdrawing himselfe to Rhodes, in the yeare 1482. where he was receiued with great honour, and from thence conducted into France. In the time of this Great Maister d'Aubusson, the statutes of the Order were reformed, and brought into one volume; peace being concluded betweene the Knights and the Great Turk Baiazeth. The Great Maister was made a Cardinall by Pope Innocent the eight, and Legate also into Asia, with honour of Legate and Generall of the leagued Army against the Turke. Finally, he dyed at Rhodes, An. 1503. the third day of July, full of honour and reputation, and was interred with great Funerall pompe. He had liued 80. yeares, three moneths and foure daies, and gouerned the Order twenty seauen yeares, and sixteene daies.

1503. 40 There were 387. Knightes assembled at Rhodes, when the Great Maister d'Aubusson dyed, who elected for his successor, Emery d'Amboise, Brother to George d'Amboise, Cardinall and Legate in France, Arch-Bishop of Rouen. He was a French-man by birth, and great Priour of France at the time of his election. Guy de Blanchefort comming into France, to accompany him in his voyage to Rhodes: where hee was receiued with much applause and reioycing, because the Kinges of France and Spaine hadde written very fauourable Letters on his behalfe, to the Knights of the order. Hee was no sooner there arriued, but hee helde a generall Chapter, wherein

wherein was concluded, that a ſumptuous tomb of Braſſe ſhould be made, for the deceaſed Cardinall Great Maiſter. In the yeare following, they obtained a very famous and nauall victory, againſt the Soldane of Egypt, vnder the conduct of Phillip de Villiers, of the Ile Adam, a French knight of the order, and afterward he was great Maiſter. But this Maiſter Emerie d'Amboiſe dyed at Rhodes, An. 1512.

41 And the ſame yeare, 410. of the knights were aſſembled at Rhodes, where they choſe Guy de Blanchefort (borne in Auuergne, and Nephew to the deceaſed Maiſter d'Aubuſſon) to be Great Maiſter. In his time the generall Laterane Councel was holden at Rome, where Fabritio Carretto, Admiral and Procurator for the Order of Rhodes, was Captaine of the Guard to the ſaide Councell. This great Maiſter de Blanchefort, embarking himſelfe at Nicea in Prouence, to make for Rhodes; was ſurprized, (by the way) with a dangerous ſickneſſe, wherof hee dyed the 24. of Nouember, a yeare and two dayes after his election. 1512

42 In his ſtead, Fabritio de Carretto, borne in Geneway, and an Italian by language, was created Great Maiſter, in an aſſembly holde at Rhodes, the fiftæenth of December 1513. where were then preſent 550. Knightes of the Order, the ſaid Carretto hauing formerly bæn Admiral of Rhodes. In the yeare 1516. peace was made betwæne the Knights of Sain Iohn, and Tomombeus Soldane of Egypt, ſucceſſor to Camp- 1513.

ſon Gaury, who (but a ſhort while before was ſlaine in a battaile, wherein Selim (Emperour of the Turkes) had the victory againſt him. And Tomombeus was as vnfortunate, for in the yeare 1517. he was taken, and ſtrangled at one of the Portes of the great Cayre, by the appointment of Selim. And this was the cauſe, that the great Maiſter fortifyed the Iſle of Rhodes, to his vttermoſt power, ſending Ambaſſadours to the Chriſtian Princes, to let them vnderſtand the great victoryes of Selim, the ſoner to take order for ſending ſuccour. But Selim dying, his ſon Sultan Soliman ſucceeded him: and in January, 1521. the Great Mayſter Carretto finiſhed his daies at Rhodes, leauing great prouiſion and Munition for warre, which ſone after did ſeruice to his ſucceſſor

1521 43 Phillip de Villiers, of the Iſle Adam, great Priour of France, and there borne; where becauſe hee alſo was at the time of his election, Gabriell de Pomereux great Commander, was choſen Lieutenant to the great Maiſter till hee came. The very ſame yeare of his election, the twenty two day of January, 1521. Sultan Soliman reſolued to beſiedge the Iſle of Rhodes, executing the laſt will of his Father Selim: whereof the Great Maiſter being aduertiſed, hee made his preparation (by all poſſible meanes) to withſtand the Turkes enterpriſe. Diligently did hee ſtrengthen the Citty of Rhodes, ſending for ſupply into Chriſtendome; which as then hee could not haue, by reaſon of the warre happening betweene

twéene Frances the firſt, King of France, and the Emperor Charles the fift. In the month of June 1522. began the memorable ſiedge of the Cittie of Rhodes, which was beſiedged with an Army of two hundred thouſand Turkes, and afterward the army encreaſed to three hundred thouſand men. The beſiedged defended themſelues moſt couragiouſly, and very worthy exploits of warre were there performed: eſpecially by the Great Maiſter, who (during the ſiedge) did neuer put off his Armour. The aſſaylants were in many attemptes repulſed, and in one of them, twentie thouſand Turks remained dead in the place: Soliman hauing then a purpoſe to raiſe his ſiedge, but that there were ſome cloſe Traytours, who hindered him from ſo dooing, and yet they did not eſcape vnpuniſhed. At length, the Great Maiſter (receiuing no ſuccour) was enforced to ſurrender the Cittie, vppon compoſition, the twenty foure day of December 1522. the Turkes hauing loſt more then an hundered thouſand men. Soliman would néedes ſée the Great Maiſter, and when he beheld him, teares iſſued from his eyes, in méere compaſſion of him. So, the firſt day of January, 1523. the Great Maiſter (with 50. ſayle) departed from Rhodes, and toke his way towards Candie: after that the Iſle of Rhodes had beene in the power of the Knights Hoſpitallers, for the ſpace of 213. years, to wit, from the yeare, 1309. to the ende of the yeare, 1522. After this loſſe of Rhodes, the great Maiſter and his valiant Religious Knights, had

The loſſe of Rhodes, to the great greefe of all Chriſtendome.

not any assured place of abyding: vntill the Isle of Malta was giuen thē by the Emperor Charles the fift. For they departed first into Candie: from thence they went into Sicilie and Italy, where the Pope lent them the City of Vitterbo, and where they held a generall Chapter. Afterward they sojourned for some small time, at Cornetto, then at Villefranche, and at Nicea. While they remained at Nicea, the great Maister made a voyage into England, and from thence to France, where being at Lyons, a great sickneſſe toke him: but after his recouery, he went to Cambraye, to hold the Baptisme Font for Phillebert Emmanuell, sonne to Charles Duke of Sauoy. Afterwarde, comming with his Brethren-knights to Malta, on Wednesday morning the first of Octob. 1530. he caused a Pallace to be there created, for the abiding of him and his successors, calling it Castell Angelo, building another pallace also in the old Citty of Malta. When he had gouerned his Order thirtæne yeares, and seauen months (being aged seauenty yeares) the 21. of Aug. 1534. he died at Malta, and was buried in a Chappell, which he had builded neere to Castel Angelo, and then succeeded him by election

The knightes of Saint Iohnbecam Knightes of Malta.

1534

44 Pierrin du Pont, a Natiue of Ast, and an Italian by language. Before ỳ taking of Rhodes, he was Gouernor of the Isle of Lango, and after the losse thereof, he departed (with al the knights vnder his gouernment) and ioyned his power in Candie, with the armye of the Order. In his time, Charles the fift Emperor, attempted to go

in

in perſon to the kingdome of Tunis in Affrica, where he was aſſiſted by the Gallies belonging to the Order, and the knights alſo, who perfor-med there great exploits of Armes: eſpecially, in the ſurprizing of Goletta, which was holde to be a Fort vnconquerable. This war being ended, the great Maiſter (aged ſeuenty and three years) dyed, hauing gouerned onely fourteene months, and 22. daies, and was buried by his predeceſſor Villiers.

45 Deſiré, or Didier de S. Iaille de Tolon, borne in Prouence, and Prior of Tholoſſa, was next made great Maiſter: when lifting vppe his eies to heauen, he vſed theſe words! O my God, if thou thinkeſt me fit for this great charge, I wil not refuſe the paine and labour. In his trauayling towards Malta, being very aged, ſo ſoone as he arriued at Mont-pellier, he fel into an extream ſickneſſe, whereof he died the 26. of September, 1536. and was buried with much ſolemnitie, in the church of the Commandery of S. Gilles, without the gates of Mont-pellier: when the knights were aduertiſed of his deceaſe, the eightenth of October in the ſame yeare, they proceeded to the election of 1535

46 Iohn d'Homedes, a natiue of Arragon, who being then in Spaine, made haſt to Malta, where he was ioyfully receiued. Albeit, he was diſcon-tented, that they had not ſent ſome of the gallies, nor the great Carrack of the Order, for his con-duct thither: wherefore he diſarmed and deſtroi-ed the great Carrack, which cauſed manie com- 1536.

plaints against him. Very often would hee discourse of the siedge at Rhodes, because hee gaue generall notice thereby, that there he had lost one of his eies. He made a goodly Parke of Deer, and a very beautiful Garden in the Isle of S. Michael, & there would he spend the greater part of the day: which raised occasion of murmuring against him, that he was slacke in his publicke gouernement, and no way carefull to prouide the Isle of Malta, of needfull supplies against the Turks forces, for he trusted too much in the strength of Castell Angello. In his time, the Citty of Tripoli in Barbary, was lost by the Knights of the Order, & taken by the Turkes, which droue him to no little feare and amazement. In the year, 1552. Leo Strozzi, an especiall Commander of the Order, made an attempt vpon the Isle of Zoara, which had very hard successe, because many Knightes were then slaine there of all Nations, especially ye many French, Auuergnacs and Prouenceals. It being declared to the Great Maister, he grieued extraordinarily thereat, and sayde: That a greater losse had not happened to the Order, since the surprizall of Rhodes. Hee builded the Castles of Saint Elme, and Saint Michaell, and being eighty yeares old, died the first of September, 1558. hauing gouerned sixteene yeares, ten months, and 15 daies, and was buried in the Great Maisters Chappell.

1558 46 Claudius de la Single, borne in Fraunce, was next created Great Maister, and at his election

tion, there were then preſent at Malta, aboue 400 Knights of the Order. Hee gouerned verie diſcreetly, by Counſell of fiue woorthie Knights his Officers, and attendaunts, (to witte:) by his Steward, Maiſter of the Houſhold, Maiſter of the Horſſe, the Treaſurer, and Secretary. So that the Order was in great happyneſſe, during the time of his Maiſter-ſhip, hauing obtayned the priuiledge of Neutralitie, of King Henry the ſecond, and Charles the fifte Emperor, who made Warre againſt him. Hee was verye valiant, Religious, and a moſt profitable Adminiſtrator of the Orders reuennewes, in whoſe Treaſurie he left abundant ſtore: dying of a Catarrhe, which had much ſuffocated him, after he had attained to the Climacteriall yeare 63. of his age.

47 F. Iohn de Valette, borne in Prouence, ſucceeded next as great Maiſter, and his election was very pleaſing to all the Order of S. Iohn, becauſe he was generally beloued of all the Nations, and vniuerſally deſired, as moſt woorthie of that charge and dignity. In leſſe ſpace then two yeares, hee was Generall of the Gallyes, Bayliffe of Lango, Great Commander, Priour of S. Gilles, and Lieutenant to the great Maſter, and now at length great Maiſter alſo. He did ſo affect his Knights & Order, that, after the day he firſt entred in it, he wold neuer more return into his country. So that, by making continuall reſidence ther with them, he paſſed thorow al the degrees & offices of honor in the profeſſion: apearing 1561.

ſtill

still (in all his actions) to bee of rare iudgement, perfect integrity, and incomparable valour. So soone as he was aduanced to this soueraigne dignity, he resolued to builde a new Citty at Malta, vpon the Mountaine of S. Elme, knowing, that al the other Forts were not sufficiently munited, to endure the battery of a potent enemy: yet this desseigne was deferred till a further time. Hee fortified the Castle of the Isle of Goza, and (forsaking his abiding at the Castle of S. Angello) came and dwelt within the Towne of Malta, which he defended most valiauntly, against the siedge of the Emperor Sultan Soliman, when he was greeuously wounded in his leg, in the yeare 1565. But the siedge being raised, to the shame and confusion of the Turkes, hee greatly strengthened the Isle of Malta, and began to builde the new Citty, which was called Valette, according to his sur-name, and whereof himselfe solemnely laide the first stone, on Monday, the eight and twenty of March, 1566. And by the sollicitude of the Great Maister, the building thereof continued on still, eight thousand persons being daylye imployed therein, and fiue hundred thousande Crownes monthly paid to the workemen. At length, the one and twenty of August, 1568. the Great Maister died, on the like day as hee was promoted to his place, hauing gouerned eleauen yeares, fully compleat.

A new Citty builte at Malta on S. Elemes Mount.

1568

48 After the obsequies of Valette, the Great Maister, they proceeded to elect a new successor, which was Pedro de Mente, an Italian borne, t

Prior

Priour of Capua. Immediately after his promotion to the Maiſter-ſhip, hee cauſed his predeceſſors body to be carried into the new Citty, and to be honorably buried in the Chappell of our Ladie of Victory, for he worthily deſerued to be ſurnamed the Father of Souldiours, the Shielde and defender of the Catholicke faith, and the great perſecutor or queller of proude Infidelles. This newe Great Maiſter, before hee attained to ſo high degree, had made good proofe of his Wiſedome and valour, in ſundry other honorable and worthy offices. For he was firſt, Patron of the Gally, which was Captaine or Commaunder of the band: Nert, Lieutenant General of the gallies, Caſtillion or gouernor of the Caſtell S. Angello at Rome; he was then Admiral nert Generall of the whole Fleet, and Ambaſſador for the Order to the Popes Pius the fourth, and Pius the fift. Hee came from Rome to Malta, when he was choſen great Maiſter, and followed hys charge ſo effectually, that the new Citty was finiſhed, and thither he purpoſed to tranſferre the dwelling of the Order. For the good Olde-man thought it as great honour, to dwell in the newe Cittie and make it habitable, as it was for his predeceſſour Valette to builde it. In his time, the memorable Nauall battaile of Lepanto was fought, and victorie obtained againſt the Turks, wherin the Knights of the Order did many worthy actions of armes. The great Maiſter deceaſing at Malta

49 Iohn, Biſhop of Caſſiera, borne in Auuergn, 1572
did

did next succeed him, in the yeare, 1572. Before his election to this office, his vertue had appeared in diuers waighty charges. For, at the enterprize of Zoara, he was Ensigne-bearer to the Order, & defended the Standard very woorthily, bringing it backe with him to Malta, when both it & himselfe were smitten into the sea: yet both of them saued by a Gally belonging to the order, after he had a long time fought vndauntedly against the Infidels. Some after, hee was chosen Captaine general of the horsemen: Commissary of the fortifications, then, Marshall of the Order, and now last great Maister, wherein he liued very vertuously, not letting any day passe him, without som especial peece of seruice, and feeding (with his own hands) thirteene poore men. With his owne mony, he builded the great Church dedicated to S. Iohn Baptist, in the new City of Valette, endowing it with a thousand Crownes of annuall Reuennues: erecting also a goodly Sepulchre, for interring therein the bodies of the great Maisters his predecessors. There happened some discontentment betweene the Knights and him, which shortning his daies, he died.

1582 50 And the twelfth of January, 1582. Hugues de Loubenx Verdale, borne in Prouence, was elected great Maister. He was but a yong knight, yet both learning and military knowledge shined clearly in him: For he was in the attempt at Zoara, where he declared himselfe to be truely valiant, and had many honorable Offices imposed vpon him. He dying,

51 Martin

51 Martin Garzes, a natiue of Arragon, ſuc- 1595.
ceeded him next as great Maiſter. Hee qualified the diſcontentmentes amongſt his Brethren-Knights, and toke away thoſe Taxes, which had bin impoſed, and interdicted (for a time) the officers of the order, to giue a new forme to his owne gouernement, and to the good liking of all the the Knights. He did expreſſely prohibit, that not any Knight (nor the Great Maiſter himſelfe) might particularly haue any ſhippe on the Sea) to vſe any Pyracies for his owne profit. He died alſo at Malta, and lieth buried in the Sepulchre of the great Maiſters.

52 The Knights aſſembling for a new electi- 1601
on, the tenth of Februrary, 1601. Aloph de Vignacourt, born in France, was created great maiſter. In the yeare 1566. hee comming to Malta, with great ſtore of other French Gentlemen, vpon a flying rumor, that the Iſle was likely to bee beſieged againe by the Turkes Armie, entered into the order, vnder the Great Maiſter Valette, receiuing (afterwarde) ſundrie great charges, wherein his wiſedome and man-hoode was euidently diſcerned: hauing bin Captain of the citty of Valette, and not long after, great hoſpitaller of the Order. He yet continueth in the office of great Maiſter, a great comfort (wee hope) to Chriſtendom, & a terror to the Othomans Empire, whenſoeuer they ſhall attempt the hurte of the Iſle of Malta, where the famous memorie, of that ancient Order of Knight-hood of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem, is ſtill kept and maintained.

Knights

¶ The ſeuerall Orders of Knight-hood, both Eccleſiaſticke and Secular; as they haue beene, and are yet honoured in this Chriſtian World.

Eccleſiaſticall orders.

*Knights of Saint Iames of Compoſtella.*

1070 IN the yeare 1070. this Order of Knight-hood began in Spaine, after that Ramirus had won the moſt famous victory, in ỹ Prouince of Compoſtella, againſt the Moores.

At firſt, their number conſiſted but of thirteen, and it was lawfull for them to take Wiues. There was a cheefe man choſen of this Order, by the Name of Great Maiſter; who (together with the other thirteene) had power to elect other Knights.

The badge or note of honor of this knight-hood, was a red Croſſe, carrying the forme of a downe pointed Sword. At the Feaſt of All-Saints was their meeting appointed, that they might conferre about their affaires. Many yeares haue they continued, with many priuiledges, and ſcarcely any but they (called Auguſtines) holde any ſuch lawes.

Knights

## ¶ Knightes of Saint Johns of Ieruſalem, who were afterward Knights of the Rhodes, and at this day are called Knights of Malta.

IN the yeare 1099. the Citty of Hieruſalem being recouered againſt the impulſions of the Infidels, by Godfrey of Bullen, Duke of Lorraine: About that very time, a certaine Hoſpital was erected by the Chriſtians in Hieruſalem, conſecrated by the name of Saint Iohn Baptiſt, for the entertainement of Pilgrims. Soone after, was this Order of Knight-hood inſtituted, and the firſt Rector or Ruler was called Gerard, and the next after him Raimond. Theſe knights wore a blacke Garment, with a Croſſe Argent, in a field Gules vpon their breaſts. 1099

In the yeare 1308. being enforced from their former abyding by the Turks, & the Ile Rhodes graunted them by Pope Clement the fift, they were (in that regard) called Knights of Rhodes. 1308.

In the yeare 1523. Rhodes being wonne from them, Malta was affoorded them; whereon to this day they are called Knights of Malta. 1523.

The duty of this Knight-hoods-order, was, to fight for the Chriſtian Faith, to releeue the oppreſſed, to defend Widowes and Orphanes, &c. Nor was any one to bee admitted into this Order, that was deſcended of a Moore, Iew, Mahumetiſt, or any ſuch ignoble race.

Knights

## ¶ Knights Templers, or Knights of the Temple.

ANno Domi. 1117. Gotfredus Aldemarus Alexandrinus, and Hugo de Planco de Paganis (Godfrey Duke of Lorraine, and King of Hierusalem beeing dead, and Baldwine then raigning) this order of Knight-hood first began; And a seat was graunted them in the Temple of Hierusalem, whereupon, they were cald knights Templers, or Knights of the Temple. 1117.

By entreaty of Stephen, Patriarch of Ierusalem, Pope Honorius brought in this order, and confirmed their Society; giuing them a white garment, whereunto Eugenius the third added a red Crosse on the breast.

The charge of these Knightes, was, to guide trauailers on the way of Ierusalem, and to entertaine strangers.

Anno Domini 1310. Clement the fift (who then helde his Sée in Fraunce) by perswasion of Phillip King of Fraunce, gaue order for the vtter subuersion of this Knight-hoods Society, and all their Colledges, thorough-out our Christian world, wheresoeuer they were builded: in regard of a most abhominable treachery, by them intended and ratified. 1310

## Knights Teutons, or Knights of Allemaigne.

SOone after that Hierusalem was regained from the Christians, one Teuto a Noble-man,

man, and abounding in riches; inſtituted this Society of Knight-hood, building an houſe, (for their entertainment) at Ieruſalem, called *Hoſpitium virgini Mariæ.*

Among this Order of Knight-hood, neyther Knight of Malta, nor any other, except a Germain (and he likewiſe to be Noble by birth) could be receiued into their degree. Their garment was white, and a blacke Croſſe figured vppon their breaſts.

In the yeare 1184. theſe Knightes (the Cittie of Hieruſalem being ſurpriſed by the Sarrazins) Ptolomais was graunted them: but beeing likewiſe driuen thence, they came into their Country of Germany.

In the yeare 1220. they entreated Frederick the ſecond, Emperour, that he would ſuffer them to take Armes againſt certaine fugitiue Idolaters in Pruſſia: who beeing by them ſubdued, they obtained there a newe ſeating, and their Dition or Lordſhip of Liuonia was then added to them.

## ¶ Calatranian Knights, or Knights of Calatrana.

IN the yeare 1130. this Order of Knight-hood was inſtituted by Santio King of Toledo, in imitation of the Order of Saint Iames. 1130

Theſe Knights tooke the name of Calatrana, which was a place granted vnto them, where (in former times) had ſtood a Church, that belonged

to the Knights Templers: And when the Sarazins were ouer-powerful for them, those knights were constrayned to surrender this place vnto them.

These Knights did weare a blacke Garment, with a red crosse vpon their breast; and were said to be of the Cisternian Order, holding in Spayne very large possessions.

## ¶ Knights of Alcantara.

1150 THese Knights held their name of a Citty in Castile, called Alcantara, and were of the Cisternian Order.

They had a goodly Temple neere to the Ryuer Tagus, where they held very ample possessions.

Their Enligne or Badge was a greene Crosse.

## ¶ Knights of the Redemption.

1212 IN Anno Dom. 1212. this Order was instituted by Iames King of Arragon, who conquered the Islands called Baleares, or Maiorque and Minorque in the Spanish Sea.

It was the Office of these Knights, to redeeme Captiues, whereuppon, the Tytle of Redemption was giuen them: they were also called Knights of Marie.

These Knights Order was confirmed by Gregory the ninth, By thoppe of Rome: And they wore a white Garment with a blacke Crosse vpon it.

Knights

¶ Knights of Monteſia.

THis order was inſtituted, much about that very ſame time, as the Knights of Calatrana were. 1160.

They derived their name from Monteſia in Valentia, where was their place of abiding.

The Enſigne of theſe Knights was a red croſſe.

¶ Knights of the holy Sepulcher.

THeſe Knightes (who derived their name of Chriſts Sepulcher) did wear two red croſſes. 1219

This order (at this day) is quite extinct, or (as ſome do imagine) the Order of the Knightes of Malta is ſaid to be ſomewhat neere it.

¶ Knights of Chriſt.

IN Anno Dom. 1320. this order was inſtituted by Iohn the twentith, Bychop of Rome. 1320

The place of theſe Knights abyding, was in Portugall.

A blacke garment, and a double Croſſe, were the Enſignes of this Knighthoods order.

¶ Knights of Saint Marie, the Mother of Chriſt.

CErtaine Noblemen of Bolognia and Modena in Italy, being much troubled and mo- 1294

lested by perturbations among the Princes, desired of Vrbane the fourth, Bishop of Rome, that they might be suffered to begin some kind of Society. Whereupon this order was graunted them, to holde in free and peacefull manner.

A little red Crosse, reflected with Golde, they wore vpon their breasts.

These Knights did weare costly Garmentes, and fared delicately: whereuppon they were vulgarly called by the Italians, Frati Gaudenti.

They might not weare any gilt Spurs, or vse any Gold on their Horses furniture.

## ¶ Knights of Saint Lazarus of Hierusalem.

1048 THis Order was confirmed, or (as some will haue it) restored by Pius Quartus. And yet the Knightes of this Order, (are saide to bee) in the times of Basilius, and Pope Damasus, when Iulian the Apostata raigned, and then they flourished, as some do affirme.

The Ensigne or Imprese of this Order, was a græn Crosse, worn on the left side of the breast.

A man twice married might not bee admitted into this order.

## ¶ Knights of the round Table.

The Secular Orders. IN Anno Domini 516. Arthur, a worthy and Warlike King, raigning in the Isle of Brittaine,

taine, the Countrey beeing infeſted and troubled with Armies of Saxons, &c. was yet (by him) very valiantly ſuppoꝛted, and his fame out-ſtretched to the remoteſt Regions. Afterward, when peace was eſtabliſhed; that other Knightly mindes might bee inflamed with the like gloꝛy: this Oꝛder hee inſtituted, which contynued (with others) in long and honourable obſeruation.

The Oꝛder of theſe Knightes was (eſpecially) in the Citty of VVincheſter, as ſome haue recoꝛded; and theyꝛ yeaꝛely meeting was there, at the Feaſt of Pentecoſt oꝛ Whitſontide.

## ¶ Knights of the Garter.

IN the yeare 1349. Edward the third, King of England, hauing hadde verie great victories againſt the French, and other neighbouring Nations, did inſtitute this Oꝛder, and conſecrated it to S. George. 1349

The King appointed a Garter to be the Enſign of this Oꝛder, wꝛought richly with Golde and pꝛecious ſtones, which ſhould circle the Leg beneath the knee, and on it to haue theſe woꝛds apparantly diſcerned:

HONI. SOIT. QVI. MAL. Y. PENSE.

The number of theſe Knights are 26. whereof the King himſelfe is the chiefe.

The time of this Societies meeting, is the

feast of Saint George, and celebrated at Windsore.

These Knightes doe weare the Enſigne of S. George, (fighting with a Dragon) faſtened to a rich Chaine or Collar, which weigheth or valueth, neither more or leſſe then eighty pounds of Engliſh Money, as hath beene ſaide in former times. Their garments is Purple, with a redde Croſſe.

¶ Knights of the Starre.

1350 ANno Dom. 1350 Iohn King of Fraunce, being much mooued with the glory of Edward the third, King of England; did inſtitute this order of Knight-hood, entitling it by thoſe 3 *Magi*, who (going from the Eaſt to honour Chriſt) were guided by a Starre.

The Enſigne of this Order was a Starre, ſet eminently in the Hat: and the wordes were

*Monſtrant Regibus Aſtra Viam.*

The founder of this order, beeing much moleſted with the difficulties happening in warre; could not perfect what hee had inſtituted. And therefore (within a ſhort while after) this Order ceaſed.

¶ Knightes of the Band.

1367 IN the yeare 1367. this Order was inſtituted by Alphonſus King of Spaine, the Sonne of Ferdinand and Conſtance.

These

These Knights did weare a certaine red scarffe or Band, of three Fingers breadth, which (like a scole) was fastned on the left Shoulder, and so come vndeneath the right Arme, thwart the body.

Into this Order, younger borne Brethren onely (of Noble descent and Family) and none of the elder, might be admitted.

Many Articles (belonging to this order, and to bee obserued by these Knightes) are at large set downe by Sansouino.

¶ Knights of the Annunciation.

ANno Dom. 1409. Amades or Amadeus, as some write, the first, surnamed The greene Earle of Sauoy, deuised this Order, who were tearmed Knights of the virgin Mary, and for this reason instituted: because Amades the first Earle of Sauoy, (with wonderfull fortitude) defended Rhodes against the Turkish powers, in his memory it was thus celebrated. 1409

A Chaine or Collar (such as Knightes vse to weare, made of Gold and Siluer plates, and fastened together with little linkes) each man had about his necke, with these Letters engrauen thereon, F. E. R. T. that is, *Fortitudo eius Rhodũ tenuit*. Thereat hung also (by another small Chaine) the Picture of the Virgine Mary, with the Angels salutation.

## ¶ Knights of the golden Fliece.

1429. IN the yeare 1429. Phillip, sir-named the good Duke of Burgundie, instituted this Order, and dedicated it vnto Saint Iames.

The number these Knightes were twenty foure, whereof the Duke of Burgundy was the chiefe.

They vsed to weare the Picture of a Golden Sheepe, affixed to a Chaine, inter-wouen like flames of fire.

Charles the warrelike Duke of Burgundy (who also is sayde by euery one, to bee the first Founder of this Order) added thereunto these words: *Ante ferit, quam flamma micet.*

But now at this day, the Knights haue these words: PRETIVM NON VILE LABORVM.

## ¶ Knights of Saint Michaell.

1469 IN the yeare 1469. Lewes, the eleauenth King of Fraunce, instituted this Order at Amiens, and dedicated it to S. Michaell.

The beginning of this Society, consisted of a Band of Men, to the number of thirty fiue, the very cheefest and Noblest Peeres of the kingdome, beeing Knights cleare from all detection; and the very cheefe of them was the King himselfe.

At this day, there are a great number of these Knights

Knightes, and the kingdome of Fraunce is not now so respective in their election, as at the first.

These knights weare a Chaine of gold daily, wouen like little shelles, valewing two hundered Crownes: And thereat hangeth the picture of Saint Michaell, fighting with the Deuill, the Wordes beeing these, Immensi tremor Oceani.

These knights did vse to meet euerie yeare, at the Feast of S. Michaell, in the Church of S. Michaell on the Mount.

Their garments by Henry the second, king of France, were apointed in very honorable maner.

## Knights of S. Stephen.

In the yeare, 1561. this Order was instituted by Cosmo de Medices, Duke of Florence, and the same confirmed by Pius Quartus. 1561.

The Ensigne of these knightes, was a redde Crosse, worne on a blacke garment.

The Statutes of this Order, do not much differ from them of Malta knights: and they were allowed to haue wiues.

The Duke of Florence, is alwayes the chiefe of this Order, and it is not to be censured by anie of the religious degrees, but properly it doth hold a freedome in liberty.

## Knights of the Holy-Ghost.

In the yeare, 1578. Henry the third, king of France, 1578

France, instituted this Order, and named it of the Holy-Ghost: the memory whereof, was to be celebrated in the time of Pentecost: vpon which day, the King was borne, and succeeded also in the Kingdome. These Knights are an hundered in number, and the King him-self is the President.

This Feast is celebrated yearely the first day of January, in the Augustines Church in Paris, by the Parisians.

The Ensigne of these Knights, is a Doue (in which forme the Holy-Ghost appeared) in midst of a Crosse.

The last or lowest degree of Knight-hode, is theirs, who (as reward of their Vertues) haue golden Spurres put on their heeles, and vulgarly are called Knights.

Concerning Knights Bannerets, who hadde that Title giuen them by the Kings of England in Warre: And Knights of the Bath, they beeing also created by the Kings of that kingdome: because they are of another Nature, I passe them ouer, without vsing any further speech of them.

## ¶ Of the Emperor of Ethyopia, called Prete-Ian, or Prester-Iohn: Of his Originall, and customes of his people.

*Sabellic. lib. 8. de Suplem. Chron.*

THe great Emperor of Ethyopia, to whome wee (corruptly) giue the name Prester, or Presbiter Iohn, is neither Priest or Sacrificer, though

though he be (by ſome) called Prete-Ian, and (by his owne people) named Beldugian, that is to ſay, Ioy of incomparable excellency, or of moſt great value, and by others of them, he is alſo called Ian, which (in their language) ſignifyeth Mighty. He commandeth ouer ſeuenty and two Kinges, who are all of different languages, hauing their diuerſity of cuſtomes, and the colour of their faces or complexions are much diſagreeing. He is able to levie in preparation for war, a million of fighting men: fiue hundred Elephantes, with their armour and munition for encounter, with an infinit number of Horſes and Camelles. His Knights or warlike Souldiors, enter armed to the battell each wearing a long coat of Maile, ſtretching downe cloſely to their thighes a Sallet or head-peece on the head, a round Target or Pauois, a crooked Fauchion by his ſide, and a Launce with two Steele points or Pikes. Such as haue no Sallets or head-pieces, do wear thick red quilted Cappes on their heades, plated after the manner of the Mameluke Souldiors. The younger ſort carried Darts, Arrows and Slings, obſeruing the ſame diſcipline, and be as obedient or well gouerned in ranging their battails as we are. They vſe Drummes of Braſſe, and Trumpets alſo, to incourage their ſouldiors to the fight, which is performed with great hardiment, appointing likewiſe ſundry honours and reſpective rewards, to ſuch as declare themſelues to bee of higheſt merit. They do daily pay the families of their warriors, and marke the children that are borne

The power of Prester-Ian.

His ſouldiers Armour for their defence.

borne of them, with a Crosse, which they imprint suddenly in the flesh with an hot yron, so that the signe remayneth, as if it were naturall vnto them.

The exercise of the King Prete-Ian.

The King himselfe most commonly called Prete-Ian, after he hath bestowed some houres about State affayres, when he perceiueth that he is indifferently eased of them: he imployeth almost al the remainder of his time, in the study of holye Readings and Histories, which being doone, he vseth a litle exercise of the body, and then entring into his Bath, afterward hee takes his refection, alone by himselfe (as most of our Kings vse to do) vpon a little Table of Golde, without any Cloth or Napkin, and it is set in such a place as there are diuers steppes or degrees in ascending to it. He is serued by sundry Pages, who are of noble birth, and they bring him his meat (ready cut and prepared) in little Baskets or Panyers. He drinketh wine in a cup of gold, but hee hath another kinde of drink, made of sower Apples, and mingled with Suger, which he receiueth in a cuppe of Christall. While he feedeth, three hundred lusty young men (chosen out of the seuerall kingdomes vnder his Dominion, hauing the place of Archers, and of his Guarde) do stand round about the Tent-Royall: For, by an ancient custome it hath beene kept, that the King continually liueth out of any Citty, wherein he neuer abydeth but two dayes onely, and those Tents are erected in such manner, that the backe part is euermore placed to the East, and the dore or opening is oppo-

His dyet & manner of life.

site

ſite to the Weſt.

The vſuall Armes or weapons of thoſe guards, are Swords, Daggers, and Iauelinges, their neckes and ſhoulders being gorgetted with thick ſkinnes of Beaſts. Foure Kings, who (by commandement) do attend the Court, followe (each after the other) the Table ſeruice, accompanyed with many Barons and meaner Officers, euen from the Kitchin, to the Tent of Prete-Ian, all cloathed in ſilke, Seudal and Scarlet: And there they deliuer it to the Pages, who come forth to receiue it. The King and all his Court fare deliciouſly, with Fowle, Fiſh, and all kinds of Veniſon. So ſoon as he hath dined (for he neuer ſups but on Feſtiuall daies) his Eunuches go to fetch diuers Quéenes (according to their ſeueral quarters, being the Wiues of the fore-named Kings, to waite on the Quéene and Wife to Prete-Ian, conducting her vnto his Tent, to giue him pleaſure and contentment, and there they ſing and Daunce in his preſence. Hee hath foure wiues, who are the daughters of his Neighbour-Kings, but he lodgeth but with one of them, to whom he is ſolemnly married with many Ceremonies: but if it chance, that he haue no children by her, then he cals to his bed one of the other.

The attendance and ſeruice of the Emperor.

The wiues of the Emperor.

When hee purpoſeth to ſhew himſelfe in publique, his face is couered with a Vayle of Taffata, which hee lifteth vppe and pulleth downe, that hardlie can his face bee wholly diſcerned: but if it be, it is very quickly couered againe. He vſeth to ſhewe himſelfe vnto the people, three times

times in the yeare, that is to say, on the dayes of Christmasse, Easter, and the holy Crosse in September. and (for this purpose) is a goly high scaffold duly prepared. The cause of this ceremony, receiued Originall from Dauid Prete-Ian, Surnamed Alexander, whose death was three whole yeares concealed by his chiefe Seruants, that gouerned the kingdome in his time. Therefore, to auoide all the like succeeding inconueniences, the father of Dauid Prete-Ian, at the earnest intreaties of his people, began first to shew himselfe on these ordained daies, which hath continually euer since been obserued, euen to Panusius Prete-Ian, which is nowe raigning in Ethiopia: onely excepted, when hee marcheth in warre, for then he goeth daily discouered. He is crowned with a precious Diadem, the one part whereof is Gold, and the other Siluer, and carrieth (insteade of a Scepter) a Crosse of Siluer in his hand: All his Seruants are marked with a Crosse, in the verie flesh on the right shoulder. Hee is cloathed with rich garments of frizeled Cloath of Golde, wearing a shirte of silke, with very large and wide sleeues, as Dukes in elder times were woont to do: And from the Girdle downward he weareth a wide Kirtle of silke and cloath of golde, with a Linnen couer-ture after a Bishoppes manner. On either side of him goe two Pages, richly apparrel'led, each holding a Crosse of Siluer in the one hand, and a naked sword in the other.

The Originall of the Ceremony

The Emperors Crown Scepter, and habit.

His Lords, who are as Kings, and carrie that Title, do pay him tribute of Gold and other metals

tals, of hoꝛſſes and great Cattle of ſeueral kinds: likewiſe of cloath of Gold, and of woll, accoꝛding to the quality and beſt Nature, of thoſe countries that are vnder theyꝛ gouernment: which rightes and Tributes they haue from their Subiects, although they bee vaſſailes (indæde) to none but Prete-Ian, himſelfe and to whom they yælde the greater part of their ſubſtance. Some do pay him large quantities of Coꝛne, and of Salte, foꝛ the maintaining of his Armies: Others doo bring him Pepper, which is a rare commodity in that Country. and ſome do pay him ſlaues. The Ruſtickes oꝛ countrey Boꝛres, who liue in the wilde and ſilde-frequented Foꝛreſts, do bring vnto the Court, great ſtoꝛe of Lyons, Tygres, and other liuing ſauage beaſts, which are afterwarde ſhut vp into apt apointed places, to yælo pleaſure and delight to him and his Pꝛinces. As foꝛ ſuch as dwell further off from the Court, it is ſufficient foꝛ them to bring the ſkinnes of ſuch beaſts only wherewith the Abyſſines do (in a bꝛauery cloth) themſelues, when they go to warre.

The Emperors tribute by his Kings.

Tributes in generall of his people.

This Great Emperour Prete-Ian, gouerneth many Countries, and boundleſſe Seas, whereof, becauſe this place alloweth me not to make any large diſcourſe, as alſo of the maine matters of State concerning his kingdoms: I referre ye to the Generall Hiſtory of the Worlde, where, whatſoeuer I am compelled in this Chꝛonicle to abꝛeuiate (not onely of this Emperoꝛ, but of all other kingdomes whatſoeuer) ſhall bee at large deſcribed. Let it ſuffice then, that I cloſe vp this repoꝛt,

repoꝛt, with the onely gloꝛies of Prete-Ian, and his Ethyopians, which are, that they doo repute themselues to be the very ancientest Nation, among men, because they haue alwaies liued in their innated liberty, and were neuer conquered, either by Semyramis, noꝛ Hercules, noꝛ Dyonisius, noꝛ the Romaines: but that they themselues vanquished King Cambyses, and ouerthꝛew his potent army. Hereto they adde a moꝛe true and eminent gloꝛy indede, which is, that they were one of the first Nations, in receipt of the Chꝛistian faith, wel neere from the very beginning therof. By meanes of the Eunuch to the famous Queene Candace, who was baptized by S. Phillip: And that since their conuersion, they haue constantly kept the same Religion, foꝛ so manie hundꝛeds of yeares. Albeit that during this time they haue bene generally (euen as yet they are at this day) molested, assaulted, and enuyꝛoned with Moores, Sarrazins, and the Idolatrous Woꝛshippers of Mahomet, yet notwithstanding all those cruell Tempests (which heretofoꝛe destroyed the Romaine Empire, and the very greatest part of Chꝛistendome) Ethiopia could neuer hitherto bee spoyled, either of their Dominion oꝛ Religion, albeit som Idolatrous mixture hath crept thereinto. Which is the lesse to be maruailed at, if we may credit their owne saying, in alledging their constancy and antiquitye, because they deriue this their noble Oꝛiginall and continuance, from the Royall Kinges Dauid and Salomon, of whom the most blessed Virgin Marie

The onely glories of Prete-Ian his Ethyopians.

Whence the Ethyopians de deriue their antiquity.

Ma-

(Mother to our Sauiour) deſcended, and he himſelfe according to the fleſh: Of whom they keepe a very ſolemne memory, and (aboue any other of the Apoſtles) thinke reuerently of S. Thomas the Apoſtle.

## Of the Kingdome of Perſia.

PErſia hath carried the ſame name, from the beginning to this day, containing in it theſe Regions, Lar and Requelmall. The principall Citty thereof is called Siras, in elder times tearmed Perſipolis, which is gouerned by the Sophy, Great Lord of all Perſia, and Azimia, called by our elders Aſſiria; and the Kingdom of Dearbech, ſometime named Meſopotamia; And Seroan, that was Media; and Parthia, now called Iex; with Hirca, nowe tearmed Coraxan; Sarmania, nowe Dulcendano; and Aſia, nowe at this inſtant called Hetti. All theſe ſeuerall Regions, with the greater Armenia, which is a part alſo of them, are gouerned by the great Sophy, and their greateſt or chiefeſt Cittie is named Tauris, being built in the midſt of the Mountain Taurus, foure daies iourney off from the Caſpian Sea. Next vnto Tauris, there are other Cittyes, as of Soltauia, Concaſſan, Spahan, Corazan, Lera, Mora, Sarmachand, Geſti, Far, Siras, and Ormuz, a Citty in the Perſick Sea, which at this day is called Mare Miſindia. In this Citty is great commerce of Merchandize, made with the Portugales, and there they fiſh for great aboun-

The chiefe Citty of Perſia.

The gouernment of the great Sophy.

Fiſhing for Pearles.

dance of Pearles. There are other Citties also, Curch, Iex, Casmine, Coy, with infinite Castles. On the West side of Tauris are the Caspian Mountaines, which are nowe called the Mountains of Arath; And on the Bacchan Sea, aunciently named the Caspian Sea, are these Citties, Sumacchia, Derbent, Bacchan, and Mamutaga. All these Prouinces and their Regions, are very barren, because they haue small store of Riuers, the greatest whereof is called Bindarin, but in former times they entitled it Bragada. Concerning the gouernment obserued among the Persians, it differs farre from all the other Mahumetists; because they hate Nobility, and relying on the seruile fidelity of slaues, eyther murther their Friendes and Kindred, or put out their eyes. But among the Persians, the Sophy is highly respected, Nobility had in Honour, and many wealthy Lordes are liuing amongst them, whereof not one is to bee found in the Turkish Dominions. The people also are the very ciuillest in all Asia, men of vndaunted courage, and speciall good Warriours, both on Horse-backe and foote: affecting Musique, Learning and Poesie, wherein some attaine to no meane excellency, and they are much addicted to the study of Astrology. So much in briefe concerning the Persians, the rest remaineth to our Generall History of the World.

Of the Persian gouernment, and nature of the people.

¶ Of

## ¶ Of the Kingdome of Thunis.

THE Citty of Thunis or Tunis being very great, was by the Latines called Tunetum, and of the Arabians Tunus: but they holde that name to be a very corrupt vocable, becauſe (in their Language) Tunus dooth not ſignifie any thing. This Cittie was anciently called Tharſus, as that other in Aſia, and was at firſt but a very little Cittie, builded by the Affricanes, vpon the Lake which was formed from the Goletta, diſtant from the Mediterranian Sea, about twelue miles. But after that Carthage was deſtroyed, then did thoſe Citties beginne to encreaſe, both in number of habitations and dwellers: in regard that the Armies which ſurprized Carthage, beeing vnwilling to tarry there (for feare of freſh ſupplyes from Europe) came to abide at Tunis, and there they builded many Houſes. Not long after, there came thither a Captaine, named Hucha di Vtmen, who gaue them to vnderſtand, that an Army ought not to ſhut vppe it ſelfe, in any Citty that ſhoulde touch or bee neere vnto the Sea: And therefore they made a Citty, which they named Cairoan, about the diſtaunce of thirty fiue miles from the Sea, and accounted to be an hundred miles from Tunis. Then did the Armies forſake Tunis, and inhabited this newe Citty; other people gouerning thoſe houſes in Tunis, that had bin abandoned by the Armirs.

The ancient name of Tunis.

Cairoan, a new Citty builded.

After this, about three hundered and fiftie yeares, the Citty of Cairoan was destroyed by the Arabians, so that the Rector or Ruler thereof fled thence into the West, and raigned in Buggia, as also ouer all the neighbouring partes: but there remained still in Tunis, a Family or kindred of the said Rector or Gouernour, fledde from Cairoan, who still possessed the same, as Soueraigne Lordes thereof. About ten yeares after, they of Buggia were expulsed by Ioseph, the son of Tessino: but beholding the humility and kindnesse of the saide Lord, they left the State vnto him, which continued in tranquility, so long as the Family of Ioseph raigned. But Abdull Mumen, King of Marocco, hauing regained Mabdia, which had beene taken by the Christians; passed homeward in his returne by Tunis, where hee tooke the gouernment vpon him: And all the time that Abdull Mumen liued, and Ioseph his Sonne, with their Successours, Iacob & Mansor, Tunis continued in peace vnder the rule of the Kinges of Marocco. After the death of Mansor, his Sonne Muhamet Ennasir, mooued Warre against the King of Spaine, but was ouercome and forced to flight, escaping backe to Marrocco, where (after this foile) hee liued but few yeares. Then was his Brother Ioseph elected King, who was slaine by certaine Souldiers to the King of Tebesin. Now in the Interim, betweene the ouerthrow of Muhament, his death, as also the murthering of his Brother Ioseph, the Arabians returned backe on Tunis, and

Cairoan destroyed by the Arabes.

Tunis gouerned by the Kinges of Marocco

and beſiedged it : But the Gouernour of Tunis, gaue notice thereof to the King of Marocco, that if he ſent him not ſome immediate ſuccour, he ſhould be conſtrayned to deliuer the Cittie to the Arabes. The King well conſidering on a caſe of ſuch importance, did as became a man of his high ſpirit and experience, electing (aboue all other in his Court) one borne in Ciuill, a Citty of Granado, named Habdulnaihidi, whom hee forth-with ſent thyther, with the ſame authority, as if he had gone himſelfe in perſon. Bæing accompanyed with twenty goodly great Shippes, he arriued at Tunis, which was then euen halfe vanquiſhed by the Arabes : But by his wiſedome, prouidence, and flowing eloquence, hee foyled the Enemy, pacified the State, ſet all thinges in good order, and made the Countries entrance ſure againſt all Intruders. After him his Sonne ſucceeded, named Abu Zaccheria, who in learning and wiſedome excelled his Father. Hæ cauſed to bæ builded in Tunis, on the Weſt ſide of the Cittyes very higheſt part, a mightie great Rocke, and many goodly Pallaces in the Cittie, with a beautifull Temple, that had an high Tower on the top thereof, round engirt with ſtrong wals.

Tunis beſiedged by the Arabes.

Tunis deliuered frō the Arabes.

This Abu Zaccheria went likewiſe to Tripoli, where his valour won him ſuch renowne, and his wiſedome made ſo good beneſite of the Countrey ; that (at his death) hæ left an infinite Maſſe of Treaſure behinde him. Hæ being dead, his Sonne ſucceeded him, who was

an ambitious proude young man, and would no longer suffer himselfe vnder command of Marocco; because he perceiued the declining and downfall of those Lords, and that the family of Marino began to get footing, raigning ouer the Regions of Fez, as Beni Zeiren did in Telensin, and in Granado. These two great Potentates beganne to warre vppon each other, and to contend for priority of State; But by this their discord; the power of the Lordes of Tunis encreased, so that they went with an Army against Telensi, and compelled them to pay them tribute. Whereupon the King that new arose from the House of Marino, and had beene at surprizall of Marocco, sent many rich presents to the Gouernour of Tunis, recommending both himselfe and his whole State vnto his fauour. The Gouernour accepted him as a Friende, alwaies prouided, that hee should be inferiour to him: And so he returned in tryumph to Tunis, causing himselfe to bee called King of Affrica, which Tytle was thought very desertfull for him, because (as then) there was not a more powerfull Prince in all Affrica, then hee. He began then to ordaine his Court Royall, with Secretarie, Councellers, and a Captaine Generall, vsing all those Ceremonies, that the Kinges of Marocco formerly had done. And from the time of this Prince, euen to our dayes, Tunis held on the same encreasing Dignity, as well in habitations as ciuility, so that it became the onely and singular Cittie of Affrica. Where now wee leaue her to our larger History, as also

The declyning of the kingdome of Marocco, & rising of that of Fez.

The King of Tunis King of Affrica.

the

the Kingdome of Fez, becauſe the Originall of the one came from the other, and therefore they are the more capable of an intire diſcourſe, which aryſeth to a very ſpacious and large quantitie: There alſo will we relate the condition and originall of ſundry other remote Kingdomes, which (for the reaſon before alleadged) are in this briefe Chronicle purpoſely omitted.

## ¶ Of the great Province of Moſcouia; As alſo the Manners, Religion, and power of the Prince their ruling.

MOſcouia is a very great Northerly Region, containing more then fiue hundered leagues in length: The principall Citty thereof beeing called Moſca, or Moſcuua, greater then the Citty Paris in Fraunce, and ſeated on the Riuer Moſqua. There is a large Stone ſquared, in the middeſt of the Cittie, whereon whoſoeuer can mount himſelfe (without beating down) in the vacancy of the Crowne; he is held as Prince of the Countrey, and obtayneth the principality: For very great fightes and combates, the Inhabitants haue had one againſt another, about the mounting on that ſtone. Hee that comes to be Prince of the Countrey, dooth not call himſelfe King, but Duke, being contented with that popular name, and differeth not in Garments from the other Noble-men of the land, ſaue only, that he weareth a higher bonnet.

A ſtrange election of the duke of Moſcouia.

Concerning the Countrey.

It is a Countrey rich in Siluer, and so stronglie guarded thorow out, that not onely straungers, but their owne natiue people likewise, can passe no way without the Princes Letters. The countrey is flat and plaine, without any Mountains: therefore, that which is saide of the Ryphean Mountaines, and that they are in this Countrey is meerely fabulous, for there is not any such hill at all. There are great store of Forrests, abounding with wilde Beasts, which are daily chased: and great profite is made (by Trafficke) for the skinnes of those Beasts, as of Harts, Wolues, Ermines, Martines, Zubelines, Fouoynes, and diuers others. This Prouince confineth Liuonia on the one side, Tartaria, on the other, & on the third quarter it hath the Euxine Sea: containing many other Prouinces to it, so that the Prince can (in very few daies) leuie foure hundered thousand men on foote, to begin warre withall. They drinke nothing but a kinde of Beere, and yet none but the rich may drinke thereof, for they haue no Wine, but what is brought from other countries. They be subiect to drunkennes, as all other Northerly people are, and Winter is there so sharpe, long and extreame, that if any Water be hurled vp into the Ayre, it freezeth before it can fall to the earth. Their Corne neuer perfectly ripens, but when they haue reaped it, they dry it in their stoues or hot-houses, and then grinde it. The Spring time is very colde with them and their Summer, which lasteth but two months onely, is extreamly hot. They haue not

Men for the Warre.

Their drink and Corne.

any

any vſe of money, but inſtead thereof, they haue plates of Gold or ſiluer ſquared, without anie marke or ſtampe thereon, which is taken for as much as it weigheth in merchandize. As for their Garments, they go cloathed like Turks, in long Gownes or Robes, hauing narrow ſleeues, and girded about their middle: Their buildings and manner of life, differeth very little from them of Poland and Bohemia. They are Chriſtians like vnto the Greekes, receiuing order of Prieſt-hood from the Patriarche of Conſtantinople, ſaying Seruice in their Temples in their vulgar toong, which is the Sclauonian Language, and their Carracters are Greeke.

Their money.

Their Religion.

The abiding of the Prince, is in a goodly great Pallace, in the Citty of Moſcuna, built after the Italian manner, being ſo ſtrong and ſpacious, as (in our times) the like is not to be found. There are in the fore-named Citty, as alſo in diuers other places, men very learned and wiſe, that did make their aboad whereas the Schooles be. The Muſcouite is Tributary to the King of Tartaria, who ouercame them in the yeare of the World, 6745. according as their Annales doo deliuer: their Chronologies are not according to our Obſeruation, in accounting after the yeares of Jeſus Chriſt. When the Tartarian Ambaſſadors doo come before the Moſcouite Prince, hee ſtandeth bare headed before them, and they ſit couered. He hath (wel-neere) daily Warres againſt the Polonois and Scythian, who albeit they are ſubiects to other Kings, yet doth he much enlarge his domini-

The Princes Court.

Learned men amõg them.

His daily warres.

minions ouer them. Now, although (as we said at the first) these Princes contented them-selues with the name of Duke, vntill the time of hys Father now raigning: yet would he néeds vsurp the name of King, giuing himselfe these ensuing Titles, as his Son also doth the same. The great Lord Basilius, by the grace of God, king & Prince of Russia; Great Duke of Volodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, Plescouia, Sureluchia, Tuueria Iugaria, Permia, Vraquia, Bulgaria; Great Lord and Duke of the Lands in Nouagadia the lower: of Cyeruigouia, Rezauia, Riscouia, Belloya, Iaroslauia, Bieroſolia, Vdoria, Obdoria, Condidia, &c. By which large plurality of Titles, it appeareth, that he is farre more potent then some haue immagined him to be. But concerning his vassailage to the King of Tartars, he holdes it no dishonor to him, for he doth it to this end: That, while hee keepeth peace with him, hee bringeth (much more easily) vnder his obedience, all the neere neighboring people, and with the power of the great Tartare, he is ten times stronger then of himselfe: For the saide Tartare bringes (ordinarily) a Million of men with him to the field, al well appointed for warre, with two or three hundered peeces of Cannon, and three hundred thousand horsse, &c.

The K. of Muscouites Tules.

He is tributary to the King of the Tartars.

## Of the Kingdome of Poland.

POlonia, in elder times called Sarmatia, is said to receiue that name of the worde Pole, which

which in that Language is as much to ſay, as plaine, ſmooth, or euen: and ſo much the rather is it to bee credited, becauſe all the Countrey is plaine, ſpacious, full of thicke woodes, and verie few hilles or mountaines in it. The Earth is colde and freezing, whereby it produceth little ſtore of Wine or Oyle: but contrarywiſe, it yeeldeth much Graine, and diuers other kindes of Pulſe, &c. Of the maner and ſcituation of Polonia.

Zechus and Lechus, or Leſchus, were the firſt that euer gouerned in Polonia, or there builded any Citty & Caſtle. They both gouerned for ſome time, but after the whole race of Lechus was extirpated, the Barons of the kingdome aſſembling to giue ſucceſſion to Leſchus, concluded to liue at liberty, and without any farther checke or controule. Neuertheleſſe, that Juſtice might be adminiſtred to the people, and they gouerned as neceſſity required: they ordained twelue Vaiuodes or Paladines, which order hath continued in that kingdome, euen to our daies, but not without great hurt to the whole land. For there was no change of theſe Officers, but the dignitye laſted their life time, although they carried themſelues badly in their authority, deſpiſing their betters, and euill entreating their Inferiours. Such as among theſe Vaiuodes, were Caſtillians, Commaunders of Caſtelles, Captaines, Judges, and ſuch like great Magiſtrates, did what themſelues pleaſed, whereby enſued, that this Kingdome could neuer haue any great progreſſion in armes, being oppreſſed by ſuch petty, and no mightie or potent The firſte Rulers of Poland.

Vayuodes, called Paladines.

potent Lords. But in no long while after, the faction of Lechus (growing in hatred of the Vaiuodes or Paladines gouernment) would needes haue one peculiar Prince: and therefore, they made choise of a worthy and valiant man, named Gracchus, who dwelt at the foote of the Sarmatian Mountaines, neere vnto the Riuer Vistula. He builded a Citty, calling it Graccouia (which is nowe corruptly named Cracouia) a Cittie greatly blessed, both in beautie and Scituation, as also infinite Marchandizes, which is there Trafficked from all Nations of the worlde, it being the Metropolis of the whole kingdome.

Gracchus the first Prince of Poland.

The race of Gracchus fayling, it returned againe to the gouernement of twelue Paladines, but with much infelicity: because, in contending for Competitors, diuers factions grewe amongst them, and (consequently) insurrections in armes to withstand one another, wherby great damage happened to the whole lande. Among these turbulent spirits, there was a Polander named Pariſlaus, a man expert in armes, of quicke apprehension, and one that could well fish in such troubled Waters. The people reuolted all to his faction, they made him their King, and he was the fift Gouernour of that Prouince, after the first Lechus or Leschus. After his death, another gallant young man succeeded him, tearmed by the Polacks, Leschus the second, who proued to be a man of singuler prudence: but made olde with time, and dying, he left it to his Sonne Leschus the third. This man made his Sonne Pompi-

Paladines chosen againe.

A King created againe.

lius

lius Legittimate, but deuided the Kingdome among twenty other, that were his Baſtards, to the great detriment of the Country. But Pompilius being legittimate, entred into the gouernment, and (leauing Cracouia) appointed his ſeate in another City, called Gneza: but finding it too molleſtuous, he tranſferred the State to another Citty, named Cruſuicza. In this Citty he died of the Stone, according as himſelfe had continually foretold: And the chiefe Lords being aſſembled in Counſell, they determined, that no more of Pompilius his ſucceſſours ſhoulde raigne ouer them: but (with one conſent) made choiſe of a Countreyman, named Piaſtus, one of no great ſtature, but ſtrong and well ſinnewed. This was the firſt branch of thoſe Kings, that continued to the time of Caſimirus the ſecond, & of Lodwick: of which ſelfeſame race, were alſo deſcended the moderne Princes of Sleſia.

Cracouia forſaken by the King.

This Piaſtus accepting the Gouernement, toke vpon him the Title of Duke onely, whoſe ſucceſſion comming at length to Boleſlaus, in the yeare, D. CCCC. XC. IX. hee was then made King by Otho the third, Emperour. But the Kingdome comming to another Boleſlaus, ſucceſſour to the former: hee was erpulſed thence, and dyed: Whereupon, the Polonians aduaunced in his place, his Brother Vladiſlaus, in the yeare, MLXXXII. by the Title of Duke. But in the yeare, MCCXCV. the Title of King was taken againe, by Primiſlaus the ſecond, who at firſt was Duke of the greater Poland, and of Pomerauia

Piaſtus refuſed the name of K calling him ſelfe Duke of Poland.

merauia or Pomerland, and so continued the succession euen to Ladislaus, the first begotten sonne of Cassimirus, who (while his Father liued) was designed to bee King of Hungaria, and of Bohemia. He toke in Marriage Anne, Daughter to the King of Fraunce, by whom hee had Lodwick and Anne. Lodwicke succeeded his Father in both his Kingdomes, and toke to Wife Marie, Sister to Charles the Emperour. But in the yeare of Christ, 1492. the Barons of Polonia (at a dyet) elected, after the Death of Casimirus, his Sonne Iohn Albertus. His continuaunce was but a while, therefore by the greater part of the Barons, Alexander Great Duke of Lithuania, was elected: who going in Armes agaynste the Tartares, dyed in Vilua, aged fine & forty yeares. Sigismond, his younger Brother, succeeded him, Anno 1500. who hadde the Title of King, Anno 1506. and made great Warre vppon the Neighbouring Nations, especially on the Moscouites, of whom he slew thirty thousand, in the yeare, 1514. He deceasing, Augustus Sigismond toke his place: and after him, Henry the thirde, Brother to Charles the ninth, King of Fraunce, was chosen and made King. But his Brother dying, and he affecting his paternall kingdome, (more then the other) forsoke Poland, and went into France to his rightfull Inheritance. The Polanders being thus forsaken, they made choise of Maximilian the second, being Emperour, to be their King: But he not resoluing to accept it, and the Kingdom standing on some doubtful tearms,

The discent of the kings of Poland.

Henry heire of France, King of Poland.

Stepha-

Stephanus Battori, Prince of Tranſiluania, being a man of great valor, came into Poland with a ſlender power, where he was created King, and ſo continueth.

## A briefe Suruay of ſundry other kingdomes, as they were (by commaund of the Emperor Iuſtinian) ſet downe in the Romaine Bookes *de Iuriſ-prudentia.*

THe Romaine Emperors, in their Imperiall Titles of honour and renowne, did not onely obſerue & giue to themſelues, the names of thoſe Prouinces wonne by them, or reduced vnder the yoke of their Empire: but likewiſe of ſuch Nations and people, as lefte theyr owne Countreyes (in abounding multitudes) and entered vppon the poſſeſſions of others, to expell and chaſe thence the Naturall Inhabitauntes, to plant there their owne abyding, by bidding them many Battailes: in ſome ſurmounting, and in others ſpeeding according to the Fortune of Warre. Of thoſe Nations, I intend to ſpeake in ſome meaſure, of their Originall, and howe they ſucceeded, becauſe (at length) they ruined the greate Romayne Empyre: whereto I am the rather induced, to inſtruct ſuch as are little ſkilled in Hiſtories (not onelye Coſmographicall, but likewiſe Geographicall) and to ſhewe them appa-

Strange nations weakned the Roman Empire.

apparantly, howe much they haue iniured the greater part of our Hemisphere.

The originall of the Gothes.

Wee will first beginne with the Gothes, because they were the first that forsoke their owne natiue Countrey, which was called Gothia, or Gothland, signifying a good Land, it being a Northerne Prouince of Germanie. This Land abounded in Graine, Fruites, Cattle, Woodes, Riuers, Mettals; but especially, in Copper, and Skinnes seruing for Furres. At all times, and as yet (at this day) is to be discerned, the Kingdom of Swessia or Sweuia, hath bin comprized vnder the Dominion of the Gothes. As the Countrey was fertile in fruites, euen so were the Women thereof likewise in Children, for, as they were strong and of great stature; so had they vsually two Children at a birth, which was the cause then, and so it yet continueth, that they had and haue more people, then can well liue together, the Country not being sufficient to find sustenance for so many. In like manner, they are very great feeders, much more then they that liue in the Easterne or Meridionall partes. The Gothes perceiuing, and aduisedly pondering on this vrgent case, they leuied the more part, of the youngest and strongest men of their Countrey, to the number of three hundred thousand; and married such as were not, to ridde themselues of the charge of Daughters, as well as of Sonnes, for the Countrey ordinarily abounded in the Feminine, more then in the Masculine Sexe. So, being well prouided of all necessaries for warre,

More people then the Countrey can feede.

and

and leauing a chiefe commander at home, of the Royal linage; they wandred abroad through the fields, to win by power, or compaſſe by loue, some new habitation wherein to liue.

The Goths wander to ſeeke a new dwelling.

Many Authors, and among the reſt Trebellius ſayth, that the firſt tidings of this their ſtraing, was vnder the raigne of the Emperour Flauius Claudius, about the yeare of Jeſus Chriſt 272. And that they paſſed thorough Allemaign, Hungary, Thrace, Greece, Gaule, and into Italy. They loſt many battailes, and wonne likewiſe as many againſt the Romaines, and other people, maintaining themſelues ſo well; that they raigned in Italie (euen in deſpight of the Italians and Emperours) the ſpace of ſeauentie one yeares, as Procopius auoucheth. At length they went into Spaine, whence afterward they would not remoue: For the Catholique Kinges of Spaine, that then raigned by ſucceſſion, and raigne yet to this preſent, were iſſued from the race and line of their Kinges, who were (indeed) very generous people. Now it is not to bee imagined, that in regard of ſuch a mightie leuy of men, the Countrey of Gothia or Gothland, or the neighbouring borders remained without Inhabitants, or the rule of Kinges: For there were then left behinde, ſo many as the Land was able to nourith, who had their Kinges in authority ouer them, and ſtrength ſufficient, to withſtand any inuaſion of the Countrey. As for the conquering Armyes abroad, they continued in Honour for a very long time, albeit they loſt great

The Goths raigne in Italy and Spaine.

The reaſon of the Gothes continuance.

more of men in battailes, encounters, surprisals, and passages of Riuers: yet were these disaduantages still supplied, by the daily birth of Children among them, because they had their wiues in all places with them. Perhaps some strangers mingled among thē, who wearing their habits, & learning their language, holp still to supply the fire of this people. Such as haue bin named *Ostrogoths*, were people issued of the same country of Gothia, or Gotteland, frō a place which is yet cald Ostrogothia: the principall Cities whereof are Scheing and Lincopt. They vsed to warre alone by themselues, being separate from the Goths, yet ranging the world according as they did.

Of the Ostrogoths.

Westrogoths.

The Westrogothes in like manner, came out of a Country cald Westrogothia, among whom the cheefest Cities, to this day, are Scaris and Verden.

Wisigothes

Wisigoths, or Bisgoths, came foorth of a Countrey named Visbi, the principall Cittie whereof is yet called Visbi. I was the more willing to make this discription; because I haue heard of diuers (who are but slenderly experienced in Cosmography) that do tearme those Ostrogoths, to bee Gothes Orientall, or of the East; and the Westrogoths, Occidentall Gothes, or dwelling in the West, and so contrary wise of the other. Albeit they were all descended and came out of the kingdome of Gothia, or Gotteland, as Munster hath very well obserued.

The errour of some yeung Cosmographers

Of the Vandales.

The Vandales, in the estimation of Procopius, a Greeke Authour, are said to bee of the same nation, and that all the people of

Gothes,

Goths, Vandales, Alains, Hunnes, and others, (whom I am hereafter to deſcribe) were deriued out of one and the ſame Land, and were comprehended all vnder the Name of Sauromates, or Sarmates, and haue no other difference, but by the names of their Captaines or Kinges. But I muſt maintaine againſt him, that the land of the Vandales is diſtant from Gotheland, aboue the ſpace of two hundered leagues, and therefore they cannot bee one people with the Gothes. True it is, that this Nation is Septentrionall, or in the North, as the others are, and is a Maritime Countrey, named yet to this day Vandalia: but, as I haue already ſaide, very farre off the one from the other. This people did (almoſt) as much hurt to the Romaine Empire, as the Gothes did, for, ioyning diuers other people with them, as the Alaines, Suabes, & Franconians, they trauerſed the Rheine, Gauderichus being then their King, and paſſing among the Gaules, walked and ſpoyled them very greatlie. Then went they into Spaine, and tooke poſſeſſion (in deſpight of the Gothes) of the Countrey adioyning to the Kingdome of Granado, which (to this day) is called Vandalia, or (by corrupting the Worde) Vandeluſia, albeit the Spanyards mince it more nicely, and nick-name it to be Andaluſia. But to bee breefe, they were thruſt forth of Spayne (wholly) in the yeare 431. vnder another of their Kings, named Genſericus, and paſſed thence into Aſia, where they raigned 76. yeares. From thence they were compelled, in ꝑ

The errour of Procopius.

The trauels of the Vandales into diuers coũtries.

seauenth yeare of the Empero⁊ Iustinian, Anno Dom. 528. by the valour of one of his Captaines, named Belisarius.

The Huns of Scythia, and theyr trauailes.

The Hunnes departed also out of their Countrey, fo⁊ the selfe-same cause as the Gothes did, about the yeare one hundred sixty eyght, onely to seeke some Land, where they might liue after the Scythians Religion, making first choyce of Pannonia: where they alwayes so strongly kept and guarded it, till (after their owne name) it was called Hungaria. This people came from that part of Scythia, which is tearmed Hunos, no long distance from the Riuer Tanais: but it is a miserable estate at this day, and vnder subiection of the Moscouite. Hauing vsurped Pannonia, they kept it manfully against the Romaines, and two hundred yeares after, Attila they⁊ King, accompanied with some people of Allemaigne, as Bohemians, Gepides, o⁊ Girpides, Schlesites, Werlies, Thuringians, Goths, Ostrogothes, and others, making (in all) about the number of fiue hundred thousand men: passed through Allemaigne, which they much endamaged. Then went he into France, where hee lost a battaile, in which perished a great number of his men: this battel was giuen him by the Romans, Gaules, and certaine Goths, allied together, and he lost (as some Authors doe affirme) aboue two hundred thousand men. At length he iourneyed into Italy, which he (well-neere) vtterly ruined: and retiring afterward into his owne Countrey of Hungary, he died within fewe following mo-

Attila, King of the Huns

Attila, his losse in France.

neths,

neths, and on the day of his nuptials, which was in the yeare of Jeſus Chriſt 443.

The Lombards were a Northerne people, deſcended out of Denmarke, as Euſebius maintaineth: and no other reaſon had they to leaue their Countrey, but onely a deſire to win ſome other. There happened in the time of Seno or Sweno, as ſome call him, King of Denmark, a very great dearth or ſcarſity (in the Land) of victuals, and becauſe the people endured it very impatiently: it was concluded by the King and his Councell, (to eaſe the Countrey of ſo many men as were ready to famiſh) that all ſuch perſons as were vnable, either for war, or labor of the ground, ſhould be ſlaine, whether they were old or young. But this ſeuere Edict being reuoked, they then reſolued, to make a leuy of all ſorts of people, that (by the help of armes) might trauaile to find out ſome other dwelling, ſo to diſburthen the charge of the Countrey. This being put in execution, they trauailed ſo far, and carried themſelues ſo courageouſly in trauerſing diuers lands: that they came at laſt into Italy, and there conquered the Countrey which was called Iſtria, making themſelues abſolute Maiſters thereof. Now, becauſe theſe people were long and tall of ſtature the Italians and Iſtrians called them long Barbarians, which by corruption of the word, and ſucceſſion of times made them tearmed Longbards, or Lombardes. Some are of opinion, that vnder the raign of Valentinian the Emperor, they began to make themſelues firſt knowne, which was about the yeare

Of the Lombardes, and whence they deſcended.

A very ſeuere Edict.

Iſtria in Italy conquered, and new named Lombardy.

of Christ 385. and that they became commaunders in Istria, in the yeare 570. Likewise, according to Diaconus, the Emperours made peace with them, in the yeare 730. and euer since they haue held that Country, which at this day is named Lombardy. Let it here be further noted, that where (in any History) mention is made of people tearmed Daces, or Danians; the Nation of Denmarke is thereby vnderstood: out of which countrey, many great Armies haue trauailed at sundry times, and haue mightily troubled diuers kingdomes: among which, they continued long time in England, but were thence expelled, about the yeare 860.

The Normanes were people of Norduegia, or otherwise called Normania, or Norwey, a Countrey in the North, being much addicted to cruelties and inhumanitie, because they vsed many great Piracies on the Sea. An hundred and fifty thousand men of this Nation, bestowed themselues in vessels on the Sea, and tok possession of that part of Gaule or Fraunce, which was then tearmed Neustria, now Normandie, which was doone in the yeare of Jesus Christ, 600. others saie 884. and in the time of Charles le Gros. But bee it howsoeuer, they haue (since then) kept it against all encounters of the Emperours, Kings of France and England, preseruing it still by the Name of Normandy, and themselues reckoned to bee people of vndaunted courage. There are diuers others, that doe sauour of this their first originall, and doe yet proule vppon the

The Normans flowed from Norduegia.

Seas,

Seas, committing many cruell Robberies.

The Nation which we call Sweſſes, Zuitzers, or Sweues, who (at this daie) are auxiliarie to the French, came out of Sweuia or Sweueland, a Northerly Region, like vnto the other. They likewiſe (by the dearth of food among them) departed forth of their Countrey, about the yeare of Grace 800. and went ſo farre as the Rhine, which they would haue paſſed, but were hindered therein by the Franconians. Thence went they to the Land of the Heluetians, who diſpiſing the Sueſſians (becauſe they were poorely and wretchedly apparelled, rude in their feeding, and not looking like ſouldiers) ſuffered them to wander about their Countrey. At length, perceiuing the kinde ſufferaunce of the Heluetians, they ſought to abide in a certaine Canton of their Land. Which when the Heluetians noted, they demaunded of them, to what ende they thus wandered about the World. They anſwered, that they were poore people, and ſought but to weare out their liues in trauaile, by delue or labouring in the Earth. And ſeeing that there was waſt Ground in thoſe partes, vnlaboured, or any vſe made of (it being Hilles and Vallies, enuironed with Lakes) they deſired the Heluetians, to permit them to worke in thoſe rough Fieldes, as yet not cultiue, and they ſhould receiue the benefit thereof, onely allowing them but nouriſhment for their pains. This was all that they ſeemed to pretend, iuſtifying their requeſts with ſolemne oathes and proteſtations.

Sueſſes came out of Sweuia.

They goe among the Heluetians.

Their pouertie among the Heluetians.

Their desire was graunted, and not long after, the Countrey wherein they liued, was not onely called Suesia, in regarde of the Swesians there dwelling: but likewise the ancient Inhabitants had the same name giuen then, and yet the country is very hilly, and vnapt for Kyding. Howe afterward it came to be called the Lande of Cantons or Leagues, shall at large be shewne in our Generall history.

Of the Allemaignes, & whence they were deriued.

Iustinian, and other Emperors (both before & after him) entitled themselues Lordes of the Allemaignes, for hauing receiued some victories ouer the Allemaignes. But this may not be said, (as some doo) that those victories were obtayned against the Germaines: For euen at this daye, when we speake or write, of Allemaigne, therein is comprehended all the Nations, which are contained throughout Germany, and that do speake the Language of the Tentones. But as for Allemaigne, or Almaines, the Romains neuer vnderstood, or meant any other people, then those of Suaba. And to speake vprightly, they haue euer bin the true and ancient Allemaines, as Cornelius Tacitus plainely confirmeth. Drusus Nero, was the first that styled himselfe Germanicus, for hauing rather angered the Germaines, then foyled them, as diuers other Emperours afterward did. Moreouer, by Germany is to be vnderstood, nine and forty great Prouinces, as well of the lower part, as the higher part of the sayde Germany, comprizing the Countrey of the Suisses and Heluetians.

The true Alemaigns of Suaba.

Now

Now, concerning the Alaines, or Alans, many haue ſuppoſed them to be a people of Germanie: But therein they were and are deceiued, for Ptolomy knew them, whom he placeth in a parte of Scythia. Capitolinus beſtowes them in Dacia: Marcelinus, Plinie, & Dioniſius the Poet, giues them a being in Sarmatia of Europe. Ioſephus in his laſt Booke, affirmes their aboade to bee betweene the Riuer Tanais, and the Palus Mœotides: And ſaith moreouer, that, in his time, the Alaines or Alanes, accompanied with the Hyrcanians, both robbed and ſpoyled all the Region of the Medes. As for my ſelfe, by that which I haue gathered, from ſuch as haue written on the actions of the Gothes: I am perſwaded, that thoſe Alaines were theyr companions, and that oftentimes (in their warres) for their owne aduantage they ſundered themſelues from them, as one while they did with the Vandales. But queſtionleſſe, their diſcent was from Scythia, according to Ptolomies affirmation. Alaines, what people they were, and whence they came.

If we ſhall ſpeake of the Gepides, Girpedes, or Iupedes, what people they were, there are opinions enow concerning them. Some ſay, that they were at firſt of Scythia, and came thence as the Lombards did into Italy. But hauing made a more curious and dilligent ſearch, I finde, that they were a people of Germany, and called then Gepudij or Sepuſij, and (according to Ptolomeus Matauaſtus) now at this day, Siebemburgs, that followed the Gothes, the Vandals, and the Normands alſo: beeing erring and Vagabonde people, Of the Gepides or Girpedes.

people, till at length they ventured on the Seas, and went to inhabite the Iſles of the Orchades, whereof Thylle is the lateſt inhabited, as Volateranus auoucheth, and they are now ſubiectes to the King of Scotland.

The Originall of the Picts, and their comming into the Iſle of Orkeney.

In ſpeaking of ſo many Nations, who are all ſaid to be deriued from the Scithians, we may not forget the Picts, who (by moſt Writers opinion) are ſaid to be a people of Germany, that had their Originall out of Scythia, deſcending of the Agathyrſi in Sarmatia, who vſed to paint and collour their faces, & thereupon were named Picts. Before they entred into Britaine, they inhabited the Iſle of Orkeney for a long time together, ferrying ouer into Cathneſſe daily, & ſo multiplying both in power & number, that (getting vp further into the land) they poſſeſſed Roſſe, Murrey-land, Merne & Anguſſe, whence paſſing into Fife and Louthian, they droue thence the Brittain Inhabitantes, who were onely poore people, that liued by nouriſhing & breeding Cattle. This their entrance into Albion (for ſo was it then called) was in the yeare of the worlds creation, 3633. Cruthneus Camelonus is ſaid to be the firſt king of the Picts, & that he builded a famous Citty on the bank of the Riuer called Caron, appointing it to be the chief Citty of all the Pictiſh kingdom. He builded alſo the towne of Agneda, afterward called Edenbrough, of Ethus king of the Picts, and the Caſtle, named The Caſtle of Maydens, becauſe ỹ Pictiſh kings kept their daughters there vnder ſtrict cuſtody, in all good exerciſes, til their yeares of mariage. Con-

The firſt k. of the Picts.

cerning

cerning the warres, ſtriſes, and bloody contentiõs, betweene the Albion Scots and Picts, thorough all their Kings raigns, til their vtter ouerthrow, and quite deſolation of Pict-land, by Kenneth the victorious King of Scots: I referre it to our larger diſcourſe. Only letting you know, that this ſubuerſion, and vtter ruine of the Picts, happened in the year of our redemption, 839. in the firſt yeare of King Kenneths glorious raigne, & 1168. yeares after their firſt plantation in Albion.

Kenneth K. of Scots. deſolateth Pictland.

The Getes haue bin, and yet are a warlick people, molleſted greatly by the Turkes at this inſtant: and yet they found the Romain worke ſufficient. Theſe are the Tranſyluanians, Valachians & Moldauians, & their country is neere to the Riuer Iſter, where it falleth into the Pontick ſea.

Of the Getes.

The Bourguignons are helde by Oroſius, to come forth of Germany, and Volatteranus ſaith, that Iouinianus the Emperour vanquiſhed ſome ſuch people, that liued by the Riuer of Rhine. But there is nothing more certaine (according as I haue gathered by the Germaine Hiſtories) then that they yſſued from ſome remaynes of the Gothes, Vandals, and Hunnes, who beeing altogether chaſed by the Romains, threw themſelues on that part of Gaule, which is called after their name, and there (perforce) enthroned themſelues. For afterwarde, they coulde ſo well reſiſt the Romaines, that they were conſtrained to yelde them tolleration, and let them liue in the ſaide Countrey amongſt the firſt Inhabitants. There they builded Fortes, Villages, and

Of the Bourguignons.

Of their first name.

and Townes, which they called then Bourgs of the Gothes & Hunnes: but being sone corrupted into one word, from Bourgs-Goth-Hunnes, they are now called Bourguignons, as much to say, as a martiall people. Ætius, Lieutenant to the Emperor Theodosius, gaue them a battel in the yeare of Christ, 435. and won the day: But it cost him so deare, that he would neuer after meddle any more with them. About the yeare, 430. they receiued and embraced the Christian fayth. This people in these dayes are become very ciuill, and are as much addicted to Learning, as to Armes: For they haue a goodly Uniuersitie, founded by one of the Dukes of Bourgougne, wherein many Lectures are read of all the Sciences, to Schollers of all Nations, at Dola the Capitall Cittye of that parte of Bourgougne, which is vnder commaund of the house of Austria, and there they hold a Parliament also. As for the other part of Bourgougne, in obedience to the Crowne of France, Digeon is the Metropolitane Citty thereof, where likewise is helds another Parlament: And these two Bourgougnes are maintained in very good peace, albeit they are in obeysance to diuers Princes.

A faire vniuersitie in Bourgougn

Of the kingdome of Naples.

We wil conclude this discourse with the kingdome of Naples, which is a Citty very auncient and Noble in all respects, and giueth the Title of kingdome to the whole Prouince, by her owne proper name. As concerning the name of Kingcome, I do not hold it to be of any great antiquity, because the Normanes took it, from the Grecians,

cians, who poſſeſſed this Prouince in diuers partes thereof, and then it was entitled the Earldome of Apulia or Puglia, as ſome do yet tearme it. Robert Guiſcard, a verie valiant and worthy man, erpulſed ſuddenly the Grecians thence, and toke Sicilie alſo from the Sarrazins, entitling himſelfe Duke of Apulia, and of Calabria, and Earle of Sicilie. In no long time after, his nephew Ruggiero or Roger, hauing conquered the Citty of Naples, which till that time had beene in the Grecians Gouernment, receiued the Title of King of both the Scicilies, by Anacletus the Anti-Pope, in the yeare of our Lorde, 1130. which afterwarde was confirmed vnto him in good and lawfull manner. And from that time forwarde, it was called the kingdome of Scicilie, on this ſide Pharos, vntill the raigne of Charles the firſt, when it became deuided from Sicilie, by occaſion of that famous accident, called Veſro Sciciliano, the Scicilian Euening, wherein ſo many of the French were ſlaine. I finde moreouer in many good Hiſtorians, that Naples hath had three ſeuerall Names to wit; the Kingdome of Naples; the Kingdome of Apulia, and the Kingdome of Scicilie, on this ſide Pharos.

Robert Guiſcard the valiant Norman.

The Scicilian euening.

## ¶ Of the Kingdome of Portugall.

THe Kingdome of Portugall, beganne in the yeare of Chriſt, M.C.X. after this manner,

Henrie

Hen. count of Lorraine

Henry Earle of Lorrayne comming thether, performed many valiant deedes against the Sarrazins: And his high deseruings moued Alphonsus the sixte, King of Castile, to giue him a Bastard daughter of his in mariage, named Tiresia, and (in way of Dowrye) assigned him also that part of Galicia, which then was contained in Lusitania. Of this marriage was Alphonsus borne,

The first K. of Portugal

who was the first that euer stiled himselfe K. of Portugall, and he was the first also that toke the Citty of Lisbone from the Sarrazins. For he hauing conquered fiue of their kings in seueral battels, caused his Armes to bee adorned with fiue seuerall Crownes and Coat-Armors, which euer after continued the Ensigne of the kings of Portugall, in perpetuall memory of his valour. But he quickly stained this faire fame, with cruelties vsed by him to his owne mother, for, after her second marriage, he caused her to be imprisoned: & albeit the Pope labored the matter greatly by his Legate, yet could hee neuer compasse her deliuerance. Which sin was seuerely punished on him by his enemies, who afterward toke him in battell. And then his son Sanctio succéded him, and after Sanctio diuers other, to Iohn, who was the tenth King in direct and natural line. This Iohn

The King of Portugal a Knight of S. Iohn of Ierusalem.

was at the first expulsed from his kingdome, and made a Knight of S. Iohn of Ierusalem: but at length he was re-called to his kingdome, where he made very honorable proofe of his valour, and (among diuers famous deeds) he toke from the Sarrazins the Citty of Septia. Hee had seauen

sonnes

Sonnes, among which Ferdinand (for intergrity of life) was tearmed a Saint. Henry another of his Sons, was the firſt that found Noua Inſula in the Athlantike Sea. He being very ſkilful in the Mathematicks, liued continually without a Wife, and made his daily abiding in a Promontory, which was called the Cape of S. Vincent, and there he died in the yeare, 1460. But Edward, who was the eldeſt brother, was made King, and (by warres) he adioyned to the kingdome of Portugall, Zelia, Tigea, and Alcazar in Affrica. He had two Daughters, or Siſters (as ſome ſay) named Ioane and Leonora: the firſt was married to the king of Caſtille, and the other to Frederick the third, Emperor: of whom was borne Maximilian the firſt, who was afterward Emperor, and Grandfather to Charles the fift. He had alſo a Son named Alphonſus, who ſucceeded him in the kingdome, and begate Iohn ℣ Emanuel, who was 14. king of Portugal. Emanuel had Iohn, who took to wife, ý ſiſter of Charls 5. Emperor, called Katherine. Lodwick died an infant, but Iſabel was wife to the ſaid Charles, ℣ he had another daughter ý was maried to Charls D. of Sauoy. After him ſucceeded Sebaſtian, who (in our time, fighting with the Moors was ſlain, and the king of Marocco, with diuers other great Lords of the Moores. Henry, Vncle to the deceaſed king, followed him in ſucceſſion, he being then a Cardinal, ℣ very aged; holding the kingdom but ſome few months. But he dying, Phillip king of *Spain* entred on the kingdom, reſiſting the claime

The ſucceſſion of the Kinges of Portugall.

of

of Don Anthonio, beeing a Brothers-son of the dead King Henry, and so out-wearied him, that hée could neuer attaine thereto in full possession. So it remaineth still vnder the Spanish gouernment.

## ¶ The Kingdome of Italy.

COncerning the Kingdome of Italy, the antiquity thereof, when at first it was called Ianicula, of Ianus; Cameſena, of Cameſes; Saturnia, of Saturnus, Heſperia, of Heſper, and Italia of Italus, with all the Kinges there raigning, till the Latines, and thoſe likewiſe that deſcended of Eneas, to the time of Romulus, with the Hiſtory both of olde Rome, and Rome as it now is; it remaineth to our generall Hiſtory. Onely we will ſay ſomewhat of the Originall of Venice, moued thereto by iuſt occaſion.

A breefe diſcourſe of the Originall of the Venetians; the foundation of Venice, and how it hath beene gouerned, from the year of our ſaluation 421. to this inſtant.

*To the ancient, Right Worſhipfull, and worthy Society of the Gold-Smiths.*

HIſtoriographers, who haue written of the Venetians, doe not agrée together in their true Originall. For ſome doe write, that they are deſcended of the Venetian Gaules, inhabiting a-

long

long the Ocean Sea in little Britaigne, called Armorica, whereof one of the principall Cities (beeing a Bishops See) was called Vennes. Others, and among them; Titus Liuius borne in Padua, assures vs, that they came forth of Paphlagonia, and that Philemon their Captaine, (being slaine at Troy the great) they went with Antenor into Italy. Others write, that this Nation, hauing beene neighbours to the Cappadocians, and venturing fight with the Cimmerians; they hazzarded further vpon the Adriatick Sea in their Fortune. The most common opinion, is of them, who say, that the Hinitians or Henetes came with Antenor, and, in some time after (by changing of a letter) were called Venitians, or Venetes. First of all, they expelled the Euganeans, who inhabited this Countrey, betweene the Adriatick Sea and the Alpes, and builded the Cittie of Padua. Afterward, by succesſe of time, they increased in such sort, as they would not be satisfied to bee Maisters (onely) of that which had appertained to the Euganeans, (consisting of thirtie foure faire Cities and Townes;) but intruded farther, to seaze on Bressano and Forli. Some report this Countrey to be bounded with the Riuers of Pau, and that of Adde, as also the Lake of Guard, auncientlie called the Benack, the Alpes, and the Adriatick Sea.

People of Paphlagonia

People by the inner gulfe of the Adriatick Sea, towardes the Alpes.

And so the auncient Venitians, in this manner ertended their Dominion, both in longitude and latitude, in the most pleasant Countrey of Italy:

but the seating of the places, did daily beget the elder estate of the Venitians hatred. For on the one side, the ordinary robberies of the Liburnians, and on the other side, ỹ frequent and frightful courses of the Barbarians, did hinder them frõ any long time of continuing in quiet. For, without these impeachments, this Nation had bẽne most fortunate, in conqueriug (by the right of Warre) one of the most goodly and beautifull Regions in all Italie. Nowe, ouer and beside, that on the South-side, it is enuironed with a most calme circuite of the Sea, and in regard thereof, is the more capable of receiuing all strange Merchandizes: So is it likewise wattered with very delectable Riuers, whereby, whatsoeuer commeth from the Sea, is easilie transported to the very Nauell of the Prouince. It aboundeth in Pooles, Pondes, Forrests and vnder-woodes, and the whole Land is choicelie fertile in Corne, Wine, Oyle, and all kindes of Fruites. It is also plentifully stored with Countrey Houses, Townes, Citties, and Villages, Castles, Fortes, and such like, very commendable for the scituation, and enclosure of their Walls.

Liburnia, the Countrey of Croatia, between Istria & Dalmatia.

The scituation of Venice, and capacitie thereof.

These new Inhabitants, when their weake estate beganne to growe in fairer forme: they were seldome exempted from the Warres and incursions of Straungers. For, after manie bolde insolencies of the Barbarians, with continued Warres against each other, euen from their very beginning, vntill the time of Attila:

they

they were yet much more dreadfully encombered, with the furious aſſault of the Gothes, a tẽpeſt farre exceeding in turbulencie, all other former diſaſters happening to them whatſoeuer. For firſt, the Hunnes (a people of Scythia, dwelling neere to the Riphean Mountaines) conducted by Attila, the Sonne of Mandluck, diſperſed themſelues ouer Italie, and making horrible ſpoyle whereſoeuer they went; fell into the Prouince belonging to the Vinitians. After a long ſiedge, they tooke the Cittie of Aquileia, and ſpoyled and burnt it wholly. In like manner did they ruinate the Citties of Concordia and Altina, and almoſt all the Venitian Region.

Mountains in the north part of Scythia, where ſnow lieth continually

An ancient citty in that part of Italy, called *Forum Iulij*.

At the feareſull newes of this Warre, the Venitians were more amazed then any other, and ſo much the rather, becauſe they had beene formerly inured, to ſuſtaine their cheefeſt miſhappes amongſt the Barbarians. Whereupon, it is ſaide, that (euen then) a great number of perſons withdrewe themſelues from the firme Land, to the Iſles where Venice at this inſtant is builded: haſting thither from all other partes, eſpeciall vpon the arriuall of this cruell Enemie Attila. Some (of the better ſort of Padua) firſt began the retreat, and being come to the entrance or iſſue of the Riuer, which was then very deepe, (whence the name of Rialto hath remained to the ſame place, as deriued of the word Riuealto) they there laid the firſt foundation of the Cittie of Venice.

The firſt foundation of Venice.

The meaner people of Paduaj, enforced by the selfe same feare; fled thence, and began to people themselues in Chioggia, Malamocco and Albiola. Some of them of Aquileia (at the same time) betooke themselues to the Marshes or Fennes of Grada, and, vpon the freth returne of Attila, the people ranne (in mighty affluence) along the sea Coastes to the neighbouring Iles. They of Aquileia bestowed themselues in Grada, a place nearest to firme Land, yet engirt with Waters. They that fledde from Concordia, made vse of Coarli and the Attinois, fiue little Ilands neere to one another; which they gaue names vnto, according to the Names of the Gates of their former lost and ruined Citties: To wit; Torcello, Maiorbo, Buriano, Muriano, Amiana, & Gonstantiaco.

Litle Ilsãds in the Sea, and neere adioining.

These seuerall places, where at this present the citty of Venice is seated, were (in elder times) very straite or narrow Ilandes, and neere vnto each other: sauing onely that they were separated by the pleasing course of Riuers, which ranne into, and returned againe from the Sea, according to the changes of his flure and reflux. Nor in these straites were then any dwellinges to bee discerned, but onely of Sea-Fowles, that flew thither from the Seas, to sport themselues vppon the Sunnie banckes; and Fishermen also would some-times there put in for harbour.

The prime estate of the place wher Venice now standeth.

The Paduans, that tooke vp the Rialto, were the first that beganne to builde, and it was in the verie

The first builders of Venice, & at what time.

ry ſame place, where the firſt Foundation of the Citty was laid: namely, the 25. day of March, in the yeare of our Lord, 421. and ſecond yeare of the raigne of Pharamond, firſt King of the Gaules or French-men; in the time alſo of Pope Boniface the firſt, and of the Emperour Honorius. Whereby it plainly appeareth, that at one and the ſelfe-ſame time, began both the kingdome of France, and the Commonwealth of Venice. And that both the one and the other haue continued to this preſent, for twelue hundred yeares, very little, either more or leſſe.

This Cittie ſo newlie begun, encreaſed dailie both in people and buildings. But ſee what happened vppon a ſuddaine, a Greeke Carpenters House (or rather he was one of the Shipwrights, named Entinopus) falling a fire, conſumed in a moment (with a violent & continual embracing) 24. faire new built Houſes. Which when theſe new-come Inhabitantes perceiued, and fearing that Heauen was offended with this their manner of beginning, forgetting God, and ſeruing their owne appetites. They fell all to praier, and made a ſolemne vow, to builde a Church in the honour of God, and in memory of the Apoſtle S. Iames; at which very inſtant time, a mighty tempeſt of raine (as ſuddainelie fell) whereby the reſt of the new-begun Cittie was happilie preſerued.

Their firſt buildings deſtroyed by fire.

That Church is yet at this daie plainelie to be diſcerned, with the markes and appearances of great antiquity, euen in the very midſt of the Ri-

The first Church built in Venice.

alto: And it was then consecrated by foure Bishops, to wit; Seuerianus Bishop of Padua; Ambrose, Bishop of Altina; Iocundus, Bishoppe of Treuisa, & Epodius, bishop of Vderzo, & a Priest was there appointed, to performe diuine seruice.

Noble and rich men the first foúders of Venice.

The first foundations of this famous Citty, were men of honest repute, Noble and rich. For the ancient Venitians, at the change of their abiding, brought with them thither their Wiues and Children, with the very wealthiest mooueables which they had, and so (at leisure) withdrew themselues, to places of a more secure dwelling. But beeing impeached (by incursions of the Hunnes) to Till the Groundes vppon the Sea Coastes; such as had any meanes or apt commoditie: gaue themselues to fighting, and to make Salt, or to transport the goods of their neighbors; estæming the benefite thereby gotten, to bee no more dishonest or vnbefitting, then to Plough and husband the grounds of others.

As for the wealthier sort, they addicted themselus to Traffick Marchandizes with strangers, and by their frequent aduenturing into diuers Countries, some of them, being very skilfull Miners, and well experienced in the triall of seuerall Ores or Mettals hidden in the ground, which by industry and endeauour they found in the earth; became Finers or Triers of those Mettals, and extracted (from the groller substances) the purer perfections of Golde and Siluer, whereby (in their owne language they were tearmed Orifici, deriued of the Latin word Aurifex, Gold-smiths,

or

or Hammer-Men, that (of thoſe refined Mettals) could frame Cuppes, Pots, Kinges, Baſons, Ewres, or any other needfull matter whatſoeuer, both for the ſeruice of God in Churches and Temples, and for the royaltie of Emperors, Kinges, and Princes. So that, by the conſent of diuers good Authours, as Liuie, Florus, Caſſidorus, Trogus Pompëius, and others, the first Gold-Smiths, Workers in Gold and Siluer, and framers of thoſe excellent Mettals into ſuch orderly meanes for vſe (within the partes of Europe) liued in Venice, whereas yet (to this day) doe remaine the very beſt, ingenious and perfect work-men for ſuch matters (according to the iudgement of many) that are to bee found in any part of the World. Concerning ſuch, as remained more ordinarily at home, for care and ſafety of the Cittie, they applied their Spirites, to deuiſe good lawes and cuſtomes for generall benefite. During which time, ſuch was their due reſpect of Juſtice, and ſo preciſe care of equitie and right to all men, as, among ſo great a number of people, there could not bee any diſorderly differences noted.

The firſt Goldſmiths knowne in Europe, were in Venice.

Care of Iuſtice and common good.

Catholique Religion they ſo ſingularly commended, and the daylie preſence of ſome reuerend Prelates, who had ſaued themſelues with their Compatriots: that it augmented (among them) a common affection to piety. And their aſſiſtance appeared very requiſite, not onely for the miniſtry of holy offices; but alſo for retention of the Inhabitants of this new Citty, in auncient piety and Religion.

Loue of religion, in eſpecial reſpect.

Fearing, least they might bee infected with the poyson of Arrian Heresie: because nothing else made more spoyle and hauocke thorough all the Prouince, except the Weapons of the Gothes and Hunnes.

Such was the beginning of the Citty of Venice, and in such manner of liuing, and in such exercises, shee spent her first infancy: till (by her Vertues) shee attained to greater groweth, and grounded her selfe in her instant state and condition. It hath constantly bin held, that this common-wealth (euer-more) retained that forme of gouernment which is tearmed Aristocratia, that is, that the most noble and worthiest Cittizens, should guide and gouerne. For although it be saide, that it hath bin gouerned, first by Consuls, then by Tribunes, and lastly by Dukes, & Maisters of warlicke power: yet notwithstanding, al these Dignities, being but elective, and not hereditary, the election should (in right) appertain to the most Noble Islanders, and Gentlemen of name, by whose aduise the Common-weal ought to be managed, euen as it hath bin, and still continueth to this day.

*Aristocratia optimarum principatus.*

Consuls, to the number of three, were chosen for two yeares, and albeit that this kinde of Gouernment lasted for about the space of threescore yeares, yet we finde only but three consecutiue or succeeding elections of them. The first Consuls, were Albertus Phalarius, Thomas Candianus, and Zeno Daulo. These men first gouerned the Citty in her Nonage, and some are of the minde, that

The Gouernment of Consuls, and who were the first in Venice.

that they were the firſt Authors of the Padnaus flight, and their retyrement to the Lakiſh or marſhie Iſles, as alſo of their firſt building there. The ſecond Conſuls, were Lucianus Graulus, Maximus, or Marinus Lucius, and Hugo Fuſcus. The third, were Marcus Aurelius, Andreas Claudius & Albinus Maurus. The names of ſuch as were elected after theſe, are not to be found in any Hiſtories.

After, that the Iſles (about the Rialto) were filled with Inhabitants: in ſted of Conſuls, Tribunes were created, and for their creation, the matter was firſt debated priuately by fewe people, afterwarde, it was ordained and reſolued in open aſſembly of the Iſlanders: that in each Iſle there ſhould be a Tribune, and he ſhoulde bee a yearely Magiſtrate, to render Juſtice to the Cittizens, and with ſeuerity, to punniſh their offences. But the remainder, which concerned the generality of the Common-weale: was referred to the generall aſſembly of the Iſlanders, to bee by them determined. Afterward, there was but one Tribune created, for gouernement of the Iſles, which continued for ſome yeares. Finally, they concluded to create tenne, whereunto were added two more, who ſhould dwell in Heraclea: And this Tribunary dignity held place for more then two hundred yeares. Heere is to be noted, that the Tribunes of the Iſles, abuſing their authorities, did ſo trouble the State with ciuill diſſentions, as it plainly appeared, that the maine bodie of the Citty would bee diſſolued, without ſome

The creation of Tribunes, and what they were.

good and immediate remedy. Which gaue occasion, that (to heare the complaints of euery one) a generall assembly of the Iles was published, and their meeting to be in Heraclea.

In this assembly, Christophero, Bish. of Grada was President, accompanied with a great number of the Clergy, & after diuine seruice was performed, the first proposition which he made, was, ỳ (for good of the common wealth) each man might complain of ỳ future Tribune, which being done, and the offences no longer to be indured, for publick benefit of the state in general resolution was set down, to make election of a Duke, who should represent all honor and Maiesty in the State or Siegneurie, and he should haue power to assemble the generall counsell, when questions were to be made, of any important matter concerning the Common-wealth. He should haue power also, to elect yearly Tribunes, or Magistrates in euery Ile, and their appellations to bee brought before him. Moreouer, if any should obtaine any dignity, Prelacy or benefice, by Suffrages of the Cleargie or people: that he should not enioy it, or be possessed thereof, without the good liking and consent of the Duke, whose power also ended with his life.

Election of a Duke among the Venetians.

This being thus concluded, in the yeare, 697. Paullucio was created the first duke, and so hath ỳ Ducal dignity continued euer since. Saue only that in the yeare, 737. after the death of the third Duke Orso: it was determined, that no Duke should be elected, for six yeares, but that a Master of

Who was the first D. of Venice.

of the armed troopes or ſoldiors ſhould bee eſtabliſhed, and his authority to be annual, which lasted no longer then fiue yeares. For in the yeare, 742 they proceeded againe to a Dukes election, & ſince that time, the Commonwealth of Venice hath euermore had Dukes and Princes of the Seigneury: by whoſe wiſedome (and his Counſell aſſiſting) it hath bin preſerued in an euer flouriſhing eſtate, euen to this inſtant yeare, 1611.

¶ A ſhort Summary, of the liues of the Dukes and Princes of Venice: and a breuiate alſo of the moſt remarkable actions, in the times of their gouernment.

Auluccio Annapeſto, was firſte Duke of the people, choſen in Heraclea. Hee toke his Oath before Chriſtophero patriarch of Grada to gouerne according to ỹ Lawes, and to regard nothing more then the weale publicke. He pacified the difference which Luitprand k. of the Lombards had with king Aribert, and made friendſhip with them both: As well by his authority, as by armes. He brought the rebellious Æquilius vnder obedience, encreaſed the Citties cuſtomes and reuennewes, and dyed, haning bin Duke xx. yeares, vi. months, and vij. daies.

2 Marcello Tegaliano, of the ſame place of Heraclea, was elected his ſucceſſour, by common voyce of the people. Hee was deuoute, modeſt,

modeſt and affable, but much leſſe diligent in gouerning, then his predeceſſor. The Patriarchat of Grada was tranſferred into Aquileia in hys time, by Luitprand, and there he had great wars about the diſſentions of the Byſhops, whereinto he would not interpoſe himſelfe, but died, hauing bin Duke nine yeares, and vii. dayes.

3 Orſo Hipato, a Noble-man of Heraclea, woon himſelfe great Reputation by his famous dædes. Paulo the Exarcho had recourſe to him, the Grecian Army being broken, and ſiedge laid to Rauenna by Luitprand. He regained Rauenna, made the Kings Nephew his priſoner, ſlewe the Duke of Vicenza, and reſeated the Exarcho in his due rights. Hee brideled the Aquileians, who troubled the publicke peace, and put courage into the ſoules of the younger ſort. He was ſlain by reaſon of the diſſentions of Ieſolo, the vi. yeare and fift month, of his Principality.

4 Theodato Hipato, ſonne of Orſo, was proclaimed Duke fiue yeares after the death of his Father: during which time, the people were gouerned by a Marſhall or Maiſter of the ſoldiors: and forſaking Heraclea, he brought the State to Malamocco. There he was the firſt created, and limitted his confines with Aſtolpho king of the Lombards. He was alſo ſlaine, by Galla a citizen of Malamocco, in the 13. year of his principality.

5 Galla de Malamocco, a wicked and ſeditious man, yet ſhewing himſelfe as Protector of publick peace, he was eſtabliſhed in the place of Theodato. But his wickednelſe being knowne, and

that

that (being but a ſubiect) he would néedes make himſelfe abſolute Lord, hauing before ſlaine his chiefe Maiſter Theodato: the people pluckt out his eies, and toke from him the dignity, which he had a yeare vſurped.

6 Dominico Monegario, of Malamocco, was ſeated in the ſted of Galla. Somewhat to bridle his Dukes authority, the people ioined two yearly Tribunes with him. But he, being a man audacious and arrogant, ſought to tiranize ouer the people: whereat they growing into fury, pluckt out his eies, the 8. yeare of his Principality.

7 Mauritio Galbaio, a Noble Heraclean, for his Iuſtice, wiſedome, and wealth, was choſen to this dignity. Hee made his ſonne Duke with him, and they gouerned together. In his time, the church of Grada being molleſted, he ſent an Ambaſſador to pope Stephen, to accord the difference. The Biſhopprick of S. Peter de Caſtello Oliuolo was then erected. And he died, hauing gouerned 23. yeares.

8 Giouanni Galbaio, hauing bin Duke 9. years with his father, gouerned the commonwealth yet 9. yeares more, and after the ſaid time, hee made Mauritio his Sonne companion with him in the Principality. But they being both of wicked and vnſufferable life, hauing murdered Iohn Patriarchat of Grada, throwing him downe headlong from an high tower: Fortunatus, ſucceſſor in the Patriarchate, made a conſpiracy againſt them, & another was elected Duke. Wherat, being not a little confounded, the Father fled into France, &

the

the ſon to Mantua, the xvi. yeare of their rule.

9 Obelerio, being elected Prince by them that had intelligence with Fortunatus, toke his Brother Beato as his aſſociate, and Valentine beſide (being their thirde brother) was admitted with them in the ſame dignity. And it is worthy note, that of theſe thræ brethren, Beato is onely placed in the rank of Dukes in the Counſell chamber of Venice, whereas Obelerio incited Pepin king of Italy, to make war on the Venetians: and Beato maintained the cõmonwealth raigning 5. yeares.

10 Angelo Participatio, after he had well born himſelfe in the warre againſt Pepin, was elected Duke, the people being ſummoned to the Rialto. He founded the Dukes Palace, in the ſame place where that now built, ſtandeth. The deuiſion of the Empire was made in his time, & the Venetians left in their own liberty. The City was diuided into wards, ſtreets and precinctes. The Pregadi, & the Ouaranta, who (for criminal offences) was then inſtituted among them. He gouerned eighteen yeares.

11 Giuſtiniano Participatio, hauing bin an aſſociate in the dignity with his father, was (after his death) confirmed by the people. He repealed home his brother Iohn, who was then at Conſtantinople, & accepted him as his fellow ruler: he made the peoples authority greater than before, & gaue aid to Michael the Emp. againſt the Sarazins. The body of S. Mark was in his time brought from Alexandria, accepting into his protection, & the church remaining at this day, was cõſecrated

in

in his memory. He died the 2. year of his dignity.

13 Giouanni Participatio remained in the royaltie, & inlarged the Church of S. Marke, placing therein a great number of priests & Canons, and appointing a Primicerio to gouern them. He caused the head of Obelerio to be cut off, whom hee had besieged in the Isle of Curtia. He made war vpon the Nauratines, and ouercame them. In the end, a conspiracy was deuised against him, and being confined to Grada, in the eight yeare of his Principality, he shaued his head and beard, and made himselfe a Monke, in which estate he died.

13 Pietro Tradonico of Pola, hauing carryed himselfe to the peoples contentment in the wars against Pepin, was elected duke. He ioyned Iohn his son in rule with him, & gaue succor to ỹ Emp. of Constantinople, who made request thereof by Theodosius Patricius. He was made Protospatary of the empire, in help whereof he sent 60. gallies. Lewes 2. granted him many priuiledges, & in the end he was slain by a sedition, in his 27. year.

14 Orso Participatio, hauing appeased the sedition, was made Duke. The Turkes hauing spoiled Dalmatia, euen so far as Grada, wer vanquished by him, & Giouanni Participatio his son, whom he had made associate with him in his gouernment. Basilius the Emperor highly honored him for that good Seruice, and made him Protospatarie of the Empire. He gouerned 17. yeares.

15 Giouanni Participatio, beeing confirmed in his dignity, toke and burned Comachio, wasted the County of Rauenna, to reuenge himselfe

on

on the Count of Comachio, who had impriſoned and wounded to death his Brother Badoario. He growing much ouercome with ſickneſſe, cauſed the Church of Saint Cornelius and S. Cyprian to be built at Malamocco; and hauing gouerned fiue yeares and ſixe monthes, renounced the Dignitie.

16 Pietro Candiano, was elected after the voluntarie diſmiſſion of his Predeceſſour. Hee was a valiaunt Man, and expert in Armes, and yet notwithſtanding, greatlie addicted to deuotion. He went (in perſon) with tenne Gallies againſt the Narantines, who (as Theeus) robbed and purloined from the Venitians. Fighting valiantlie againſt them, hee died at the ſecond time, with the weapons in his hands. He gouerned no longer then fiue months.

Dominico Tribuno, is ſet by ſome in rank with the Dukes: but others, leſſe curious in ſearch of the Hiſtory, haue omitted him, becauſe hee was Duke but three months and thirteen daies, and nothing is remarkeable in his time, but a certaine priuiledge granted by him to Chioggia.

17 Pietro Tribuno, Sonne of Dominico, was elected Duke. He obtained of Guydo, Emperour and King of Italy, a confirmation of all auncient Priuiledges. The Barbarian Hunnes came againe into Italy, and burned Heraclea, Capo de Arger, and Chioggia. This Prince ouercame them, with very much honour, and this was the third time, that thoſe Strangers ſought to vſurpe on that State. Hee gouerned twentie

foure

foure yeares.

18 Orſo Badoaro, called himſelfe Participatio, and was the firſt that changed his name. He ſent for his Son Pietro to Conſtantinople, and he was made Protoſpatarie. In the yeare 920. he obtained of Rodolphus, Emperour and King of Italy, the confirmation of the Venitians auncient authority, to ſtamp Monies. He addicted himſelfe wholy to piety, and in his 20. yeare, he renounced the Dignity, to make himſelfe a Monke, and liue priuately.

19 Pietro Candiano the ſecond, was a worthy man, and made war on Lauterio Marqueſſe of Iſtria, who hindred the Traffique of the Venitians: he ouercame him, and reconquered the people of Capo d'Iſtria. He vanquiſhed Albertus, Son to the Emperour Berengarius, who impatronizing himſelf of Rauenna, impeached the paſſage of the Venitians Ships. In his time, Maydens were ſtolne by the Teſtaines, to ioyne in marriage with them; but they were ſone recouered. He gouerned ſeauen yeares.

20 Pietro Badoaro, the Sonne of Orſo, was redeemed by him from the Sclauonians. He gouerned but two yeares and ſeauen moneths, alwaies in peace, which he much affected. Berengarius the Emperour did him many fauours, for his great deſerts.

21 Pietro Candiano the third, Sonne to the ſecond Candiano, aſſociated himſelfe in his dignity with his ſon Pietro; & at two ſeuerall times armed 33. Shippes againſt the Narentines; but

at the second time, he made peace with them. His son being reproued by him for his bad behauior; reuolted from him, and against the Common-wealth. The people would haue slaine him, but he was sent into exile: where ioyning with Guydo, Sonne of Berengarius; hee endangered the Common-wealth. Whereat his father grieuing, died in his fiftenth yeare of his gouernment.

22 Pietro Candiano the fourth, being repealed from exile (albeit the people had sworne neuer to receiue him) was made prince with very great applause. Hee dealt in such sort with Pope Iohn the 12. that the Churches of Grada was made Patriarchall, and Metropolitane of all the Venitians State, and of Istria. Otho the Emperour, granted him many honourable priuiledges. Hee ruined Vderzo, and was slaine with his Sonne, in a sedition of the people: hauing gouerned 20. yeares.

23 Pietro Orseolo, was a man altogether deuout, and was elected by the people against his will. He would very often walke in an vnknown habite, to visite the Houses of poore people and Hospitalles. Hee appeased the dissentions betweene the Venitians, and them of Capo d'Istria, who yelding themselues tributarie. Hee went with Beato Romualdo of Rauenna, to liue religiously. Hee gouerned two yeares and two moneths, dooing many woorthy and charitable deedes.

24 Vitale Candiano, Sonne of Peitro the third, made the confederasy with the Emperour Otho.

Otho. He fell ſicke ſo ſoone as hee entred vppon his charge: wherfore he became a Monk, hauing gouerned about a yeare.

25 Tribuno Memo, was very rich, but no man of State. In his time happened great diſſentions, betweene the Families of Moreſina and Caloprina, by reaſon wherof, many notorious murders were committed. He tok part with the Moreſini, which cauſed the other faction to withdraw themſelues to Verona to the Emperour Otho. He gaue the Iſle of Saint Giorgio Maggiore to the Abbat of Moreſini: And renounced the Principality in his twelfth yeare, entering into Religion.

26 Pietro Orſeolo the ſecond, being a verie diſcreete man, ordered the matter ſo well with the Emperours Baſilius and Alexius, that the Venitians were exempted from Toules and taxations. Otho the Emperour lying at Verona, did highly fauour him; and, among other graces, to hold one of his Sonnes at Baptiſme. He was the firſt that extended their Confines on the ſea, winning many places in Iſtria and Dalmatia. Hauing cauſed the Church and Pallace to be finiſhed in his time, hee died the 28. yeare of his Principality.

27 Ottone Orſeolo, hauing gouerned ſome ſpace with his Father Pietro, was confirmed in the dignity, at the age of eighteen yeares. He won ſuch reputation, that Geta King of Hungaria, gaue him one of his Siſters in marriage. In perſon he conquered them of Iſtria, who were be-

come Rebels; And went into Dalmatia, in the enterprise against Cresmura. At length, the malicious enuiers of his glories, deuised a conspiracy against him, and hee was confined into Greece, in the 17. yeare of his rule.

28 Pietro Centranico, or Barbolano, succéded next to Otho. But hauing not well qualified all dissentions, as well concerning the Cittizens remouing, as the other neighbours: he was compelled to forsake the dignitie, and make himselfe a Monke. Orso, Brother of Otho, returned from Constantinople, being Patriarch of Grada, and he was constituted in expectation of Othos comming. He continued about a yeare in the pallace, and forsoke the Principality, newes bæing brought of Othos death. Dominico Orseolo would then perforce vsurpe the Dignity, but hæ was expelled by the people the next morning, and dyed at Rauenna.

29 Dominico Flabanico, was elected during his exile, by the faction of them that had excluded Dominico Orsolo. In his time, and in the yeare 1040. the national Councel was held, for gouernment of the Ecclesiasticks. He made the Familie of Orseolo suspitious to the State, by his owne meanes, and laboured for their vtter supplantation. He gouerned ten yeares, foure months, and twelue daies.

30 Dominico Contarini was very pleasing to the people. He brought Dalmatia to peace, bæing heauily burdened with the rebellion of Zara. Hæ fauored the Normans against Robert D. of Apu-

lia.

lia. And the discord which happened betweene the Common-wealth, and Pepo Patriarch of Aquileia, was by him qualified. Hee builded the Monastery on the Lido, and died in his 28. yeare.

31 Dominico Silino, won himselfe such reputation, that Nicephorus Emperor of Constantinople, gaue him his sister in marriage; by whose perswasion he made war vpon the forenamed K. Robert of Apulia, and (at the first attempt) returned with a very honorable victory, possesing himselfe of Duras. But at his second aduenture, he fought with small aduantage; whereby ensued the diminution of his credit. He pergetted the Church of S. Marke with Marble, first and before any other, causing it also to bee beautified with an artificiall Checquer-worke. Hee died in the 13. yeare of his gouernment.

32 Vitale Faliero beeing made Duke, he immediatly obtained of Alexius, then Emperor, to haue the Soueraignety of Dalmatia and Croatia. Henry, successour in the Empire, did him many great fauours: and comming in deuotion to Venice, hee held on of his Daughters at Baptisme. The Office of Proprieties was constituted in his time, and the workemanship of Saint Markes Church continued. He died in his sixteen yeare.

33 Vitale Michele, by his woorthy aduenturing on the Sea, did very farre extend the Common-wealths limits. Hee made the Easterne warre, by perswasion of Pope Vrban the second, for conquest of the holy Land, with the Princes

of Chriſtendome. The Iſle of Smyrna, Suria and Ieruſalem were then recouered from ỹ Infidels. He died in his firt yeare.

34 Ordelafo Faliero, Sonne of Vitale, aſſiſted King Baldwine againſt the Infidels, in conqueſt of the Holy Land; and made ſuch progreſſion, as they deuided the Empire betweene them, thoroughout all the Kingdome of Iudea. In the eight yeare of his Principality, Malamocco was almoſt all burned and ſubmerged; by reaſon whereof, the Epiſcopall Sæ was tranſferred to Chioggia; He went in perſon to the war againſt Zara, which was become rebellious, and winning the victory: hee would nædes returne thither againe a ſecond time, and on the like occaſion; where he died in Armes, in the 15. yeare of his principality.

35 Dominico Michele, being made Duke for his high repute and merit; went to giue ayde to the Chriſtians in the holy Land. With 200. wel appointed ſhips and Gallies, hee made the Infidels to raiſe their ſiedge from before Ioppa. Hæ took Tyre, which he gaue to Vaumond Patriarch of Ieruſalem. Emanuell the Emperor made war againſt him, from whom he won Chio, Rhodes, Samos, Mitylline, and Iſter. Hæ renounced his Principality, in the 13. yeare of his rule.

36 Pietro Polani, kinſman to Michele, was a very wiſe Man, inſomuch as hee was made Arbitratour of the difference betwæne Conrade and Emanuell the Emperour. Hæ made Warre againſt them of Piſa and Padua, whom hæ

hée conquered. He armed himſelfe againſt the Duke of Apulia, in behalfe of the ſaid Emanuell, to whoſe Empire he added many worthy poſſeſſions. Some ſay, it was his Sonne that won all the battailes, and that himſelfe, being fallen ſick, returned thence, and died in his eighténe yeare of rule.

37 Dominico Moreſini, hée ſwept the Gulfe of certaine Pyrats of Ancona, the chéefe whereof, béeing called Guiſcardo, was taken and hanged. He laide ſiedge to Pola, which hée tooke, with Parenzo; which Citties were become rebellious in Iſtria. Hee held confederacy with William King of Sicilie, of whom hee obtained many exemptions for the Traffique of his Merchants. Zara made the Metropolitane Cittie, at his inſtaunce, and hée ſo preuayled, that Dominico his Sonne was made an Earle. He beautifyed the buildinges of the Cittie of Venice, and began the Tower of Saint Marke. He died ſeauen monthes after the eight yeare of his Election.

38 Vitale Michele the ſecond, ſubdued the Tarentines, which nowe had rebelled the third time. He impriſoned Vlrick Patriarch of Aquileia, and twelue Channons. In an hundred dayes, hée put forth an hundred Gallies, and twenty Ships on the Sea, againſt the Emperor Emanuell. The great Family of the Iuſtiniani, were, in his time brought to one onely man, and hee was become Religious; whom hee tooke forth of his Monaſtery (by the Popes conſent)

and gaue him his owne daughter in mariage, because he would not haue so worthy a house to bee extinct. There happened a great pestilence in hys time, the occasion whereof, the people in theyr weake iudgement laid vpon him. He was wounded, and dyed, hauing gouerned xvij. yeares, and xxvij. daies.

39 Sebastiano Ziani was the first that euer was elected by the eleauen electors. In his time there was a great Schisme in the Churche, by meanes of the Emperor Frederick Barbarossa, who caused Alexander the thirde to forsake the See, Octauian hauing bin made Anti-pope. Alexander made his retirement to Venice, where hauing a long time serued in the Monastery of la Charita; he was in the end knowne, and taken thence by the Prince and Seigneury. Hereupon, Barbarossa made warre against the Venetians: but his sonne Octauian being taken, he mediated reconciliation betweene them. He died in the fift yeare of his gouernment.

40 Orio Malipiero, or Mastropetro, was the first Duke elected by the 40. and for that purpose was created by the death of Ziani. He hadde fiue Councellors allowed him to authorize his deliberations. He reconquered Zara, that had nowe the fourth time rebelled. He sent supply vnto the Christians against the Moores, who beganne to vsurpe in the Holy-Lande, 88. yeares after that Baldwine had deliuered it. Ptolomais was recouered, and Andronicus, successor to Emanuell the Emperour, deliuered many Venitian Merchants.

chants. He renounced the Principality in his 14 yeare, and entred into Religion.

41 Henrico Dandolo was likewiſe elected by the ſorty. They of Zaro were once againe vanquiſhed, and Pola conquered. In his time was the ſurprizall of Conſtantinople, and the acquiſition of the Eaſt Empire, wherein hee aſſiſted the Princes and French Barons. Hee dyed in his thirteenth yeare, being Generall of all the Chriſtian Army.

42 Pietro Ziani, ſon of Sebaſtian, was made Duke within a while after the death of Dandalo, the Correctors being then firſt inſtituted. In his time came Ambaſſadors from Athens & Achaia, to ſubmit themſelues in obedience to the Common-wealth. Candie was then peopled with a Colony of Noble Vinitians. He married Conſtance, Daughter to Tancrede King of Sicilie. In the end, hee renounced the Principality, hauing gouerned 24. yeares.

43 Giacomo Tiepolo, was made Duke by chance, in concurrency of Renieri Candolo, who had as many voyces as he. Candie rebelled, and the ſeditious were ſeuerely chaſtiſed. Zara, that had long borne the yoake, was now reduced vnder obedience. Hee had Warre againſt them of Ferrara, and againſt Ezzelino, who would haue inueſted himſelfe with Padua. In concluſion, he gaue ouer the Principality in his twentith yeare, and dyed ſone after.

44 Marino Moreſini, was made Duke by the one and fortith, by reaſon of the precedent concurrence.

currence. In his time was another Colony of Noblemen sent into Candie, who builded there Canea. Hee made Warre against Ezzelino, who besiedged Mantua, and who (in a furious rage) caused twelue thousande Paduans to bee hewne in peeces, which he had with him then in his Army. He died in the fourth year of his Principality.

45 Reuieri Zeno Podesta, at Fermo was elected Duke, and sent to bee fetcht thence with foure Gallies. Under him, the Commonwealth won a famous victorie, against them of Genes: but the contentment therewith was very briefe, because Michaell Paleologus expelled both the French-men and Venitians out of Constantinople, being ayded by the Genewaie forces, whych was eight and fiftye yeares after the surprizing of the sayde Citty: yet once more (after that) the same people were againe reconquered: And hauing gouerned this Dignity sixteene yeares, he dyed.

46 Lorenzo Tiepolo was made Duke, in memory of the victory hee had against them of Genes at Tyre: hee allyed two of his Sonnes, (verie Nobly) with two strange Ladies: by reason whereof, a Law was then made, that the like might not afterward be done. He brought Seruia in obedience to the Common-wealth, and the Bolognians were vanquished by him: he gouerned seauen yeares, and xvb. dates.

47 Giouanni Contarini, being aged eightie yeares, and Atturney of S. Marke, was made Duke.

Duke. The Law againſt illegitimates was then enacted, and they excluded from all publicke offices. There were ſome rebellions moued in Iſtria, and by them of Genes, but they were quickly appeaſed. At length, through vnwieldineſſe of age, and by aduiſe of the Senat, he gaue ouer the dignity, hauing gouerned foure yeares, and ſix monethes.

48 Giouanni Dandolo was elected, beeing then abſent. The Citty was (in his time) much afflicted by water, and an Earthquake. He made war in Iſtria, againſt the Patriarch of Aquileia, & the Count of Goritia. At the inſtance of pope Nicholas, he aſſiſted the Archbyſhop of Tripoli with 25. gallies. He died ſeauen months after his 19. yeare of rule.

49 Pietro Gradanigo, a man of great courage, deliuered the common-wealth from two important dangers. One, was a high diſgrace, which hapned in a battel againſt them of Genes: The other, was the conſpiracy of Baiamonte, which was boldly checked with weapon in hande, vpon the place of S. Marke. It was then ordained, that Noblemen onely ſhould gouerne, and the counſel of tenne was then inſtituted. Hauing ruled 22. yeares and nine months, he died.

50 Marino Giorgio, was a man of ſuch life, that they termed him a Saint. Venice was continually excommunicated in his time, by reaſon of the taking of Ferrara. Zara rebelled againe the ſixte time, and much labour it coſt to reduce it vnder obedience againe. After, hee

buil-

builded the Monastery of S. Dominick, and died (aged 81. yeares) in his first yeare, hauing gouerned ten months, and ten daies.

52 Giouanni Soranzo, had the honor of recouering Zara, and many other places, which had reuolted in his Predecessors time. Negropont, was re-obtained, and Warre afresh commenced against them of Genes. The excommunication was quitted from Venice, by the interposition of Francisco Dandolo, kneeling before the Pope, with a Chaine of yron about his necke. The number of Atturneyes of S. Marke, was increased to sixe. He gouerned sixteene yeares, and sixe months.

52 Francisco Dandolo, who had so lowely humbled himselfe for his Countreyes good, was therefore exalted to her highest Dignitie. They of Pola, and of Valesia, submitted themselues to the Common-wealth, which gaue way vnto the warre against the Patriarch of Aquilea. Padua was taken on Albert Scaliger, and Treuisa and the County remained to the Common-wealth. This man was of the league with the Christian Princes, against the Turke, and in his time were sixty seuerall Ambassadors at Venice. He gouerned ten yeares, and ten months.

55 Bartolomeo Gradenigo, Atturney of Saint Marke, was made Duke at 76. yeares of age. by the intercession of Andrea Dandolo, and his cessation. In his time was Venice myraculously deliuered from a mighty imminent invndation. Candie rebelled, and the Rebelles were

were ſeuerely punniſhed. There happened a great Dearth in the Cittie, which droue the people to diſcontentment. Hee died in his fourth yeare.

54 Andrea Dandolo, who had before reſigned his place to Gradenigo, cauſed the dearth for to ceaſe, by ſending for great ſtore of Corne out of Sicilie. Hee obtained of the king of Babylon, free Nauigation into Egypt. Zara rebelled the ſeauenth time, and was reprized. The Warre betweene them of Genes and the Citty, was troubled by two great accidents: One, was an earthquake verie dreadfull, and the other, was a greeuous Peſtilence. Hee gouerned twelue yeares, wanting ſome few months.

55 Marino Faliero, was elected Duke, being then Ambaſſador at Rome. Hauing receyued an iniurie by ſome perticulers, which was not reuenged according vnto his owne deſire: he determined in the eighty yeare of his age, to make himſelfe abſolutely Lorde, without any controule. The Conſpiracy beeing diſcouered by Nicholo Lion; he had his head ſmitten off within the Pallace. And it was ordayned, that his Picture ſhoulde not bee placed among the other Dukes, but the place being left voyde, had onely this Writing. This is the place of Marino Faliero, who, for his greeuous offence, had his head cut off: he was Duke but ten moneths.

56 Giouanni Gradenigo had an excellent ſpirite, but a much mishappen countenance. The warre

Warre was renewed againſte the Genes, which tearmined with a mutuall peace. Yee had warre againſt the King of Hungarie for Dalmatia. Treuiſa was beſiedged in his time, and thether hee went in perſon. He gouerned one yeare, three moneths and fourteene daies.

57 Giouanni Delfino, was elected Duke when he was in Treuiſa, defending it againſt the King of Hungary. The Senat ſent to demand free paſſage for him, which being denied, he came forth with 200. horſe to beard the enemy, & ſo attained to Margliera, where the Senat in perſon receiued him. In ſhort time he gaue end to this war, & recouered Conciliano, Serualla, & Aſola. He made peace for the ſouereignty of Dalmatia, and died aged 45. yeares, hauing gouerned foure yeares, two months, & eleuen daies.

58 Lorenzo Celſo, vpon a falſe bruit of a victory againſt them of reuolted Genes, was made duke in concurrence of Pietro Gradenigo, Leonardo Dandolo, & Marro Cornaro. Candie rebelled again, & it was regained with very great difficulty. On this occaſion, a Juſts and feaſt was publickly made in the place of S. Mark: he died 2. dayes after the fourth yeare of his Principality.

59 Marco Cornaro, a man very wiſe & learned, was ſent into Candie, which was rebellious, and there he made a cruel bloody war: the Pope granting plenary Indulgence to al ſuch as went thether. The Rebels being ſeuerely puniſhed, ỹ commonwealth ſent to Pope Vrbane 5. a certain nũber of their Gallies. He gouerned 2. years, 5. moneths and 24. daies.

60 An-

60 Andrea Contarini, fled to the Paduans, fearing to be elected Duke, and as preſaging the ruine which (in his time) wold betide the common-wealth. Firſt of all, he made warre with them of Trieſta, then ſoon after, with Carrara for the confines of Padua: and ſuch was the fortune, that Chioggia beeing taken, the Cittie of Venice found it felſe to bee in extreame daunger. But in the ende, hee went and oppoſed himſelfe (in perſon) againſt the Enemies, vanquiſhed them, and regained Chioggia. Hee dyed, hauing gouerned fiftæne yeares, foure months, and fiftæne daies.

61 Michele Moriſini, was a man well furniſhed with Learning and Wiſedome. Some ſay, that in his time the Iſle of Thenedes was taken, and not in the time of his Predeceſſour Contarini. There were diuers Lawes then made, and (amongſt others) it was ordayned, that Homicides, who formerly had bæne hanged, ſhould afterwardes haue their heads ſmitten off. He liued but four months, & fiue dayes in his Dignity, and died in the 74. yeare of his age.

62 Antonio Veniero, was a rigorous obſeruer of Iuſtice. He confined one of his owne Sonnes in exile, becauſe he had (ouer-lightly) offended the Familie of a Noble Venitian. Hee made league with Galeazzo the Vicounte, againſt Carrara, whereupon hee tooke Padua. Hee aſſiſted the Emperour Emmanuell againſt the Turke, and gaue ayde alſo vnto Sigiſmond,

King

King of Hungaria, who afterward came to the Empire. The place of Saint Marke, and that of the Rialto, were greatly beautified in his time. He died two months and three daies, after the 18 yeare of his rule.

63 Michele Steno, had the dignity of Atturney of Saint Marke, with that of Duke. Hee wonne an important battaile against the Genewaies. Carrera was now the last time vanquished, and Padua and Verona surprized. They of Vicenza, to free themselues from his tyranny, yelded themselues to the Common-wealth. Ladislaus King of Hungaria, did likewise forgoe Zara. He died, hauing gouerned 13. yeares and three daies.

64 Thomaso Mocenigo, was first Generall of the Goulfe. Hee embraced peace, to the ende, that the Cittizens might Traffique. Vdina became obedient to the Common-wealth, with the Countrey of Friuoli; by meanes of the Lordes of Sauorguani, who were made Noble-men of Venice. The Florentines were also succoured against the Duke of Milaine. In his tenth yeare he died.

65 Francesco Foscari did stoutly represse the Duke of Milaine, who proceeded too farre on the libertes of Italy. Brescia, Bergamo, and other Citties of Lombardie were then won: among which were Loda and Parma, and Rauenna in Romania. Hee made also a large progresse on the Seas, euen into Morea. The Senate assisted Palcologus the Emperour, against the Turkes, who

who vsurped Constantinople in the yeare 1453. Hee was made Arbitratour by the Duke of Milaine, in certaine differences of neighbour-hood. The King of Dacia was made a Noble Venitian: And afterwards, the Duke (in regard of his age and infirmities) was dismissed, hauing gouerned 34. yeares, and fiue months.

66 Paschale Malapiero, was appointed in the place of Foscari, being Atturny of S. Mark, who died two daies after his dismission. Hee made a Law, that in following times, the Duke should not be deposed. In his daies, the famous Arte of Printing was brought into Venice. The Arsenall was greatly encreased: And hee maintained the people in peace, during foure yeares, 6. months, and fiue daies that he gouerned.

67 Christophoro Moro, of Procuratour of S. Marke, was made Duke. He liued for some time in peace, till the second yeare of his gouernment; and then the Turke (proud of his surprizall of Constantinople) declared Warre against the Venitians. He made heace with Pope Pius the first, and the Duke of Burgundy: But the Pope dying, they remained alone, and maintayned war which lasted twenty yeares. And yet he dyed, hauing raigned 9 yeares and fiue months.

68 Nicholo Trono had such good happe, that (in his time) the common-wealths affaires went well against the Turke. Pietro Mocenigo, Generall in the Archipelagus, united his power with the Popes. The King of Naples, & they of Rhods sent 85. Gallies together, and toke Satalia, a cit-

tie of Pamphilia. He made league likewiſe with the King of Perſia, againſt the Turke. Iames King of Cyprus comming to Venice, eſpouſed Catharina Cornara, adoptiue Daughter of S. Mark. He gouerned one year, eight months, and fiue daies.

69 Nicholo Marcello, Atturney of S. Mark, after ſome lawes made by the Correctours; was elected Duke. In his time there was a conſpiracie in Cyprus, to haue the Kingdome fall into the power of Ferdinand King of Naples. Pietro Morcenigo went thither with a great Armie, where hee appeaſed all troubles, and ſeuerelie chaſtiſed the Rebelles. Scutari, a Cittie in Liburnia, was beſiedged by the Turke, and valiantly defended by Antonio Loredano. This Duke gouerned one yeare, foure monthes, and 17. daies.

70 Pietro Mocenigo was elected Duke, in deſert of all his worthy deeds. Lepanto was beſiedged in his time by the Turke, & vertuouſly maintained by Antonio Loredano. They brought their power likewiſe before the Iſle of Stalimena, but the ſame Loredano (by his valour) defended it. The Daughter to King Ferdinand came to Venice, with the Cardinall her Brother, where they were roially entertained. This Prince cauſed a Mony to be ſtamped, which he ſirnamed by his owne name: And gouerned but two yeares and nine months.

71 Andrea Vendramino had ſuch ill hap in his gouernment, that the Venitian Army was

two

two ſeuerall times put to flight by the Turkes: Once, neere to Croya in Albania, and the other, in the Countrey of Friuli. He was a goodly man of perſon, and had a moſt beautifull Ladie to his Wife, by whom hee had as goodlie Children, whom he allyed in marriage with the cheefeſt Families. He gouerned one yeare and eyght months.

72 Giouanni Mocenigo, Brother to Pietro Mocenigo, hauing continued the Warre againſt the Turke; in the ende made peace with him: Ordering the matter ſo, that hee left Scutari and Stipula in libertie of commerce, and power to keepe a Deputie at Conſtantinople. Hee made Warre againſt Ferdinand King of Naples, at the inſtance of Pope Sixtus the fourth, which occaſioned the long Warre called Sociale. In the ende, peace was made, the Common-wealth hauing gotten Rouigo and Poleſano. The Cittie became much diſgraced by fire, and a peſtilent ſickneſſe: The Prince dyed, hauing raigned ſeauen yeares and ſix moneths.

73 Marco Barbarigo, the Plague beeing ceaſed, cauſed all to bee new builded, which the Fire had defaced in the Pallace. Hee was greatly differing from from all other Princes, to wit, in pardoning, and forgetting perticuler iniuries doone vnto him: but ſuch as were committed againſt the State, he would haue reuenged with ſtricteſt ſeueritie. The Grand Signeur or Turke, ſent a perticular Ambaſſadour

vnto him, to congratulate his election. He gouerned but nine months.

74 Agostino Barbarigo, withstood the progresse of Charls 8. King of France, when he made war against them of Arragon, for the kingdome of Naples, which he conquered. The Turke vsurped on the Common weales of Lepanto, Modona, and Corona. The kingdome of Cyprus was brought vnder the tutelage of the Senate, and Queen Catharina brought thence to Venice. The Office de la Sante was created, by occasion of the Pestilence. The Duke gouerned 15. years, and 21. daies.

75 Leonardo Lauredano sustained a very rigorous war against the chiefest Princes of the world: there being a league made at Cambray, betweene the Emperor Maximilian; the King of France; them of Naples; and the Dukes of Sauoy, Ferrara and Mantua, incited thereto by Pope Iulius the second. All the whole estate of firme land was surprized, except Treuisa; but in the end it was recouered. He liued in the Principality nineteene yeares, eight months, and 20. daies.

76 Antonio Grimani, being Generall, had a most infamous discrout or foile, by which occasion, he was dismissed of the charge of Procurator of S. Marke, and confined to Cherso. Hee brake his limitation, and withdrew himselfe to Rome to the Cardinall his Sonne: where hee had so many woorthy Offices imposed vppon him, as, not onely he was re-established in his

Attur-

Atturnies place againe ; but hee was likewiſe made Duke, at the age of eighty two yeares, and gouerned but one yeare, ten monthes, and two daies.

77 Andrea Gritti, gaining beſt part of the glory, for the repriſall of Padua, was in very great eſteeme. Hee dealt ſo with the King of Fraunce, (to whom he was Priſoner) that his Maieſty alyed himſelfe with the Common-wealth, and Breſcia and Verona were reconquered. Hee knew very well, how to make his carriage pleaſing to the Senate, during the warres betweene Charles the fift, Emperour, and King Fraunces the firſt, as alſo againſt Solyman. Hee gouerned fiftæne yeares, ſeauen monthes, and eyght daies.

78 Peitro Lando continued the defence of the Common-wealth againſt the Turk : with whom (at laſt) he made a peace, knowing how to make vſe thereof, & maintaine his owne charge, while the war continued betweene Charles the fift, and King Frances the firſt. He gouerned ſixe yeares and eight months.

79 Franceſco Donato, making benefit alſo of this peace, beautified the Citty with many goodly buildings, beſides that of the Pallace. He ſent ſuccour to the Emperour, againſt certain Rebels in Germany. The Prances of Guiſe, comming to Venice in his time, were entertained as fitted their dignity. He gouerned ſeauen yeares and ſix months.

80 Marco Antonio Treuiſano, a Man alto-

gether deuoute, laboured that the Common-wealth might abound in goodneſſe and ciuill manners; preuenting (by his owne worthy example) that vices ſhould not be winckt at, as, in too many Countries, they are. He gouerned a yeare, wanting three daies.

81 Franceſco Veniero, could ſo well ſkill of gouerning the Common-wealth, that albeit the Turke (in his time) made Warre in Apulia, and the King of Fraunce in Tuſcanie: yet all was well at Venice, and the Queene of Poland Royallie welcommed thither. He gouerned two yeares, one moneth, and twentie daies.

82 Lorenzo Priuli, was ſollicited (by the Pope) to make Warre againſt the Emperor. But he being a Friend to the Common-wealth; by no meanes would offend him, but mediated a pacification of thoſe affaires. In his time peace was made betweene Fraunce and Spayne, and Charles the fift dyed. This Prince gouerned three yeares, eleauen months, and eyght daies.

83 Girolamo Priuli, Brother to the precedent Prince, enioyed thoſe great Honours which Pope Pius the fourth gaue to the Common-wealth: And all his delight was to heare Ambaſſadours in the Hall of Binges. In his time the Councell of Trent was concluded, whither he ſent (as Ambaſſadors) Nicholo de Ponte, and Matheo Dandolo.

The Common-wealth held (at Baptiſme) the

the Sonne to the Duke of Sauoy by a Deputie, borne of Marguerite of France. He dyed, hauing gouerned eight yeares, two monthes, and foure daies.

84 Pietro Loredano, by the concurrence of two others, was elected Duke, contrarie to the hope of all, or his owne expectation. The Arſenall was burned in his time, and there then alſo happened a very great dearth of all thinges. Selim, Succeſſour to Solyman, tooke occaſion to breake peace with the Commonwealth, demaunding of them the Kingdome of Cyprus, and mooued Warre vppon this Subiect. He gouerned foure yeares, fiue monthes, and eight daies.

85 Luigi Mocenigo, Warre beeing kindled againſt the Turke; loſt the Kingdome of Cyprus, Nicoſia beeing taken, and Famagoſta ſurrendered. The Common-wealth made league with Pope Pius the fift, and Phillip King of Spayne, ſo that their Armies (beeing ioyned together in the yeare 1571. they obtayned a woorthy victorie againſt the Turkes. Soone after, Henry the third, King of Fraunce, came to Venice, where hee was magnyficently entertayned. This Prince dyed in his ſeauenth yeare.

86 Sebaſtiano Venicro was elected by common voyce, and with ſuch applauſe, that diuers Turkes ranne to him, and kiſſed his feete. Hee created fiue Correctours of the Lawes, for ruling the affaires of the Pallace. The

Citty was deliuered of a dangerous plague, and the Pallace was againe very greatly defaced by fire. This Prince gouerned not aboue one whol yeare.

87 Nicholo de Ponte, was created Duke, a man very learned in al the Sciences, and whereof he had made publicke profession in Venice. He passed thorow all the honours of the Commonwealth, wherewith the Cittizens coulde possibly gratifie him. The Seminary of S. Marke was instituted by him. Certaine Princes of Japponia arriuing then at Venice, were by him most honourably entertained. He builded the Bridge of Canareggio: and gouerned seauen yeares, nine months, and thirteene daies.

88 Paschale Cicogna, Procurator of S. Mark, was elected when he was at diuine seruice in the Church. In his time there was great warres betweene France and Spaine about Piedmont, and betweene the Emperor and the Turke, for some parts in Hungaria. He caused the Town of Palma to be builded, in the confines of the countrey of Friuli, and a newe Castle or Fortresse, in the Isle of Cephalonia. He hadde the honour of the wonderfull Bridge of the Rialto, which hee builded: And gouerned ten yeares, or thereabout.

89 Marino Grimini, Procurator of S. Mark, was so highly in grace and fauour of the people, that on the day of his election, they declared extraordinary signes of ioy, and continued them for many following daies. The second yeare of his Principality, he caused the Dutchesse his Wife

to

to be crowned in great Triumph. At which time Pope Clement the eight ſent hir the Roſe of gold. In his time much ioy and triumph was made, for the peace concluded betwæn the Kings of France and Spayne. Vppon occaſion of the Popes comming to Ferrara, obtained by the Eccleſiaſticall Eſtate, the Cardinall Aldobrandino paſſed thence to Venice, where he was moſt honorably welcommed with diuers other Cardinals. There was ſuch an extraordinary ouer-flow of waters, in the fift yeare of his Principality, ý the Barks, Boats, and Gundeloes floated on the place of S. Marke, euen as if they had bæn in a ful maine riuer. He dyed, and was much bemoaned of the people, hauing gouerned ten years, and eight moneths.

90 Leonardo Dandolo, hauing by his worthy deſeruings, ſinguler wiſedom and dexterity, managed paſſed affaires, and gone through al honors of the Common-wealth, giuing euident teſtimony of his care and faithfulneſſe, was aduanced in the place of Grimani, the tenth day of January, 1606. He had bin ſent Ambaſſador to Conſtantinople to Mahomet (hee being newlie come to the Empire of the Eaſt) in the common-wealthes-name, to ſalute him with accuſtomed complements. He hath ſuch a practiue brain, and ſo happy a memory, ſeated in a ſoule ſo religiouſly zealous for common benefite, that the Senate hath referred more to him then to any other of his Predeceſſors. The Citty hath (in his time) bæne excommunicated, by Paulus Quintus now pope,

about

about some pretentions appertaining to his Sée: But it may well be saide of this Prince, that, against such Thunder-clappes and lightning flashes, he hath shewne himselfe like an immoueable Rocke, in defence of that estate in generall. In like manner, two principall Pillers of Christendome, threatned great disaster and ruine: but that most Christian Henry the fourth, King of Fraunce, embracing those two Collombes, vpheld both the one and other, & redressed all discontentment, by the entermise of his Ambassadors, and hath erected a Triumphall Arche, to the immortality of his glorie. This Prince now liuing happily in peace, doth dayly acknowledge to Fraunce, his particular affection for such fauour, and may (in time) much better declare it. God long preserue him, and all other good Princes.

## Of the Kingdome of Spaine.

Spaine deuided (at first) into six Prouinces. viz.
1. Terraeon.
2. Carthage.
3. Lusitania.
4. Gallacia.
5. Boetia.
6. Tingintana.

SPaine was (in her yonger daies) held by sundry petty Kings and Tetrarches; and afterward became deuided into many Commonweals. The Carthiginians (a people of Affrica) hazzarding their fortune thither, helde one part thereof, and possessed themselues of many Cities, Townes, and places, vntill they were expelled thence by the

the Romaines, in the time of the Punick warres. Since when, it was continually ſubiect vnto the Commonwealth of the Romaine, & reduced into forme of a Prouince only, in the raign of the Emperor Auguſtus. So it remained till the Emperor Honorius; in whoſe daies the Vandales (a people of the North parts) brought it vnder their command. But they were (ſome after) chaſed thence by the Gothes, who eſtabliſhed there the ſeate of their kingdom, which in that kind they maintained, for the ſpace of about two hundred years: nor were they then called kings of Spaine, but kings of the Goths. In the raigne of Roderick, king of the Goths, the Moores of Affrica entred Spaine, in the yeare 715. they beeing brought thither by one named Iulian, in very deſpightfull indignation, and to ſhape out a way to his bloody reuenge, becauſe King Roderick had diſhonoured his Siſter, or (as ſome others ſay) his daughter. And ſo did the Moores poſſeſſe themſelues (wel-neer) of al Spain, ſeizing the city of Tolledo, which was thē the capital city. Thus ended the kingdom & name of the Goths in Spain. Nor reſted they ſo, but purſued on their conqueſt ſtill, & there remained none but Galitia, the Aſturies & Leon, which countries king Pelagius, Vnkle & ſucceſſor of Roderick, had fled to for refuge, & there ſhut vp himſelf, in regard that thoſe places were inuironed with Mountaines & might wel defend & ſhelter him for ſome time. But his ſucceſſors, being hardly preſſed by the Sarrazins, could no longer reſiſt: wherefore, vnder the raigne of Alphonſus the ſeconds, they were

433.

The Moors in poſſeſſion of all Spaine.

were forced to craue the helpe of Charlemaigne, King of Fraunce, by whose valour and Vertue, the Moores were beaten thence a great way, and had bin quite cast out of the Country, if the Spaniards mallice had bin no hinderance thereto. Afterward, the kings of Leon and Galicia (for such were then their only titles) being so formerly preserued, began somwhat to increase in power. And in regarde of this expedition, performed by the French, the strength of the Moores was so weakned and diminished, that many other Kingdoms were established in Spaine, as that of Nauarre by Enocho Counte of Bigorre, in the yeare, 960. which he toke away from the Moores and Sarrazins, by a very valiant conquest of them. The Son of this Enocho, being named Garzias, second king of Nauarre, won and conquered Arragon from the same enemies. And afterward, in the year 116. was Arragon reduced to be a kingdome, by the Will and Testament of Sanchio the Great, fourth King of Nauarre, for loue to Ramyrus his Natural Sonne, who was the first King thereof. This was the same Sanchio, who being Earle of Castille in the kingdome of Leon, tooke on him first the name of King Castille, which he left vnto his Sonne Ferdinand. The kingdome of Portugal was also conquered from the same Moores, by Earle Henry, Sonne vnto the Duke of Lorraine; who held it first of all, vnder Title of Earle, in the year, 1110. but quickly after brought he it to be a kingdome. Spaine did continue so (in this kinde of State) for a long time,

The Kingdomes of Nauarre & Arragon.

Portugall conquered from the Moores.

time, deuided into many Kingdomes: And the Moores had alſo theyr abiding there, poſſeſſing ſtill a great part thereof, till ſuch time as

Ferdinand the fifte, King of Arragon, who was married to Iſabell, the onely heire of Caſtille: And he (wholly) expulſed the Moores out of Spaine, in the yeare, 1492. In no great diſtance of time after, he poſſeſſed himſelfe of Sicilie & Naples, inuading alſo the Eaſt Indiaes. But fraudulentlie he vſurped the Kingdom of Nauar, againſt Iohn d'Albret, who was (indeede) the lawfull King. And it is this Ferdinand, and Iſabell his Wife, that (wee may ſay truely) the Kingdome of Spaine onely had beginning in. They left one onelie Daughter, named Ioane, who was married to 1492

The beginning of the kingdom of Spaine, and deſcent of their kings.

Phillip the firſt, of Auſtria, Sonne vnto the Emperor Maximillian, and Mary of Bourgundie: hee ſucceeded in this Kingdome of Spaine, and other Countreyes beſide. He was likewiſe Earle of Bourgondie, of Flaunders, and Lorde of the Lowe-Countreyes, in the right of his Mother. In this his Marriage, was borne

Charles the fift, who was afterward Emperor. Hee raigned nine and thirtie yeares, preſeruing his Prouinces verie happilie: And he left for ſucceſſour, both in Spaine, and the more part of his other Countries, his ſonne 1516.

Phillip the ſecond, who raigned three and fortie yeares, hauing adioyned (to his other Eſtates) the Kingdome of Portugall, in the yeare of our Lorde 1555

Lorde, 1580. and so (consequentlie) all that which the Portugalles helde in the East Indiaes, and elsewhere, as in Affrica and Brasile, which came vnto him by the death of King Henrie the Cardinall. Hee died aged seauentie yeares, the thirteenth day of September, 1598. No long time before his death, he hadde made peace with the mighty and most Christian King of Fraunce and Nauarre, Henry the fourth.

1598 Phillip the thirde, his Sonne, succeeded him, and raigneth as yet to this day. He married Margaret, Daughter to the Arch-Duke of Austria, by whom he had a Sonne, in the month of Aprill, 1606.

## Of Germany and the Princes Electors.

Of Germany, and the Princes Electors. LIttle can we heere speake of Germany, in regard it requireth a large & ample discourse: Onely concerning the Princes Electors, I finde it recorded, that Pope Gregorie, the fifte of that name, being a Natiue of Saxonie in Germanie, and Kinsman to the Emperour Otho; to the end that the Empyre might long remaine, in the hands of them of his Nation, procured a Law to be made, with the consent of Otho, about the election of the Emperor, in the yeare of our Lord, 1002. which Law was afterward duely kept, and hath beene to our time, that it shoulde bs alwayes lawful and permitted to the Allemaignes or Germaines only, to elect and chuse the Prince, that was to be called Cæsar, and King of the Romaines, with the Title likewise of Soueraigne Emperour and Augustus, so sone as his election was

was appꝛoued. It was thereſoꝛe oꝛdered, that that thꝛée Eccleſiaſticall perſons, and foure of the Laytie, ſhoulde haue the full authoꝛity heerein, with the voyce of all the State in generall. The Eccleſiaſticall men, were the Arch-Byſhoppes of Magonce, Treues, and Colougne; The Layickes were the Marqueſſe of Bradenbourg, the Count Palatine of Rhine, the Duke of Saxony, and the King of Bohemia, to all whoſe Succeſſoꝛs this Dignitie appertained. And the King of Bohemia was added foꝛ the ſeauenth Electour, to the end, of auoyding all differences which might happen in the election, and to iudge eſpecially ouer the other.

Three Eccleſiaſtikes, and three Layickes, with addition of a fourth, the K. of Bohemia.

## ¶ A ſhort Chronologicall Diſcourſe of Fraunce, the Originall of that Nation, and a briefe Hiſtory of their kings, from *Pharamond* their firſt Gouernour, to Lewes 13. now raigning.

¶ *To the Worſhipful Mayſter Richard Langley, Eſquire, Towne-Clerke of the Honourable Cittie of London.*

THe greater part of ſuch as haue Wꝛitten, concerning the Dꝛiginall and Etymologie of the Name Francs oꝛ Francions, who afterwarde came to bee called Frenchmen, haue ſcarſe faithfully oꝛ reſpectiuelie handled

handles that Subiect. Many ancient moderate Writers, as Sigisbert, Gregory of Tours, Aimonius the Monk, Hunibant, and the moze part of our Chzonielers and Annaliſtes, made theyz whole recourſe to Dzeames and Fables, becauſe they liued in thoſe barbarous times, when learning was trodden vnder-foot, and good Bookes were burned by the Gothes, Vandales and Hunnes, with other vnciuil Nations, who quenched and ſmothered the light of good Letters, which being hidden vnder-ground (to auoid ſuch barbarous and abozliue fury) our foze-named Writers were robd of knowing thoſe ſound Authozs, without whom they could not iudicioullie cenſure, oz write the Hiſtozy of the French Nation. Dthers that long time after, and much nærer to our inſtant Age, haue likewiſe written on the ſame Argument; by following the track of thoſe fozmer blinde-guides, haue fallen into their errour and folly: reading no other Authours but thoſe miſſe-leaders, neyther taking any paines to peruſe thoſe graue auncients, which moze poliſhed ſeaſons haue diſcouered vnto vs. So that thoſe beſt embzaced Authours of the French, are euen the loudeſt lyers, leauing a rooted opinion in their ydle fancies; that they are iſſued of the Troyans, and that they were named French of Francus, oz Francion, the Sonne of Hector, who, after ſacke and ſpoile of the ſaide Citty, ſaued himſelfe (with ſo many as could eſcape the Græcians Swozd and fire) in the Palus Mæotides, and that (of his name, whom they thus followed)

The errour of Writers, about the names originall.

Francus or Francion, the ſon of Hector.

lowed) they were firſt called Francks, or Francions. Next, that nære to this Palus Mæotides, they builded a Citty, which they named Sicambria, after the name of an Aunt to Francus, the Daughter of King Priam; and that there they dwelt, vntill the Emperor Valentinians time, being then conſtrained to paſſe into Allemaigne, and thence into Gaule. Sæ hære the conceite of ſome fond French-men, concerning the Etimologie of their name; which if any one ſhould offer to take from them, he ſhould (in their iudgment) commit no mean crime. And albeit there are many, and contrary opinions in this caſe, yet I will plainely tell ye no more, then what I haue read, and ſeene written.

Sicambra the Daughter of King Priam.

Some ſay, that (in times paſt) there was a nation in Europe, ſcattered & diſpierced hære and there, who were called Cimmerians; one part of them had the Name of Cimbrians, another Sicambrians, and a third Francs, or Francions. Theſe people paſſing thorough the Countrey of Pannonia (now deuided into two parts, the one called Hungaria, and the other Auſtria) were driuen from their precedent dwelling, which was at the Cimmerian Boſphorus by the Goths, in the yeare of the Worldes Creation, 3520. Others ſay, that theſe Cimmerians tearmed thẽſelues to bæ deriued of thoſe Fraci, that appeared on the Earth after Noahs Floud (viz:) that of thoſe diuiſions made in the whole vniuerſe, by partage of the Mediterranean Sea, thoſe which were in Europe (diſtinctly on the right hand)

Cimmerians. Cimbrians. Sicambrians. Francs or Francions.

The Hebrew Fraci, and the Affricanes.

gaue to the Hæbrews these Fraci, euen as them on the left hand did the Affricanes. There are some others, who doe fetch the Originall of those Cimmerians, from Gomer the Sonne of Iaphet, and youngest Sonne of Noah, of whom they should take their Name, by change of some Letters, calling them Cimmerians, in stead of Gomorians. But howsoeuer it was, that Nation of Cimmerians, abandoning the vtmost Confines of Thrace, and the fore-named Bosphorus; deuided themselues into dyuers bands: one whereof made their way to the Pannonians; another to that side of Germanie, where the Cimbrian Chersonnesus is described by our Geographers; And the rest, leauing Europe, passed into Phrygia, and making vppe higher into Asia, set downe their rest on the Banckes of Danubie, and the maine Ocean. There (once more) they separated themselues into two Troupes: One whereof entred into Europe, vnder conduct of their King named Francion. And, being no other then meere Vacabond persons, enquiring still for noueltie of Countries, after they had runne through a great part of Europe; at length, they rested on the banckes of Rhine, where they would needs build a Citty, in semblaunce and Name of Troy, the Capitall Commaunder of Phrigia. They began the foundation, but the worke remained imperfect. The other sort, that made their aboad on the banckes of Danubie, elected for their King one named Torchor, by whose name they were called Torches or Torques.

The Cimbrian Chersonnesus.

Torches or Torques of Torquor their King.

Torques: euen as on the contrary ſide, the other, after the name of Francion their King, were tearmed Francs, Françions, or Françons. They waxing weary of their kings Empire (which grew to an inſupportable tyranny) expulſed them, & liued a long time without any King, vnder authoritie of their Captaines. But in the end, corruption ouer-ſwaying thoſe Captaines, and threatning a tyrannicall vſurpation: they did likewiſe caſt them off, and grew to their former election of Kings againe, euen from the ſelfe-ſame ſtirp and race, whereof their firſt Kings had bin elected. They made choiſe then of a Man named Theudomer, ſon to Richomer, a man of ſtrong, great and goodly ſtature, wearing his Haire long, and hée was deſcended of the race of Priam King of Phrygia, and of Francion. So that, if this opinion be true, it ſhould enſtruct vs, that the Originall of the Françons or Françions, proceeded of the Cimmerians, and that thoſe Cimmerians came from Phrygia, and the Troyans.

Theudomer, a kinſman (by deſcent) to king Priam

The Cimbrians, who were deſcended of the Cimmerians, went to the banckes of Rhine, and dwelt there in thoſe ſtraits, where (in theſe daies) are the Countries of Holland and Gueldres: But they were forced thence, by frequent ouerflowings, and ſtrange inundations of the waters of Rhine.

The Sicambrians, being iſſued of theſe Cimbrians, and who neuer boudged from the ſhoares of Rhine, as theſe others did, of whom we haue formerly ſpoken: they paſſed into Italy, and from

thence into other Regions heretofore mentioned. And it is to be noted, that when the Cimbrians went first to Rhine (bee it that they came from the Pannonians by Land, or from Phrygia and Thrace by the Germaine Sea, being in number about 489360.) they were by the Teutones and Thuringians, Neighbors to Rhine, named Neumagi, as much to say, as new kinsmen or Cousins.

Neumagi, is new kinsmen.

Afterward, when their King Antenor (a man of great power) had espoused Cambra, a beautifull, wise, and chast Lady, borne in the Country of Brittaine, now called England: in favour of her, he tearmed his people Sicambrians. This happened in the yeare of the Worlds Creation, 1550. At which time Artaxerxes raigned ouer the Persians, and Hannibal passed first into Italie.

Antenor married Cambra Daughter to the King of Britaine.

Antenor, King of the Sicambrians, left to those his people inhabiting on the Rhine, his Sonne Priam for their King. After whom succæded Marcomedes, who extended his Dominion from the banckes of Rhine, so farre as Thuringe. The other Sicambrian Kinges, succæding after these fore-named; did (almost all of them) tearme themselues Troyans: which holdeth (with good iudgement) to shew, that the Sicambrians were issued of the Cimmerians and Phrygians.

Priam, Son to Antenor succeeded him, & then Marcomedes.

There were also many Kinges of these Nations, and after that the Sicambrians grew to encrease neere the Rhine, both in multitude of men and riches: diuers other Kinges raigned ouer them,

them, who extended the limites of their poſſeſſions, on eyther ſide the Rhine. In the raigues of Clodion, Clodomire the ſecond, Meradac and Bolon, (vnder conduct of whom, the Cimbrians forſooke the ſhoares of Rhine, by reaſon of the inundations of the ſaide Riuer, and likewiſe of the Sea) they leagued themſelues with the Teutones or Allemaignes, and departed in great troupes from their habitations; leauing very few there behinde them, who being afterward vanquiſhed by the Romaines, with other people of the Gaules neighbouring nære the Rhine; continued peaceably in their dwellings, vntill the declining of the Romaine Empire: but yet they were wadged as Souldiers in the Romaine Legions, and ſerued the Romains faithfully in all their wars.

Clodion, Clodomire, Meradac & Bolō kings, leagued with the Teutones.

Some certaine yeares after, they rebelled againſt the Emperour Honorius, who conquered them in a battaile: But, recouering their loſſe, they grew in to good fauour with the Emperour Valentinian. Hereupon ſome haue written, that in regard they gaue him good ayde againſt the Alanes, & expelled them from the Palus Mæotides: they were by him called Francks, and diſpenſed withall for tenne yeares tribute, which formerly (as a Duc) they payed to the Romaines. But at the ten yeares end, the Emperor ſent his Collectours to them, to leuy againe the ſaide tribute: whereto they would in no wiſe liſten, but deſpiſing his commaundement, they murdered his Officers.

Why the Emperour Valentinian called thē Francs.

K. Priam slaine, and his people fled into Germany.

The Emperor being offended at their rebellion, assembled a potent Army, that vanquished them in battaile, wherein also Priam their King was slaine, and they driuen to flight from their Cittie Sicambria. Seeing thus expulsed thence, they came into Germany, which then was enimy to the Romains, & possessing themselues of Thuringe; they liued there (for some time) vnder the raigne of Marcomedes, son to Priam, & of Sueno, sonne to Antenor, one of their Kings: thus you may see what some haue said. But, as concerning the Citty of Sicambria, builded neer to the Palus Mæotides, not by the Françones or Françions, but onely so auouched, by the writings of Hnnibant, & afterward by those of Gregory of Tours, of Rheginon, and of Sigisbert: good Authors do make a meere mockery of it, for they neuer knew any other Citty named Sicambria, but that famous Citty which is in Allemaigne. So that by this our instant deduction, it euidently appears, that ỹ Sicambrians dwelt with the Pannonians, & that (from thence) they came into Germany, to the shoars of Rhine: and hauing in such manner obtained their liberty, they were then first of all called Francs. But now to come againe to our Francs, Francions, or Francones, admit them to be issued of the Sicambrians, or of the Cimbrians, or of the Germans, or of any other: It is notorious enough, that two great Prouinces were by them inhabited, & named; to wit, Orientall France or Françonia, in the Country of Saxony, & the kingdome of France in Gaule: and that the very

The Sicambrians liued with the Pánonians.

Franconia in Saxonie, and France in Gaule.

very firſt time, that any ſpeach was heard of thē, it was in the declining of the Romaine Empire, vnder the Emperors Aurelianus, Probus, Florianus, and Proculus. Which hath made ſome to conceit the very ſame matter of the Sicambrians, and that the name of Francs was giuen them, eyther after one of their Kings; or of their bold courage, or of the Hebrew Fraci. The Emperor Aurelianus had to deale with them, when they would nœds paſſe the Rhine, to come into Gaule, and (as ſome report) ſlue a great number of them. And yet they were not ſo much weakened, but they could rebell againe, and withſtand the ſuccæding Emperors.

Of the word Franc or Francs.

Now let vs come to the Etimologie of this name of Franc, or Francs, there are ſome, who make no other proofe thereof, but that it was only in regard of the immunity, giuen vnto them by the Emperor Valentinian, after they had holpen him againſt the Alaines: Inferring alſo, that he called them ſo by a Greek name, François, which is as much to ſay; as bold, hardy, & valiant, and by thoſe meanes were enfranchiſed from all touls, ſubſidies, and tributes for ten years ſpace. But there is not any Etimology receiued by our Frenchmen, but ſuch as certaine Authors, by idle forged Hiſtories of their owne braine, would make them to beleeue: and that they are deriued of Françus or Françion, ſon to Hector, according as we haue already declared.

Now, to anſwere all theſe recited opinions, and to begin with the word Ferocitie, as deriued

The French wold haue their name deriued of Ferocitie.

of the adiectiue Ferox, and whereof some great estimation is made: There is no apparance at al, that they shoulde deriue their name from thence, this Etymologie being but puld in by the eares, and so farre off from the name of Francs, as there néeds no other reason to obiect against it, but the very spacious distance betweéne these two words Ferocitie and Francois, considering withal, that all Authors haue described the French, to be men milde, courteous and affable, and not fierce, stern or cruell. As for the other reason, the best receyued of them, that striues to make vs beléeue, that they are issued of Francus or Francion, the son of Hector: It is most certain, that there neuer was any such Francus or Francion son to Hector, be-

Hector had no son but Astianax.

cause Hector had but one son, named Astianax, who at the surprizall of Troy, was thrown by the Greeks from a very high Tower, to the end, that no one of the Troyans race might remaine, to reuenge (vpon the Greekes) the sacke of Troy. And to say, that the Etymology of the name of Francs

Franchise and Immunitie.

came from the franchise and immunity, which was giuen vnto them by the Emperor Valentinian: It hath no likelyhood of reason, because they were called so before Valentinian was borne. Now, albeit that the name of franchise, comes néerest to that of Francs: yet cannot that deriuation be receiued for authentical, because the name of this Nation is more auncient (by more then a thousande yeares) then the worde of franchise, which is but a new coynde word in respect of the other, and which, by Frenchmen (louers of their owne

owne language) hath bin allowed to ſignifie the ſaid liberty.

¶ The Election of *Pharamond*, who was the firſt King of France, how he was elected for his Vertues and Heroyick actions only. The Francs gaue ayde to the Emperor Valentinian, and (by that occaſion) were exempted from paying Tribute for ten yeares. In like manner, what Ceremonies were aunciently obſerued, in election of their Kings; and of the Salique Law.

THe Francs, Francions, or Francons (of whoſe aduentures and Etymologie wee haue amplie diſcourſed) hauing after many peregrinations, Voyages, and Trauerſes, made choiſe of their abiding at Paulus Mæotides: very neere thereunto, and (according to the opinion of the moſt common and receiued) they builded a Citty, where they inhabited vntill the time of the Emperor Valentinian, whom they valiantly aſſiſted againſt the Alaines, that had rebelled againſt the Emperor and the Romaine Empire. In recompence of which good ſuccour & ſeruice, the Emperor diſcharged them (for tenne yeares ſpace) from paying the ordinary Tribute, which they owed to the Romains: yet ordering, that (at expyration of ſuch time) they ſhoulde returne to their former ſeruitude. The ten yeares being expyred, conſtraint came for repayment of the

The Francs builded a Citty neere to the Palus Mæotides.

the Tribute: But they (feeling ỹ ſweetnes of ſuch an immunity, & deſirous to reduce to a perpetuall priuiledge, that which the Emperour had but in grace graunted) in pride and preſumption replyed, that they purpoſed no longer paiment of any thing: but, ſince with price of theyr bloude, and no meane daunger of their lines, they had freely bought and purchaſed their freedome: they were not ſo weakely aduiſed, to forgoe (at ſo cheape a Market) that which had coſt them ſo deare.

The Francs foyled by the Emperor, chuſe a Captaine named Marcomir.

The Emperour diſpleaſed with this their refuſall, brought a great Armie againſt them, and foyling them in the fight, expelled them from their dwelling: So that they were enforced to aſſemble themſelues, vnder the conduct of a chiefe Captaine amongeſt them, named Marcomir or Marcmeier, which (in the olde Franc Language) ſignifieth a Gouernour of they Country. Thus they withdrewe them-ſelues into a Prouince of Germanie (at this preſent called Allemaigne) where they inhabited, and after their own name, called the Prouince of their abiding, Franconia. There are ſome Authors, who will not auouch, that the Emperour Valentinian did vanquiſhe them, becauſe (in verie trueth) there is no ſuch matter founde in any verye auncient Writer. Contrary-wiſe, Amianus Marcellinus, an olde and true Hiſtoriographer, ſayeth, That when as Valentinian was in Italie, he receyued tydings, that great Brittaine (now named England) was then ouer-runne and ſpoyled) by the Pictes and

The words of Amianus Marcellinus

and Scottes; And likewiſe, that a great number of the Francs, as alſo of the Saxons, did ouerſpreade Gaule. But common Opinion houldeth, that the Francs woulde not pay the Tribute, after tenne yeares were expyred, and that beeing, thereuppon, ouercome by the Emperour Valentinian; they were (as alreadye hath beene sayde) expulsed from theyr abiding, and compelled to saue themselues in the sayde Prouince.

They chuse an order of gouermente among thē.

Being there seated, they grewe desirous, to chooſe and eſtabliſhe a manner of Gouerning their Eſtate, whereby enſued manie contentions among them. For, some woulde haue it brought into a Monarchie, which is the Gouernement of one Prince onely: And others, into an Ariſtocratie, which is to bee gouerned by a certaine number of Wiſe and diſcrete perſonnes.

The aduiſe of Charamond, concerning the election of Pharamond

Hereuppon, in a publique aſſemblie made, on this occaſion, one among them, named Charamond, made a verie eloquent Oration in the behalfe of Monarchie, and his maine ſcope aymed; that they ſhoulde elect for their King and Prince, Pharamond, a man iuſt, verie deuoute, of good ſorte, and valiaunt. qualities neceſſarilie requyred to bee in a Prince. Moreouer, hee added, that if hee ſhoulde doo anie thing, vnfitting for a King and Prince: it was a very eaſie matter for them, to take away from him the admniſtration of his Kingdome and Gouernement, becauſe people were before Kings,

„ **Kings and made them their Rulers.** Nor can I
„ be perſwaded, **quoth he**, that the man now to be
„ elected, will any way fall into Tiranny, or raiſe
„ vs in any diſobedience towardes him, in regard
„ of the vertuous qualities wherewith he is endu-
„ ed: And from him may we well expect, all ſuch
„ Iuſtice, kindneſſe, care, and aſſiſtaunce, as Sub-
„ iects can hope for in their Prince, his actions &
„ behauiour of life being ſo wel knowne vnto vs.
„ He is Sonne to this woorthy Captaine *Marco-*
„ *mir*, who ſo wiſely and happily hath brought vs
„ hither, who ſo ſecurely hath heere eſtabliſhed
„ vs, and who ſo valiantly ſheelded vs from the
„ Romaines threatnings; when (by inequality of
„ our power to theyrs) wee were compelled to
„ forſake the Palus Mæotides. Wee are then
„ much obliged to Pharamond, in memory of
„ his Fathers weighty merites: And theſe two e-
„ ſpeciall reaſons ſhoulde mooue vs to receyue
„ him as our King, and preferre him (before all
„ other) to that dignity; euen as wee ought to
„ aduance Monarchy before Ariſtocratie, where-
„ unto I know ſome among vs will encline, with-
„ out fore-ſeeing the harmes that will befall vs, if
„ we embrace it. For, if wee conſider our aunci-
„ ent manner of life, it hath beene to obey one,
„ and not many, in which regarde, me-thinkes,
„ that the firſt thing, which ought to be reſpe-
„ cted in the eſtabliſhing of an Eſtate, is the
„ humour of the Inhabitantes, and to conſider,
„ of what commaund or gouernement they are
„ moſt capeable, to wit; of Monarchie alone, or

many-

many-headed Ariſtocratie.

Thus ſpake Charamond, and then manie contrarietes were mooued among them, about diuerſitie of Opinions. Whereupon, Prince Charamond beganne agayne another moſt excellent Oration, maintaining his former ſpeeches againſte Quadrek, a great Prince likewiſe, who defended the contrarie, ſaying: That Kingdomes gouerned by many Princes, were more peaceable, and better pollicied, then to be ſubiects to one king onely.

Quadrek his oppoſition againſt Charamond

After all theſe diſputes (long debated on eyther ſide) the Francs (who were more capeable to liue vnder a Monarchie, then a publicke commaunde, becauſe they were men free, moſt hardie, and couragious) by common conſent, elected King Pharamond, and according to their cuſtome, placing him vppon a Pauois, lifted him vppon the Shoulders of men, and ſo walked with him three times about the place of their meeting, proclaiming him their King. This was in the yeare of the Worldes creation, 4384. And of Jeſus Chriſt 420. Or after others, foure hundred twenty ſix, or four hundred twenty and ſeauen.

The election of King Pharamond

Some ſay, that he was the Sonne of Marcomir, yet others ſay no. His name was Pharamõd or Waramond, which in the ancient Franc Language, ſignifyeth a man of truth. And wee may well conceiue, that his name and Nature were correſpondent, and that he was a vertuous perſonage: conſidering they choſe him for their king, after

after such a great contention, and withall, that such as desire to liue vnder a Monarchy, and to haue one King: will haue him to be a good man, which is the onely felicitie that can come to any Estate, when a Prince is furnished with integritie and trueth, and all other Vertues commendable in a Prince: Euen as contrariwise, it can sustaine no greater mischiefe, then to be subiected to barbarousnesse, and Iniustice of a cruell Tyrant.

Pharamond first King of the Francs or Franconians.

All the truest Historyes doo agrée, that Pharamond was the firste King of the Francs or Francons, in Franconia a Prouince of Germanie: but they speake not of his passage into Gaule, for hee was neuer there. And the first of them that euer went thither, was Clodion the Hayrie, Sonne (according to some) of the forenamed Pharamond. Nor came he also thither (but as wee vse to say) to bidde the Countrey God morrow: For hee was repulsed, chased, and compelled to returne thence. And hee, that (of the two Nations of the Francones and Gaules) made them but one, reducing them into one bodye: was Meroneus, the Sonne of Clodion, as shall bee after declared in his due place. Pharamond liued onelye on the Bankes of Rhine, without passing anye further thence: it contented him to bring his people onely thither, to sounde, not the foord, but the fortune of passage into Gaule.

Clodion was the first that entred into Gaule.

Beeing chosen King, hee conceiued, that the verie strongest bonde, which bindes and shuttes vp

vp anie State for longeſt continuance, is the Conſtitution of Lawes: which are nothing elſe, but a reaſon planted in Nature, commending honeſt occaſions, and prohibiting their contraries. Beſide that, they had neuer beene made by Lawe-Makers, but for the conſeruation of States, Empyres, Kingdomes, Seigneuries, Citties, and theyr Inhabitantes. And becauſe long Warres, as alſo their ſo recent and late foyle, had brought his people vnto ſome good forme of obedience: hee concluded to make new Lawes, which might cauſe them to liue vnder certaine Rules of pollicy, conſidering, that as hardlie can a people liue without Lawes, as the body without members.

Pharamond deuiſeth Lawes for his people, with conſent of his Lords.

For the better eſtabliſhing of theſe newe Lawes, hee vſed the aduiſe of foure his cheefeſt Barons, euen thoſe of woorthieſt merrite amongeſt all his Lordes, to whome ſome doo giue theſe Names Vridogaſt, Sagobaſt, Vriſogaſt, and Boſogaſt. Hee likewiſe deuiſed certaine Lawes, which hee tearmed Saliques and Ripuaries, the Chapters whereof are yet to bee ſeene, which doo not ſpeake any thing of the generall right of his Kingdomes, but concerning the particular right of euerie one, eſpecially in the Article of Succeſſion. From whence our French Nation hath deriued the Lawe Salique, ſpeaking of the ſucceſſion of the Kealme of France, the inſtitution whereof, they attribute to Pharamond.

Lawes Saliques or Ripuaries.

Againſt which Iudgement, wee will not oppoſe

oppose our selues any way, onely we say, by the testimony of truest Historyes, there is not found any but this Salique Law, which the French doe boldely affirme to bee made by Pharamond. Yet such as labour to haue vs beleeue this opinion, doe scarcely know howe the Kingdomes of Barbarians, and their Kinges gouerned: Albeit it was a custome obserued among Barbarous Nations, that their Daughters should neuer succeede in the Crownes of their Kingdomes. Also, in the raigne of Pharamond, the third generall Councell of Ephesus was holden, against Nestorius Byshop of Constantinople; & the fourth Schisme came into the Church. Saint Hierome and Saint Augustine died, the one aged ninetie one yeares, and the other seuenty six, after they had long time gouerned their Churches: And then began Christian Religion to flourish, by the holy and painefull writings of many Doctours. This is all that can be saide of Pharamond, first King of the Francs, or Franconians, who afterward were called French-men: And hee, after he had raigned ten, or (according to some others) eleauen yeares, died in Anno Dom. 431. Our Historyes haue not giuen him any Wife, albeit some say, that Clodion his Successor was his Sonne.

A custome among barbarous Nations.

Especiall maters happening in the time of Pharamond

431

Clodion sir named Hayrie, for wearing long hayre,

2 Clodion, second King of the Francs Franconians, or French, succeeded his Father Pharamond, in the yeare of grace 431. He was sir-named Clodion the Hairy, because hee wore his Beard and Haire long, ordaining the French to weare

weare the like, in ſigne of liberty : becauſe the Romaines vſed to poule and ſhaue all ſuch as they ſubdued, in ſigne of ſeruitude, and this faſhion of wearing long haire continued in France, vntill the time of Peter Lombard, in the raigne of Lewes the younger, fourth King of that name. and a beard in ſigne of liberty.

Clodion perceiuing the Romaines to war weak, by Warres which they maintained againſt the Viſigotes, and loath to looſe occaſion for enlarging his Kingdome : leuied a mighty Army, ſubdued the Thuringians or Lorraignes, took Cambray by aſſault, putting all the Romaines to the Sword that were therein, and vanquiſhed their Army neere to the Riuer of Rhine. Then paſſing the Forreſt Charbonniere, hee tooke Tournay; and purſuing his purpoſe, for dilation of his Confines, he went into France, conquering Burgundy, Tholouſe, Angoleſme and all Aquitain. Clodion hauing raigned twenty yeares, died in An. 449. The deedes of Clodion for enlarging his Kingdome.

3 Meroneus, third King of the French, ſucceeded Clodion as his Sonne, or neereſt Kinſman, Anno 450. Tritemius writeth, that he was Sonne to Clodion, but it is not found to bee ſo in the Hiſtories of France. In him the generation of the Kings of Fraunce tooke beginning, which endured vntill King Pepin, the Sonne of Charles Martell. Meroneus (like vnto his Predeceſſors) was a Pagan; yet very bold and courragious in warre, as he declared by many foughten battailes, wherein hee was continually preſent. In his time, Attila King of the Hunnes or 450

The beginning of the Kinges of France in generation.

Hungares (who tearmed himselfe Flagellum Dei) leuyed an Army of fiue hundred thousand Men, and came into the Countrey of Gaule; where he spoyled Coulongue and Treues, with many Castles scituated on the Rhine. Hee trauersed Fraunce also, where hee wasted Amiens, Beauuais, Chaalons, Troys and Rheimes, bringing his siedge before Orleaunce. Meroneus seeing Fraunce so much oppressed (with the helpe of Ætius, Lieutenant Generall in Gaule for the Armie of Theodosius the younger, Emperour of Rome, and of Theodorick King of the Vuisegothes) gaue him a strong battaile in the Catalaunique Fieldes (which is sayde to be neere to Chaalons in Champaigne) in which fight, were slaine about two hundred thousand Men of warre, as well on the one side as the other. Attila beholding his Men in disorder, and that he could not call them backe againe as he would: was enforced to retire home to Hungarie, where he could neuer after re-assemble them of that company.

Attila with his Hunnes inuaded Gaule.

The flight of Attila out of Gaul.

This battaile was fought in the yeare 452. Others say, it was in the twenty seuenth year of the Empire of Valentinian the third. Meroneus hauing his hopes much more highly aduaunced by such a great and glorious victory: tooke the Citties of Sens, Paris, and a great part of Gaule, not finding any to offer him resistance. So that thence forward, the Countrey which before had beene tearmed Gaule, began euen then to be called France.

The

He cauſed one of his Sonnes to be throwne into a Fire, becauſe hee hadde ſlaine the King of Cornewall, who came in courteſie to bee merrie with him; Cornewall beeing then tributarie to France, as ſome haue reported, who alſo doe entitle Meroneus to be the firſt king of the French, and all his Race the Merouingians. Hee dyed in the tenth yeare of his raigne (after hee hadde very much enlarged his Kingdome) in Anno Domini. 472. Or, according to others, 459. When Gaul began to be cald France

4 Childerick, or, as ſome tearme him, Chilperick, Sonne to Moroneus, ſucceeded him in the yeare 460. The great lururie, and bad life which he led, in the beginning of his raign, abuſing the Wiues and Daughters of many worthy Lords, begot him ſuch indignation and hatred among thē; that they purpoſing to ſurprize him, he was faigne to ſaue himſelfe by flight to Baſinus, king of Thuringe, now called Lorraigne. This did he by the councell of a friend of his, named Vidomarck, who (as a ſecret token betweene them) breaking a Ring of Gold, gaue him the one halfe: coniuring him, to giue no faith (for his returne) but to him that ſhould bring him that other halfe. The French elected (in his place) a Lieutenant of the Romaines, named Gillon, who held Soiſſons, and laide ſuch heauy exactions on euery man, exerciſing alſo ſuch cruelties on the Princes of France: that (in the 8. yeare) hee was expelled, and Childerick againe reſtored, wholly by the meanes of Vidomarch. 460

The incontinent life of Childerick.

Childerick pursued Gillon his Enemy, and had great victories and conquestes against him. Hee fought a battaile also nære to Orleaunce, against Andoacre, who was Duke of the Saxons. Hee enlarged his Kingdome along the Riuer of Loyre, so far as Angeirs. One great and irrepairable errour he committed, for breaking the right of Hospitality, with Basinus King of Thuringe, (who had receiued, and relieued him in the chiefest of his aduersity) he caried away with him his wife Basina, by whom he had a Son called Clouis. He died in An. 485. the 26. of his raigne.

Childebert wronged his dearest frend

5 Clouis, first King Christian, and fift King of France, succeeded his Father in the year of our saluation 485. He married Clotilda, Sister to the Duke of Burgundy. He made warre vppon Siagrius, the Sonne of Gillon, Lieutenant to the Romaines, who held Soissons, and som other parts of Belgick Gaule: from whence hee expulsed him, and made him fly to Tholouze, to Alaric King of the Vuisegoths; who betrayed him, and sending back to Clouis, he had his head smitten off. So the Romaines, being partly fled, and partly slaine; held no longer dominion in France. Hauing likewise vanquished King Basinus, hee subdued Thuringe, now called Lorraigne: and amplified the kingdom, euen from ỳ Rhine, so far as Seine, extending her limits to the riuer Loyre. The Quæne his Wife did often times sollicite him to become a Christian, whereto he would by no means listen: til being in a hot conflict against the Allemaignes (who descended in great companies,

The first Christian K. of France.

The Romaines Dominion ended in France.

panies, to driue the French out of Gaule) and deſparing of the battaile; hee thought vppon the God of Clotilda his Queene, promiſing, that he would be a Chriſtian, if that day he obtayned the victory. It pleaſed God to grant it him, and hee was Baptized at his returne in the Cittie of Rheimes by Remy Arch-Byſhoppe of the ſayde place, with his two Siſters, and more then three thouſand of the Nobility. The ſacred Oyle was poured on his head, euen in his Baptiſme, and all his ſucceſſours (at their Coronations) haue in like manner beene ſacred. Clouis changed his former Coate of Armes, taking three Golden Floure-de-luces, in a fielde Azure: where-with hee firſt warred vppon Gondebant King of Burgundy, who was Vnckle to his Wife, and diſcomfited the Vuiſegothes before Poictiers, hauing ſlaine (with his owne hand) Alaric their King, and wonne from them the Countrey of Aquitaine, ſo farre as the Pyrenean Mountaines, and almoſt all Gaule and Allemaigne. Hereuppon the Emperour Anaſtaſius ſent him a Crowne of Golde, with th' Title and veſture of Patritius and Conſull. He made a choyſe of Paris for his ordinarie abyding, and commaunded it to bee the cheefe Cittie of his Kingdome: where he dyed in Anno 514. beeing aged eyghty yeares. And was buryed in the Church of S. Geneuiefue du mont de Paris, which himſelfe had founded, in memory of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, leauing four Sons and two daughters.

How Clouis conuerted and becam a Chriſtian, by means of his Queene.

The Emperour ſent Clouis a Crowne of Gold.

515. 6 Childebert ſucceéded his Father Clouis, in the yeare fiue hundred fiftéene, but not in the whole kingdome; For he leauing foure Sonnes liuing, it was deuided into foure partes among them, and each one was King of his ſeuerall portion. Childebert hadde for his part Paris, where hée held his Seate royall, with other dependaunces, as Poictu, Maine, Touraine, Champaigne, Aniou, Guienne, and Auuergne. Clothaire was King of Soiſſons; Clodomire King of Orleaunce; and Theodorick the Baſtard, béeing the eldeſt, was King of Metz. They made Warre by the procurement of Clotilda their Mother, on Sigiſmond King of Burgundy; who was ſlaine (with his Wife & Child) by Clodomire king of Orleaunce: who likewiſe (in another battaile) was kild himſelfe by Gondemar, vnder a feigned pretence of friendſhippe: but for this (in the end) Burgundy was taken and deſtroied. Clothaire aſſiſted by Childebert, poſſeſſed himſelfe of the Kingdom of Orleaunce, and ſlew his Nephewes. Clothaire and Childebert had great wars together, which in the ende was accorded; and they paſſed with their armies into Spaine againſt Almarick, who vſed their Siſter very hardly, becauſe ſhe would not bee an Arrian: And killing him in the battaile, they brought her backe with them into France. Yée raigned 45. yeares, and dyed without any Children: hee lieth buried at S. Germaine des Prez, which he founded by the name of S. Vincent.

Foure kings raigning together in France.

Clothaire & Childebert warre in Spaine.

559 7 Clothaire, the Sonne of Clouis, ſucceéded

ded his Brother Childebert, in the yeare 559. or as ſome ſay, 560. hee had before bene King of Soyſſons fortie fiue yeares, and ſuruiued all his Brethren and their Children; ſo that (at length) he remained ſole-king of France. He was luxurious, and cruell in the death of his two Nephews, Children to Clodomire King of Orleaunce. He likewiſe (with much diſgrace) vpon a God-Friday, ſlewe Gauliter d'Yuetot in a Church: For reparation of which wrong, he aduanced or erected the Land of Yuetot (which is in Normandy) into a kingdome, to the heires of the ſaid Gaultier. Clothaire ſeeing himſelfe Sole-Monarch of the Gaules; would needes leuy the third part of the Churches reuennewes: Againſt which the Arch-biſhop of Tours made reſiſtance, telling the King boldly, that the reuennewes of the Church, were the goods of the poore. He loſt a battaile againſt the Saxons and Thuringians, becauſe hee would not take them to mercie, and ſuffer them to depart with their liues ſaued. Hee ouercame (in warre) Cran his Baſtard Sonne, who roſe in armes againſt him, cauſing him, his wife and Children to be burned: hauing alſo formerly ſlaine the Duke of Bretaigne, whom he had cauſed to reuoult. Hee raigned 51. yeares; dyed at Compeigne, and lieth buryed at S. Medard de Soyſſons, Anno 567.

Clothaire Sole-Monarch of the Gaules.

8 Cherebert or Aribert, ſucceeded his Father Clothaire, in the yeare 567. Paris fell to him by partage. He was very vnchaſt of life, & repudiated his Wife, to entertaine two of her waighting

567

Cherebert an vnchaſt King.

ting women: for which Germaine Byshoppe of Paris excommunicated him. Hee raigned nine yeares, died without any heires: And lieth buried at Saynt Romaine nære Blaye in Gascoigne.

577 9 Chilperick, succeeded his Brother Cherebert, in the year 577. hauing before raigned nine yeares King of Soissons. He had three wiues, the first whereof he diuorced from him, compelling her to enter into Religion. The second, beeing named Audoüera, he banished. And the third, called Athanagilde, he caused to be strangled in her bedde. All which was done by the procurement of Fredegonde, his Concubine, whom hee then married, and had a Sonne by her, named Clothaire. His Brethren warred againste him for his inhumanities, and woulde haue deposed him: but in the ende, they were pacifyed. Chilperick perceiuing his Brother Sigibert, king of Metz, to be much molested by the Allemaigns, toke many Citties from him: whereat Sigibert being iustly offended, neuer ceased, till (by the helpe of Gontran) hee recouered all that was taken from him, pursuing him still in such sort, that Theodebert his Son was slaine, and hee glad to saue himselfe in Tournay, where Sigibert besieged him. Sigibert was slaine in his Tent, by two Traitors hyred thereto by Fredegonde. In short while after, Fredegonde knowing that the king had noted ouermuch familiarity, betweene her and Landry (Maire of the Pallace) her adulterer: she caused the king to be murdered by the saide

Fredegond Concubine to Chilperick.

Fredegonde caused the King to bee murdered.

ſaid Landry, at Chelles nære Paris, as hee returned ſomewhat late one night from hunting, hauing raigned in all 23. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Germaine des Prez.

10 In the yeare, 587. Clothaire, ſecond of that name, the ſon of Chilperick & Fredegonde, (being but foure months old) was acknowledged for Legitimate, and made king, vnder the gouernement of Gontran King of Orleans his Vnckle, who made Landry (Maire of the Pallace) Tutor to the young King, and becauſe he ſhould bee norriſhed with his Mother Fredegonde. Childebert King of Metz, endeuoured by Armes to get the gouernment of the kingdome, and (as much as in him lay) to haue Fredegonde puniſhed, for the death of his Father Sigibert, and of his Vnckle Chilperik, whom ſhe had cauſed to be both murdered. Gontran appeaſed him by making hym his heire: yet notwithſtanding, in ſhort while after he began war againe, againſt which Landry with Fredegonde (who was a woman of admired courage) oppoſed themſelues. And ſhe (to imbolden the French) carried the young king hir ſon in her armes, walking ſo with him thorough the thickeſt of the battell, and ſhewing him vnto the ſoldiors, ſhe would ſay: Fight for your younge King, and defend his kingdom: by which means Sigibert was foiled, and driuen to flight. Brunehault, hauing put to death many children of the bloud Royall, was deliuered to Clothaire, who cauſed her to be torne with four horſes. He reuenged himſelfe on the Saxons, leauing no male child aliue

587

Childebert ſeeketh to reuenge his fathers death.

Fredegonde a woman of great ſpirit.

Brunehault executed.

aliue that was taller then his ſword. He raigned 44. yeares, and lyeth buried at S. Germaine des Pres.

631. 11 Dagobert, firſt of that name, ſucceeded his Father Clothaire, in the yeare, 631. he gaue to his brother Aribert, the kingdom of Aquitaine in partage, which returned to him againe, by ſuruiuing his ſaide Brother. Dagobert was in great peril of death, in the life time of his father, becauſe he had cut off his ſchoolmaiſters beard, and cauſed him to bee grieuouſly beaten: but miraculouſly he auoyded the anger of his father, wherupon he builded the Church of S. Denis in France, which he inriched with treaſures taken from other churches, eſpecially that of Poictiers, and graunted them alſo the Fayre of Lendit. Hee was the firſt that gaue any patrimony of the Crown to Churches. He conquered the Sclauonians, who were then Idolaters, and quieted the Gaſcoignes that had rebeld againſt him, compelling alſo the King of Bretaigne to do him homage. It is ſaid, that being much addicted to pleaſure, he would train after him a troupe of gallant maidens, apparrelled like to Quœnes. By a perpetuall Edict, hee baniſhed all Iewes out of France, that would not bee baptiſed. During his raigne, Mahomet the falſe Prophet, a native of Arabia, began to ſhew himſelfe. He raigned ſirteene yeares, dies of a Flux in his belly at Eſpinay, and lieth buried at Saint Denis, which hee inſtituted as a Sepulchre for Kings.

The building of the Church of S. Denis.

Iewes baniſhed out of France.

645 12 Clouis, ſecond of that name, ſucceeded his Father

Father Dagobert, in the yeare of mans ſaluation, 645. He had but one baſtard Brother, named Sigibert, who in the life time of his father Dagobert was prouided of the Kingdome of Auſtraſia, and raigned there but eleauen yeares, leauing a Sonne, whom hee dearely re-commended vnto Grimoald, Maire of his Pallace. But he, inſted of aduancing him in his right, cauſed him to bee ſhauen, and ſent vnto a Monaſtery in Scotland, making his owne ſonne Hildebert King of Auſtraſia. Clouis hearing this wicked act, within two yeares after, cauſed Grimoald to bee put to death, and expulſed Hildebert out of the Kingdome: by which meanes, Clouis remained ſole Monarch of the Gaules. He had by his wife Baudone (a Lady of Saxonie) three Sons, who were all Kings each after other. In his time there happned in Fraunce ſuch ſcarſity of victuals, and conſequently ſuch an extreame famine, that Clouis, to redreſſe it, took from the Church of S. Denis, the ſilver couertures about the Relicks and roſe, and other treaſures (wherewith his father Dagobert had enriched it, to feede the poore in ſo great a miſery, exempting thereto (in recompence) the iuriſdiction of the Biſhop of Paris. He went to Ieruſalem, and there warred againſt the Infidels. He raigned ſixteene yeares, and dying, was buried at S. Denis.

The treachery of Grimoald Maire of the Pallace.

Clouis ſole Monarch of the Gaules.

The care of Clouis for feeding the poore.

13 In the yeare, 663. Clothaire, thirde of that name, ſucceeded after his father Clouis. Kinges (in thoſe times) were ſo careleſſe of maintaining their Maieſtie Royall, that they ſuffered them-

663

themſelues to be gouerned by the Maires of their Pallace, who had charge of all their publicke affaires, while they (in meane ſpace) gaue themſelues wholly to voluptuouſneſſe. Theſe Maires hereby toke ſuch authority vpon them, that the king was but as their vaſſaile, and him woulds they keepe in ſome Caſtle, or other place of pleaſure, neuer ſhewing him to the people, but onely once in a yeare, the firſt day of May, and then it was done with great pompe, and Royall magnificence, mounted in a triumphall Chariot, and the people that toke pleaſure in ſuch ſights, wold ſalute him onely with loud acclamations. This courſe continued till Pepin le Bref, which was almoſt an hundred yeares. During the raygne of ſuch Kings, Paris and Normandie was all their largeſt demaines: the reſt of Gaule being diuorced as it were from the Kings Soueraigne prerogatiue, was in the poſſeſſion of many Princes, making themſelues Dukes and Earles in their ſeuerall iuriſdiction. He lieth buried at Chelles neere Paris, dying in the yeare, 666. and fourth of his raigne. Hee did not any thing deſeruing to be written, but onely kept his ſubiects in peace: For Ebroin was ſo terrible (he being then Maire and Gouernor) as neither the princes of France, or any other Straungers, durſt attempt to rayſe warre againſt him. The honor both of kings and kingdome, died with Clothaire, for the Maires of the Pallace, pretending to guard the rightes of the Crowne; beganne (each one thorowe his owne auarice) to debate the Gouerne-

The Maires of the Pallace ouerrule the Kings.

ment

ment of publicke affaires, as formerly hath beene declared.

14 Childerick, ſecond of that name, and ſonne of Dagobert, ſucceeded his Brother Clothaire, in the yeare, 666. being receiued by the French, in hatred of Theodorick: who (by the perſwaſion of Ebroine) was crowned King, but afterward ſhauen, and put into S. Denis Monaſtery, as Ebroine himſelfe was at Lucon in Burgundie. His inſolencies and cruelties, haſtened his tragicall ending, being ſlaine as he was hunting with his wife Blitilda great with childe, by one named Bodille, a Gentleman of Franconia, whō he had cauſed to be cruelly beaten. He raigned 12 yeares, and is buryed at S. Germain des Pres. 666

Childerick was ſlaine in hunting, and his Q. alſo.

15 Theodorick, firſt of that name, Sonne alſo to Dagobert, and Brother to Childerick, was againe made king in the year, 680. He, after the death of Cothaire the third, raigned a yeare and more, before Childerick, albeit he was the younger Brother, onely by the meanes of Ebroine, Maire of the Pallace. But in regard of his badde gouernment, he was ſhut vp in a Monaſtery, and ſo was Ebroin Maire of the Pallace, whoſe cruelties the French could not endure. But Childerick and his Queen being murdered in hunting, he was fetcht forth of the Monaſtery, and aduanced againe to the dignity Royall, in the yeare before expreſſed: And then was Landreſill, the ſon of Archambauld, made Maire of his Pallace. But Ebroin (forſaking his Cloiſter, got a great Army together, & won the victory againſt them; killing 680

Landreſill murdered by Ebroin.

killing Landrefill by Treason, and taking the King and kingdome into his owne gouernment, reuenging himselfe, without sparing any. Hee ouercame Pepin and Martine, Brothers to the Duke of Austrasia, and (contrary to his faithfull promise) killed the saide Martine: himselfe also being after slaine (in the night time) by Hermanfroy, Count of the same country. Pepin Heristell was then made Maire of the Pallace, who carried himselfe valiantly in his Office, and greatlie augmented the kingdome.

Pepin Heristel Maire of the Pallace.

This King Theodorick, whom some doo call Thierry, hauing raigned xix. yeares, died in Anno 693. leauing two sons by his wife Clotilda, Clouis who was king after him, and Childebert. During the raigns of these two precedent kings, the greatnesse of Royal Maiesty (which ought to be in Kings) did ouer-much obscure it selfe: & the Church of Rauenna (dissenting from the Romain Church) was yet by meanes of Pope Donus, drawne to voluntary conformity, which greatlie encreased the Cleargies honour, and their dignities, so that the Romain Church much augmented it selfe.

694. 16 Clouis, third of that name, and eldest sonne to Theodorick, entred into possession of the Royaltie, being verie yong in years, An. 694. In his time, Pepin Heristell, Maire of the Pallace, passed the Rhine with a puissant Army, subduing ỹ Saxons and Sueuians, who had reuolted from obedience, by reason of some troubles happening in France. Hee also conquered the Frisons with

The woorthy deeds of Pepin Heristell.

their

their Duke, and made them to receiue the Chriſtian faith. He raigned foure yeares, and his buriall is not recorded.

17 Childebert, ſecond of that name, ſucceeded his Brother Clouis, in the yeare, 698. Of his deeds there is little ſet downe in writing, for Pepin Heriſtell (Maire of the Pallace) ruled then the whole kingdome, and mannaged all the affayres of Fraunce at his pleaſure. He heard Ambaſſadors, and gaue them aunſwere, according peace or truce, as to himſelfe ſeemed beſt. In theſe raignes, the Maires of the Pallace held ſuch authority, as it was not lawful for any to contradict them. And yet Lambert, Biſh. of Vtrecht (whom Pepin had reuoked from banniſhment) notwithſtanding al his power, did not forbeare to reproue his adultry: but it coſt him his life, for hes was ſlaine by Dodon, brother to his concubine. Pepin made his own ſon Grimoald, Maire of the palace, in which office he was ſone after ſlaine. Then he made his baſtard ſon, called Charls Martel, duke of Auſtraſia, and Maire of the pallace. Pepin died in the 17. year of his gouernment, as Maire of ỹ Pallace: And Plectrude his wife, being deſirous to rule, with her young ſonne Thibaulte, cauſed Charles Martel to be imprisoned at Colougne. Childebert dies, hauing raigned 18. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Stephens of Naucy, as ſome haue ſuppoſed that his brother Clouis doth alſo.

698

The power and authority of Pepin Heriſtel

Charles Martell Baſtard ſonne to Pepin Heriſtell.

18 Dagobert, ſecond of that name, ſucceeded his father Childebert, in the yeare 716. He was gouerned by Plectrude, widdow to Pepin Heriſtel, and

716.

and by Thibaulte, Sonne to his sonne Drogon. Some French men Crowned (as their King) one named Daniell, or Chilperick, hauing the Counte Hermanfroy, Maire of the Pallace, that had slaine the cruell Ebroine. Charles Martell was still kept Prisoner at Coulongue, by Plectrude, who hindred him (by that meanes) from enioying his Dukedome of Austrasia. Thibault the youngest Sonne of Plectrude, aspyring to bee Sole-Maire of the Pallace, as also to expell Hermanfroy, and his King Chilperick; rayled an Army against them: But Hermanfroy withstood him so couragiously, nære to the Forrest Charboniere, that Thibaulte was glad to fly, with losse of his people. By this meanes, Hermanfroy (like a Conqueror) supported the raign of Chilperick, vntill that Charles Martell was escaped out of Prison. Dagobert raigned foure years, leauing two Sons; who, by the factions of diuers Princes (affecting the gouernment) were made Monkes.

Hermanfroy Maire of the Pallace.

Hermanfroy preuailed against Thibaulte.

720 19 Clothaire, fourth of that name, was king in Anno. 720. After that Charles Martell had escaped out of Prison, wherein he had bæne detained by Plectrude his Step-mother: he came presently into Fraunce with a strong Army, to reseaze his Lordship of Maire of the Pallace, and to exclude Chilperick (called Daniell) with duke Hermanfroy, Maire of the Pallace, who hadde made him King of France after the death of Dagobert the second. They encountred together, and by the ayde of the Duke of Frise; hæ was dis-

diſcomfited and fled. But yet his courage was not quailed, for afterward hee foiled Chilperick neere to Cambray: who hauing reunited his forces, with the helpe of Eudo Duke of Aquitaine, was once more vanquiſhed in Champaign. The Duke of Aquitaine retyring, toke Chilpericke home with him into his Country. Hermanfroy, (called by ſome Rainfroy) was purſued and taken in the Cittye of Angiers, where Martell (in kindneſſe) left him to finiſh his daies. Charles Martell hauing preuailed againſt all diſaduantages, was receiued in Fraunce for Maire and great Gouernor. After the firſt victory, which he had againſt Chilperick; he made Clothaire the fourth King of France, whom ſome do tearme to be Brother, and others Uncle to Dagobert the ſecond. He raigned two yeares, and lieth buried at Nancy.

Charls Martell maire & great Gouernour of France.

20 Chilperick, ſecond of that name, otherwiſe called Daniel, hauing bin nouriſhed young in a Monaſtery, had formerly raigned two yeares, before Clothayre the fourth. Charles Martell, after the death of the ſaid Clothaire, ſent for him out of Gaſcoigne, and acknowledging his lawfull right, cauſed him to be conſtituted King, in the yeare, 722. This did he the rather (nowe in the freſh Sun-ſhine of his reconfirmed power) to hold him as King in apearance onely, that he dying without iſſue, might leaue the Crown to his Brother. He raigned almoſt fiue yeares, and lyeth buried at Noyon.

722

The ſubtle pollicy of Charls Martell.

21 Theodorick, ſecond of that name, or Thierry

727

erry, as some call him, eldest sonne of Dagobert the second, was made King in the yeare 727. Charles Martell sent to fetch him forth of a Monastery, whereinto he had bin put when he was young, and created him King, in bare Title only: For Charles Martell (beeing Maire of the Pallace) did mannage the whole busines of the Kingdome, and carried himselfe therein with very good credit.

Charles Martel ruled the whol kingdome.

Thus did the Maires take such aduantage of the Kings carelesnesse, as (in the end) they expelled them from the Royall dignity, and vsed it only for themselues. Charles Martell subdued the Saxons, and those of Bauaria, that entred into rebellion. Eudo Duke of Aquitain raised the Sarrazins (who then bare great sway in Spayne) to come with him, and warre in France, making open passage for them. They came thether, to the number of foure hundered thousand persons, with Women, Children, and Seruaunts, with purpose to inhabite the Country, wasting it al along as they went. But Charles Martell met them nere Tours, where hee vanquished and slew 350000. with very small losse of his owne followers. Afterward hee preuailed against the Frisons, and once more hee foyled the Sarrazins before Auignon, expelling them (in the ende) quite out of Fraunce. This King hauing raigned fifteene yeares, dyed, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Charles Martell made a great slaughter of the Sarrazins.

741 22 Childerick, thirde of that name, Surnamed the Insensible, in regard of his blockish neglect

lect and careleſneſſe, beeing likewiſe brought from the Monaſtery, ſucceeded his brother Theodorick, in the yeare, 741. In which yeare, Charles Martell (Maire of the Pallace, and Gouernour of Fraunce) after many famous and woorthy victories by him obtained, dyed: and was in Royall habite interred at Saint Denis, in the ranke of Kinges, albeit hee neuer had the Name nor Title. He left three Sonnes, Pepin, Carloman, and Griffon. Pepin, being Maire of the Pallace, loſt not a iotte of that authoritie, which his Father hadde formerly exerciſed ouer the Kinges: but gouerned the Realme with his Brother Carloman. Griffon, thinking himſelfe not ſufficiently remembered by his Father, ſeazed Laon to himſelfe, and helde it ſtronglie: but in the ende, hee was conſtrained to agree with his Brethren. Carloman, contemning the goodes and honours of this Worlde, went to Rome to Pope Zacharie, and receiued the habite of Religion at his hands. Pepin, ſucceeding as heyre, to that which Carloman had forſaken, and hauing the fauour of the chiefeſt in the Kingdome: ſaine occaſion ſmile vppon him, to make himſelfe a King, and therefore woulde not let ſlippe ſo fayre an opportunity. Hereupon by his Ambaſſadors, hee gained the conſent of Pope Zachary, whom hee thoroughly acquainted with the puſillanimity and diſſolute life of K. Childerick, with other his predeceſſors. In like maner he layed open to him, the paines and Trauayles

The death of Charles Martel who left three Sonnes.

Pepin maketh means to inioy the Kingdome.

of his Father and himselfe, only in defence of the Kingdome, and how it was more conuenable, that hee who attended the charge of publicke affaires, should likewise beare the name of king, rather then hee that waited not thereon at all, but followed his own delights and voluptuous pleasures, which being considered by the Pope, by the intermise of Bruchard Bishop of Bourges, and Folrad, Chaplaine vnto the saide Pepin; it was ordained, that Childerick should be shauen, and sent vnto his Monastery againe, where he dyed, with Gisala his wife, hauing raigned nine years. And then was Pepin with ful consent of the Nobility, and generall sufferages of all the people, proclaimed King of France.

The death of Childerick and his wife.

Heere ended the first generation of the Kinges of Fraunce, in the ligne Masculine, beeing termed the race of the Merouingians: which lasted from Pharamond to this Pepin, 331. yeares. And heere beginneth the second generation; called the race of the Carlouingians.

751

PEpin, surnamed Le Bref, or Short, Son of Charls Martel, was made king of France, in the year of grace 751. hauing bin nine years Maire of the Pallace, from the raigne of Chilperick the third. This man, as well by consent of Pope Zacharie, as fauour of the French Nobility (his former good gouernment also (especially

cially conſidered) was ſacred King, the firſt of that race. Pope Stephen, who ſucceeded Zacharie, withdrew himſelfe into France, to haue ſuccour againſt Aſtulphus King of the Lombards. Pepin being acquainted therewith, tooke part with the holy ſee of Rome, promiſing to reſtore that which was vſurped from it: In requitall whereof, the Pope ſacred him againe, with his two Sonnes: And Pepin marching with his Armie into Italy, ſent the Pope home to Rome againe, for Aſtulphus was beſiedged in Pauia, and conſtrained to make agreement with the Pope. Pepin gaue to the See of Rome, the Exarchate of Rauenna, and many other Citties and Towns by him conquered. He had many victories againſt Gaiſer, or Waifer, Duke of Aquitaine, who (in the ende) was ſlaine, and his Country conquered, in a battaile which he won neere to Perigord. He ſubdued the Saxons, who were reuolted from their allegeance: And he inſtituted the Court of Parlament in France. He died at Paris, in the eyghteenth yeare of his raigne, leauing two Sonnes and ſeauen Daughters, which hee had by Bertha his Wife. In his time was Robert, Surnamed the Deuill, Sonne vnto Aubert Duke of Normandy.

Pepin aideth Rome againſt the Lombards.

Pepin inſtituted the Court of parliament.

Robert the Deuill

24 Charles the Great, called Charlemaigne, ſon of Pepin le Bref, ſucceeded in the kingdome, the yeare of Grace, 768. and was Crowned at Wormes, after he had made partage with Caroloman his Brother, when hee had raigned 32. yeares King of France, by conſent of the Clergie

768

gie and Romaine people (in regarde of the great good done by him to Christendome, & the Church of Rome) he was proclaimed, and crowned Emperor of Rome, in the year, 800. vpon Christmas day, the people crying aloud three seuerall times: To Charls Augustus, crowned of God, the great and peaceable Emperor; life & victory. He was the first, called Most Christian King, being a man of great stature, admirable strength, eloquent in many languages, studious, affecting to heare the reading of histories, a great louer of learning and the learned, as Paris and Pisa can well witnesse. Nicephorus & he deuided the Empire, agreeing, that the one shold be called Emperor of the East, and the other of the West. He quailed the commotion raised in Guienne, by the procurement of his Brother Caroloman, who therefore went in a rage to Rome, and returning thence, died some after. To please his Mother he married Theodora, Sister or daughter to Didier k. of the Lombardes: whom he quickly auoyded, and remarried Hildegrande, Daughter vnto the Duke of Swethen, by whom he had Charles, Pepin, Lewes, Rotrude, Bertha, and Gilette. Hauing pacified the broyles in Aquitaine, at the request of Pope Adrian, he went into Italy against Didier; whom he subdued, and so gaue ending to the Lombards kingdome, sending the king, his wife and children into exile. He conquered the Saxons, against whom he warred thirty yeares, hauing twelue seuerall Battailes against them. He repulsed the Sarrazins, that wasted Spaine, and

Charlemain made Emp: of the west, And the first that was called most Christian King,

The ending of the Lombards kingdome.

lost

loſt one battaile in dealing with them, wherein perriſhed thirtie thouſand of his men: but returning on them the ſecond time, he won a famous victory. But too true it is, that bringing his armie home into Fraunce, and paſſing by Roncevaux; his arrieregarde was rudely aſſayled by the Gaſcoignes, and there he loſt a great number of his Knights, among whome were Rowland and Oliuer. He conquered the Hennes, Sclauonians, Bauarians, and Danes; looſing his two beſt Sonnes, Charles and Pepin, accompliſhing many deedes worthy of memory, as well in war as peace. He founded the Vniverſities of Paris, Pauia, and Bolongne: apointing alſo Orders for Eccleſiaſticall perſonnes, called Capitula Caroli Magni, and cauſed the Counſelles of Maience, Rheimes, Tours, Chaalons, Arles & Francfort to bee holden, ordaining withall, the twelue Peeres of Fraunce. Such was the raygne of this great Charles, till beeing crazed with a Feauer: hee dyed, in the ſixe and fortyeth yeare of his Kingly Gouernement, the fourteenth yeare of his Empyre, the ſeauenty one of his age, and lyeth buried at Aix la Chapelle.

The vnfortunate battaile of Roncevaux

The twelue Peeres of Fraunce.

816

25 Lewes, Surnamed the Debonnaire or meeke, ſucceeded his Father Charlemaigne, both in the Romains Empyre, and Kingdom of Fraunce, but not in his Vertue and greatneſſe of courage, for hee was ſo Nick-named, in regarde of his ouer-much readineſſe and facility, which made his authority deſpiſed, both

Great difference betweene the Sonne and Father.

of his owne people and ſtraungers, in the yeare, 816. Many debanches hapned vnder his raigne, as well on behalfe of Bernard his Nephew, king of Italy, his wife and children (whom he cauſed to be put to death) as alſo in his war againſt the Bretons, who would not bee brought vnder his obedience. He had three ſonnes by his firſt wife, to wit; Lothaire, whom he made King of Italy, Pepin King of Aquitaine, and Lewes King of Bauiere. In ſecond marriage, hee had Iudith, daughter to the Count of Altorfe; by whome he had Charles the Balde, who (after him) was K. of France. Hee endeuoured to reforme the ouer-great pompe and diſſolutions in them of the Churche, by a Counſell holden at Aix la Chapelle. His three firſt Sonnes made diuers wars vppon him, being thereto prouoked, as well by the Eccleſiaſtickes, as by the partage which hee had made to Charles the Balde, his yongeſt ſon. In their firſt attempte, they beſiedged him at Compeigne, where they tooke their ſecond mother Iudith, whom when they had ſhorne & bayled, they ſent her in Religion to Poictiers; leauing their Father (then) without any adminiſtration or royall charge. But afterward, beeing recouered from ſuch ſeruility, and cauſing his wife to be brought him againe: he was ſo milde and meeke, that he pardoned the Rebels all their offences. A ſeconde time his Sonnes aroſe againſt him, and (accompanied with manie other Traytours) leuied a great Army, wherein Pope Gregory tooke part with them: and then they

The ſons in Armes againſt their father, and their vſage to him.

they compelled their Father, to come and ſubmit himſelfe to their mercy, bereauing him of his imperiall Ornaments, and giuing him the habite of a Monke, they cauſed him to be ſtrictly guarded in the Abbey of Saint Medard de Soiſſons. His Wife they ſent as an exile into Italy, and his Sonne Charles (as a Priſoner) to Prouence. The Lordes of Fraunce and Allemaigne, being vnwilling to ſuffer that ſuch ſhame and indignity ſhould bee done to an Emperour; in the following yeare they gaue him his liberty, bringing his Wife and Son againe vnto him, & Lothaire (cheefe cauſer of his Fathers captiuity) was glad to fly thence into Italy. The Emperor conſtrayned his Sonnes to ſeeke his mercy, and then hee freely forgaue them. At Mayence hee dyed, hauing raigned twenty fiue yeares, and was interred at Metz.

The Lordes of Fraunce releaſe their Emperour.

26 In the yeare 843. Charles the Baulde, Sonne of Lewes the Meeke, was made King, by a diuiſion or partage made with his Brethren. Charles remained King of France, Lewes king of Germany; and Lothaire had Italy, with the Empire, Prouence and Auſtraſia, whereof he made a Dutchy, calling it Lorraine, after his owne name. Before the ſaide partage, they had a great battaile neere to Auxerre; wherein almoſt all the Nobility of France loſt their liues. Which was the cauſe that the Normans (who were riſen vnder conduct of two valiant leaders) were become Maiſters well-neere of all France; but in the ende, they were expelled by the King, who

843

The Normans became Maiſters (almoſt) of all France.

who was crowned Emperour by Pope Iohn, after the decease of his Nephew Lewes, the Son of Lothaire. In this time he became very high minded, contemning the French manner of habite, and wearing the Græcian fashion, with a Dalmatian garment hanging down to his hæls, beside other strange & pompous attires. Hauing raigned two yeares in the Empire, he was poysoned by his Phisition; dying at Mantua; and buried at Verceillis, but seauen years after, his body was transported to S. Denis. He raigned in all 38. yeares.

K. Charles poysoned by his phisition.

879 27 Lewes the second, surnamed the Stutter or Stammerer, Sonne of Charles the Bauld, succeeded his Father both in the Empire and Kingdome, in the yeare 879. Charles the Bauld had three sons, the first was named Charlon; whose eyes hee caused to bee puld out, in regard of his wicked gouernment. The second was called Charles, who dyed before him. And the third, was this Lewes, sir-named the Stammerer, because his tongue was somewhat short, and made him to falter in his speech. Pope Iohn came into France, being escaped out of prison, because hee stood against the crowning of Charles le Gros, (Sonne to Lewes of Bauaria) Emperour. He Croloned King Lewes the Stutter Emperour, which hee enioyed not long, in regard of his sicklynesse, for he dyed in the second yeare of his raigne: leauing his Wife Richeult (Sister to the King of England, and who was returned home to her Brother) great with Child of a Son, that

The Pope escaped out of prison.

that was afterward called Charles the Simple. He appointed as his Guardian, Odo, Sonne to the Earle of Aniou, hoping great comfort of the fruit in her Womb. Hee left alſo two Baſtard Sons, Lewes and Carlon. During his raigne, the Normans were valiantly repulſed: hee lyeth buried at Compeigne.

28 Carlon and Lewes, the illegitimate ſons of Lewes le Begue, were Kings after his deceaſe, in the yeare 881. not hauing any other heire to ſucceed him. Some ſought to giue the kingdom to Boſon, King of Prouence: and others to Charls the Emperor, king of Germany. Carlon & Lewes (neuertheleſſe) were crowned Kings, and carried themſelues valiantly againſt the Normans, who (for fiue years ſpace) made very great enterpriſes on France. In the battaile which they had nere to Chinon, they fought manfully vpon the riuer of Vienna; there nine thouſand were ſlaine, beſide them that were drowned in flight. They expelled alſo the fore-named Boſon and Charls the Emperor, ſeeking to make themſelues Kinges of France. Theſe two brethren died ſtrangely. Lewes, purſuing a wilde Boare with his Faueling, was ſhot thorow with an arrow, which one of his traine did let fly at the beaſt, & ſo he died, in the 4. yeare of his raigne. Carlon died a yeare after, as vnluckily, for hee being one day very pleaſant on horſe-back, galloping after a faire Damſell, who ran (for her ſafety) into a ſmall Country cottage: he (not ſtaying his horſe, nor minding the impoſſibility of his paſſage) brake his necke at the doors entrance.

881

The baſe ſons of Lewes made Kings.

The ſtrange death of both the Kinges.

Now

Now, because he was the eldest, and survived his Brother, the name of King is attributed to him, as if that he had raigned alone. They were both buried at S. Denis.

886 29 Lewes the third, surnamed Fai-neant, Do nothing, after the death of Carlon his Father, was made King in the yeare 886. This man, being altogether careless, albeit hee hadde a great number of men, which his Father had assembled to resist the Normans (who wasted the kingdome very much) would not vse any resistance: but like one fearefull and negligent, made agreement with them, and promised to giue them 12. thousand pounds of Money yearely, till twelue yeares should bee expired. Whereuppon, the French (disdaining to bee tributary to the Normans) deposed the said Doe nothing, and made him a shauen Monke at Saint Denis. And the rather they did it, because he had taken a Nunne from Challes S. Baudour, neere Paris, & married her whether she would or no. To resist the Normans, the French sent for Charles le Gros, Emperor of Rome, Nephew also to Charles the bald, and him they made King. The Normans kept Paris besiedged, with forty thousand men, who were in such sort foyled, as not a man of them escaped aliue. Neuertheless, to containe them in some more moderation; hee made alliance and agreement with their Dukes. Which raised such strange garboiles in the Realme, so displeased the people, and incensed them with such hatred against him: that they expulsed him both out

A dishonorable composition w the Normans.

A great slaughter of the Normans.

out of the Empire and Kingdome, and hee dyed in a poore Village of Suauba, very poore and miſerably. Yet the fiue yeares of this raigne are attributed to him and not to Lewes Doe nothing.

Charles le Gros expalſed from the Empire & kingdom 891

30 Odo, or Eudes, Sonne to Robert Earle of Angiers, was made King in the yeare 891. after Charles le Gros, by aduiſe of the Princes: albeit hee was not of the race of Charlemaigne, but onely Tutour to Charles the Simple, and he was preferred by Arnould the Emperour (ſucceſſour to Charles le Gros) who would haue had the Kingdome himſelfe. During his raigne, the Normans (breaking their agreement made with Charles le Gros) began to warre againe, much more cruelly then before, and now the ſecond time beſiedged Paris: But Odo carried himſelfe ſo vndauntedly, that he ouer-came them manie times. In this while, certaine Barons of the Realme, had ſent for Charles the Simple into England, and Crowned him King of Fraunce, at the age of foureteene yeares. Odo, who was then in Aquitaine (hardly brooking this diſgrace) mooued great warre againſt Charles the Simple, which continued for long time. Neuertheleſſe, at the houre of his death, hee entreated the Princes of Fraunce, that they ſhould reſtore the ſaide Charles to the Kingdome, becauſe (in true right) it appertained to him. This Odo brought vp (as a noueltie) to haue a great many Floure-de-Luces (without any direct number) in the Armes of Fraunce, which continued ſo till the time of Charles the firſt. He raigned nine yeares, and

Charles the Simple ſent for out of England, & crowned K.

and lieth buried at S. Denis.

900 31 Charles the third, ſirnamed the Simple, ſon of Lewes le Begue, or the Stammerer, began to raigne ſoly in the yeare 900. After his Tutours death, who had held the kingdome in the minority of his yeares. The warre of the Normans continued ſtil: yet the king fel into acquaintance with Raoull, or Rollo their Duke, and gaue him his daughter in marriage, endowed with all the Land, which then was called Neuſtria, and afterward made a dutchy, and named Normandy, with eſpecial condition, that he ſhould be baptized. Robert Earle of Paris, Brother to Odo, (lately deceaſed) pretended to vſurp the kingdom, and drawing many Lords into his faction, crowned himſelfe King. But Charles, with the ayde of the Emperour Henrie, gaue him battaile neere to Soiſſons, wherein the ſaide Robert was vanquiſhed and ſlaine. Hereat Hebert, Earle of Vermandois (his Brother in Law) was highlie diſpleaſed, yet hee diſſembled it for an apt time, and one day, pretending to feaſt the King, he entreated him to lodge in his caſtle of Peronne. No ſoner was he entred, but he did ſhut him vp in a Towre (where hee dyed) compelling him to reſigne the kingdome to Raoull, Brother to the Duke of Burgundy. Hee left by Theargina his Wife, a Sonne named Lewes, who fledde for his ſafetie into England. This King raigned alone 14. yeares, and lyeth enterred at Peronne.

Neuſtria, now named Normandy.

Charles cõpelled to reſigne his Kingdome.

927. 32 Raoull of Burgundy, Sonne to Richard Duke of Burgundy, was made King in the year 927.

927. This man not being of the linage of kings, would needes bee crowned at Soiſſons: as well by fauour of Hugh the great Earle of Paris, as alſo of Hebert Earle of Vermandois, who then kept King Charles the Simple Priſoner, ſeazing his perſon, vnder coulour of fealting him, and conſtrayning him (before his death) to reſigne his Kingdome, in preſence of many Lords, and to giue it (as a free guift) to the ſayde Raoull, which yelded the greater authority to his raigne. Hugh the great Count of Paris.

The Queene Theargina, wife to King Charles the Simple, ſeeing ſuch troubles in France; made her retirement into England, to the King her Brother, with her Son Lewes, called Lewes of beyond the Sea. Raoull made a voyage into Italy, pretending to get the Empire, which was then in ſtrife, and there he vanquiſhed Berengarius an Italian Prince, who laide ſome claime thereto. But finding himſelfe not wel affected of the Italians; hee withdrew thence into France: where hee dyed of a very ſtrange diſeaſe, being eaten with wormes, notwithſtanding all remedies applied by his Phiſitions. He raigned about tenne yeares, died at Auxerre, and was buried at S. Colombe neere Sens. Lewes d' Outremer, or of beyond-Sea. Raoull died very ſtrange lie.

33 Lewes, fourth of that name, ſir-named Lewes d'Outre-mer, or of beyond the Sea, Son of Charles the Simple, was made K. in the yeare 929. being then in England with the K. his vncle, the Princes, Prelats, and Barons of France ſent for him into England: whither his Mother Thear- 929.

Theargina had carried him for refuge, when Hebert had betraied King Charles her Husband; & he was crowned at Laon. The King had debate with Raoul of Burgundy, about the Kingdome, and made warre vppon the Emperour Otho for the Dutchy of Lorraine: but peace being made betweene them, he tooke to Wife Herberge, Sister to the said Emperour. At his returne home into Fraunce, hee caused Hebert Earle of Vermandois to bee hanged, who had procured his Father to dye in Prison. Hugh, the great Earle of Paris, who then held the full sayle of the kingdome; raised the Normans to rebell against the King: But the King drawing him to his side, he rebelled from him again, because he had made an agreement with the Normans without him, and caused them also to alter their purpose, with a fresh begunne warre: wherein the King was taken Prisoner, and carried to Rouen. Afterward he was deliuered to the great Earle Hugh, who detained him at Laon: but the Emperour Otho came to his succour, & deliuered him. Lewes raigned twenty seauen yeares, and lieth buryed at S. Remy of Rheimes.

Hebert Earl of Vermandois executed.

956

34 Lothaire, Sonne of Lewes d'Outremer, or of beyond the Sea, was made King in the yeare 956. At the beginning of his raigne, Hugh the great Earle of Paris gouerned all the affaires of France: but he dyed soone after (leauing three Sonnes, to wit, Hugh Capet, who afterward vsurped the kingdom; Otho and Henry, who were successiuely Dukes of Burgundy;) and

The death of Hugh the great Earl of Paris.

and was ſumptuouſly enterred at Saint Denis. Lothaire raigned 31. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Remy of Rheimes.

35 After King Lothaire, Lewes his Sonne, fift of that name, ſucceeded in the gouernment, in the yeare 986. He raigned but one yeare, died without any heire, and was the laſt King of the race or linage of Charles the great, his burial was at Compeigne. Charles, Duke of Lorraine, (who was his Vncle and neereſt Heire) hearing of his death, would needes paſſe into France, to make himſelfe King: But the French hated him extreamely, as well becauſe he had continually partaken with the Allemaignes, ſworne enemies then to the French; as alſo, in regard hee was a bad Prince to his owne Subiectes. So that they would not receiue him for their King, but wholy ranne to Hugh Capet, then Maire of the pallace, a very wiſe and worthy man. Hee perceiuing that the French fauoured and affected him, knew well enough how to ſow (both in their eares and hearts) an vnliking opinion of Charles Duke of Lorrain, to make him the more hatefull to them. He firſt laid before them, how hee had permitted the Allemaignes free paſſage, when they came and warred on France. Next, that he had maintained the chiefe enemies to the crown of France, wherein hee ſtood guilty of high treaſon; And ſo, (by conſequent) was diſabled of any ſucceſſion to the ſaid Crowne.

986

Charlsduke of Lorraine ſeeketh to be King.

D. Charles diſabled by Hugh Capet.

¶ Heere endeth the ſecond generation of the Kinges of France, in the ligne Maſculine, being the race of the Carlouingians, and which continued (after Pepin) for the ſpace of 233. yeares.

987

Vgh Capet, ſonne to Hugh the great Earle of Paris, poſſeſſed himſelf of the Crown of France, in the yeare 987. He was (by ſome of the French) proclaymed King at Noyon firſt of al; ſoone after, in the Citty of Rheimes (partly by fauour, and partly perforce) Crowned King of Fraunce, and made his entrance into Paris: whereuppon, Charles Duke of Lorraine took Rheimes, Laon, and Soiſſons. Hugh Capet with a potent Armie beſiedged Laon, where hee tooke Charles with his Wife and Children, by Treaſon in the Byſhop of the ſaid place, and ſent them Priſoners to Orleaunce, where they were very ſtrictly kept, and died. Capet being the Conqueror, maintained, that the kingdome ſhould wholy appertaine to him: becauſe Raoull of Burgundy (his vnckle) had formerly poſſeſſed himſelfe thereof, by the voluntary reſignation of Charles the Simple. Hee cauſed his ſon Robert (who had followed his ſtudies) to be crowned at Orleaunce, and to aſſociate him in the kingdomes regiment: taking away the authority of the Maire of the Pallace, when thus he aduanced his ſon, whom he had by Adela, Daugh-

D. Charles and his wife & Children ſurprized by treaſon.

daughter to Edward King of England. Hee appointed alſo the twelue Peeres againe; beganne the dignity & office of Conſtable; and eſtabliſhed the Marſhals of France. He raigned alone, & with his Son 9. yeares. He founded the Abbay of S. Magloire at Paris, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

37 Robert, the ſonne of Hugh Capet, being Crowned King in the life time of his Father, began to rule alone in the yeare 997. as true inheritour, both of the Crowne, and likewiſe of his Fathers vertues. He raigned worthily, being a Man very deuout and meeke, the Kingdome continuing peaceable, and without warre. This King was very wiſe, and could compoſe in Latine very learnedlie: for he made many Proſes, Hymnes, and anſweres, which yet (to this day) are ſung in the Church. He was alſo well ſkild in Muſique, and would oft-times ſing among the Chanions, and weare a Coape (for compaſſe) with them, liuing as religiouſly, as royally. Henrie Duke of Burgundy (his Vnckle by the Mothers ſide) made him Heire of his Dutchie, leauing it vnto him by his Teſtament: and incited him againſt Landry Duke of Neuers, (beeing beloued and ſupported by the Burgundians) who inſulted vppon his right, in which attempt they foyled him, and droue him to flight. Hee ioyned the Cittie of Sens to the Crowne, by confiſcation, for a certaine delict doone by the Counte Reynard. He ſent his Armie againſt the Valentians, with Richard Duke of Normandy, to aſſiſt the Earle of Flanders his Kinſman,

997

The vertues of Robert, ſon to Hugh Capet.

His Wiues & children.

against Henry the Emperor. He had three wiues; Luthard, Bertha (whom hee forsooke vppon some occasion) and Constance, by whom hee had three sons, one whereof died during his raigne. In his time was an vniuersal famine and mortality. He dyed, hauing raigned 34. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1030.

38 Henry the first succéeded in the kingdome, after his Father Robert, in the yeare 1030. In his beginning to gouerne, his younger Brother Robert warred against him, béeing allied to the Earles of Champaigne and Flaunders; who stroue to make him King, by the procurement of his Step-mother: but he (assisted by the Duke of Normandy, and the Earle of Corbeile) maintained his owne quietnesse. He ioyned Meulanc to his Crowne, by rebellion of the Earle of that place. Raoull king of high Burgundy being dead, the Emperor Conrade seazed on that part thereof, which wee call La Franche Conte; And the Dutchy béeing Roberts, Brother to the King, the kingdome of Burgundy (which had so contied an hundred and thirtie yeares) was then abolished. The King seated young William the Bastard, Duke of Normandy, (to whom he had béene Guardian) peaceably in his Dutchy, because some of his Subiects would haue depriued him thereof, as beeing vnwilling to entertaine him. He founded Saint Martine des Champs, in the same place where his Pallace was, without Paris. By Anne his wife, daughter to George or Gaultier king of the Russians, he had Phillip and Hugh,

The ending of the kingdome of Burgundy.

The King of the Russians.

Hugh, and a Daughter married to the Duke of Normandy. Feeling himſelfe to ware weeke, he cauſed his Sonne Phillip to bee crowned King of France: And before his death, he left Baldwine Earle of Flanders as Guardian of his Children. He reigned 31. yeares, and lieth buried at Saint Denis.

39 Phillip the firſt, ſucceeded after his Father, in the yeare 1061. During his time, William the Baſtard, Duke of Normandy, conquered the Realme of England: and Godfrey of Bullen was made King of Ieruſalem; alſo the Countrey of Gaſtinois came then to the Crown. This king raigned 48. yeares, and lyeth buried at S. Bennets on Loire. 1061.

The conqueſt of England by William the Baſtard.

40 Lewes the firſt, ſir named le Gros, immediatly after the death of King Phillip his Father, in the yeare 1110. was ſacred at Orleaunce by the Biſhoppe of Sens, the way of Rheimes not beeing then ſecure. Some Princes and Lordes (aſſiſted by the King of England) in the beginning of his raigne, did giue him many moleſtations; but ſtill it was his happe to be Conquerour, and the Warre of the Engliſh (verie many times appointed) was at laſt ended. Pope Gelaſius fled for refuge into France, where hee was ſuccoured againſt the Emperour. In the yeare 1129. the King cauſed his Sonne Phillip to bee Crowned; who (two yeares after) dyed at Paris, by reaſon of a Hogges running betweene the Legges of his Horſe, that threwe him violently on the Paument, and dying of 1110

The Pope flieth for refuge into France.

that hurt, he was buryed at Saint Denis. Afterward, hæ had his other Sonne Lewes crowned, and it was done by Pope Innocent, he bæing then in France.

At this time were a great company of Lazers and Leapers in Fraunce, who would haue infected all the rest of the people; but they were all taken and burned. The order of the Knights Templers, & Chartreux Monkes began in this kinges raigne: and the winds were so rough and impetuous, in the yeare 1135, that they ouer-turned many Towers, Castles, Trees in Forrests, and Mils. This King appeased the troubles in Flanders, Bourbonnois, & Auuergne: he builded the Abbay of Saint Victor neare Paris; raigned 28. yeares, died at the age of sixty, leauing six Sons and a daughter, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Knights Templers, & Chartreux Monkes.

1138 41 Lewes the seuenth, sir-named the Young man, beganne to raigne after his Father, in the yeare 1138. He made warre on Thibault Earle of Champaigne, tooke from him the Citty of Vitry: And (in a great rage) burned the Church, with 1300 hundred persons in it, that had fledde thither for safety. By the solicitation of S. Bernard, he went to Hierusalem with his Queene, and with the Army of the Emperour Conrade: where, besiedging Damas, though strong in the Army, hee could boast of no aduauntage; but retyring thence, had not the Shippes of Sicily befriended him and his; they hadde remained Prisoners there. Beeing returned into Fraunce, hee made a separation betweene him and Queene Ælea-

1300. persons burned in a church.

Ælianor his wife, Dutcheſſe of Aquitaine and Aniou, vppon two ſuſpitions conceiued againſt her. Henry, Duke of Normandie (who afterward was King of England) married her, with her Patrimony of the ſaide two Dutchies: and there-about followed great Warres betweene France and England. The King married Conſtance, Daughter to the K. of Spayn, who dyed ſoon after: And then he remarried Alice, daughter to the Earle of Blois, by whom he had Phillip Dieu-donne, Gods gift. Then happened great diſturbance in England, betweene the King and his ſon, who making his recourſe to Lewes, cauſed thereby a very troubleſome war, without any aduantage to either ſide. But in ẏ end they were accorded, and a marriage concluded, of Alice the daughter of Lewes to the ſon of England. The King died at Paris, hauing raigned 43. yeares, and lieth buried in the Abbay of Barbeau, which was founded by him.

A marriage betweene England & France.

42 Phillip Auguſtus, ſir-named Dieu-donne, Gods gift, ſucceeded after his Father, in the year 1181. He baniſhed all the Iewes out of Fraunce, and yet afterward permitted them entraunce againe: ordaining many Edicts againſt Blaſphemers, as alſo the vſury of the Iewes. He did put to death the Albigeois Heretiques, and them of Beſiers: augmenting greatly the Cittie of Paris, inſtituting Sheriffes and Alder-men, commaunding the ſtreetes to be paued, building alſo the Halles for Studentes, and the Church-yard of S. Innocent, and encloſing with wals the

1181.

Vertuous deedes in a King.

Vniuersity side. Hee went to recouer the Citty of Hierusalem, with Richard Cueur de Lyon, King of England; and falling off from him, returned home into France. Hee hadde afterward great wars against the said K. Richard, and Iohn without Land his brother, who succeeded him; about the titles of Normandy, Aquitain, Poictu, Maine, Aniou, & Auuergne. He won the battaile at Bouines against the Emperor Otho, and other French Lords who were entred into rebellion against him: In which battell perished fifty thousand men, and Otho himselfe was enforced to flight, the Earle of Flanders and the Earl of Bolongne being taken Prisoners, by which reason the king was called the Conqueror. He raigned 43. yeares, died at Mante, aged 59. & lieth buried at S. Denis, leauing two sons and a daughter.

Fifty thousand men slain in one battaile.

1224 43 Lewes the eyght, succeeded after his Father, in the yeare 1224. In the life time of his Father, hee crossed the Seas, and made Warre in England, attayning to no such successe as hee erpected. Hee renewed kindnesse and Brotherhood betweene the French and Germaines, tooke Auignon, and warred vpon the Albigeois. He raigned three yeares, and lyeth buryed at Saint Denis.

1227 44 Lewes the ninth, succeeded his Father Lewes the eyght, in the yeare 1227. Blaunche his Mother (in regard of his young yeares) was appointed to bee Regent: whereat some Lords were discontented, but she tooke order sufficiently with them. She maintained the warre against

againſt the Engliſh, and agræment was made with them vpon ſolemne Oath, to holde Aquitaine, doing homage, and to yælde vp Normandie, Ponthieu, Maine, and Poictiers. The king being in peace, exerciſed himſelfe to liue Religiouſly, building Churches, Hoſpitals, and Monaſteries, enriching them with rents & reuennues. In the 24. yeare of his raigne, hee went to recouer the Holy Land, deſcended into Egypt, and toke Damieta. He was afterward ſo rudely aſſayled, that he was taken by the Soldane: but deliuered againe, vppon his reſtoring Damieta, and paying a great ranſome. Hee bought of the Venetians, the Crowne of Thornes (as was ſuppoſed) with other Relickes of the paſſion, & cauſed them to be ſafely kept in the holy Chappel at Paris. Many Shepheards, vnderſtanding that the King was priſoner, aroſe vp in armes, and made great ſpoile in France: but they were foyled by them of Orleance and Bourges. The king at his returne, did very ſeuerely chaſtiſe blaſphemers: And paſſing afterward into Affrica, toke Carthage, and aſſailed Thunis, where the Peſtilence happening in his Campe, he died of a flux of blood. He raigned 34. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Peace between Englande and France.

Peazants arie, and do great hurt in France.

Behold briefely the life and death of King Lewes, ninth of that name, who afterward by Pope Boniface the eight, in the time of Philip le Bel, was cannonized among the number of Saints in Romes Kalender, and called S. Lewes. His raigne was truely in piety, religion, ſanctitie and iuſtice.

K. of France cald a Saint

iuſtice. His youth was much tormented with rebellions, ſubleuations, & ſeditions of ſome Lords: but his manly yeares did diſperſe them, as the Sunne doth dimme clouds. Hee was deuoute, vpright, valiant, liberal, ſeuere, and yet clement, vſing all theſe Vertues, according as hee knewe them to be needfull.

1271 45 Phillip the third, Son of S. Lewes, was proclaimed King in the Campe before Thunis, in the yeare, 1271. but was afterward Sacred at Rheimes. He was Sur-named Phillip the hardie, and at his comming back into France, he had many difficulties, about the death of Phillip his impoyſoned Sonne, in the Wares of Foix and Terracon. Vpon an Eaſter day, in the euening houre, all the French (being then in Sicily) were euery one ſlaine, whereon grew the By-word of the Sicilian Veſpres or Euening. The king died at Parpignan, in the fortith yeare of his age, and lieth buried at Saint Denis, hee married Iſabel, Daughter to Peter of Arragon, by whom he had Phillip, Charles, and Marie: And then, remarrying Marie, Daughter vnto Henrie Duke of Brabant, he hadde by her Lewes and Margaret.

The Sicili-an Veſpres.

1285. 46 Phillip the fourth, Sur-named le Bell, or the Fayre, Sonne to the fore-named Phillip, ſucceeded his Father, in the yeare, 1286. both in the Kingdome of France and Nauarre, in right of his wife. In his younger daies he had a Schoolemaiſter, a Roman borne, and a great Diuine, named Gilles, who cauſed the King to write an excellent

worke (yet to be ſeene) called The Inſtitution of Princes. As the King was at Paris, being returned from his Coronation at Rheimes; this Diuine (according to the Vniuerſities ancient cuſtome, which was, to make a learned ſpæch after the kings facring) made a ſinguler Oratiõ to him to encreaſe his deſire in following Vertue & piety, preſeruing his ſubiects in peace and tranquility. He built the ſumptuous Pallace of Paris, & ſubdued the Flemings, who had forſaken his part, & giuen aide to the Engliſh againſt him; the Earle of Flanders, and his two ſons beeing then taken priſoners. The King left a Garriſon in the countrey, but they were ſlaine in a commotion of the people: Whereupon, the Earle of Flanders (hauing giuen his faith to the King) was ſent thyther with one of his ſons: but being able to do no good, he returned backe againe to the King, and died ſoon after at Compeign. The k. went thither himſelfe in perſon, & at the firſt had no better ſucceſſe; but at length, he charged them ſo furiouſly, that he foiled 36000. wherein they were conſtrained to make attonement, and pay him 200000. Crowns. The day of Coutray, was afterward fauourable to the Flemmings, but deplorable to the French, the Engliſh preuayling mightily againſt them. Then came the Bulles of Pope Boniface againſt Phillippe, but they were burned in the Court of the Pallace: which made Boniface to excommunicate the King, but Bennet his Succeſſour abſolued him againe. In his time was the Papall See, tranſferred to

A Booke written by the King.

The Popes Buls againſt the King, burned.

The Popes See was brought to Auignon.

to Auignon, where it continued threescore & ten yeares, Rome being then gouerned by Legates. The king died at Fountainebleu, which was the place of his byrth: hauing raigned 28. years, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1314

47 Lewes the tenth, Sur-named Hutin (after the conformity of his manners) succeeded his Father, in the yeare, 1314. and had his right also, (after his Mother) in the kingdome of Nauarre. Enguerrand de Marigni, General of the Finances, being accused to haue robbed the kings treasury, was hanged at Mont-faucon, which hee himselfe first caused to be made. Lewes toke first to wife Margaret, Daughter to Robert Duke of Burgundy, by whom he had a Daughter. Next, he married Constance, whom he left with child of a Sonne, named Iohn, that liued but eyght daies. This King raigned but xviij. months, died at Boys de Vincienes, and is buried at S. Denis.

Enguerrand executed at Mont-faucon.

1316.

48 Phillip the fift, Surnamed the Long, succeeded after his Brother Lewes Hutin in ỹ kingdome, being called Long, in regard of his tal stature and slenderneſſe. The Duke of Burgundie, would haue troubled his possession of the crown, in regarde of his Daughters Daughter, but the Salique Law did not fauour him therein. This King Phillip married Iane, Daughter to Otholine Earle of Burgundy, by whom hee had three daughters: The first married with the Sonne to the Duke of Burgundy; the second, the Sonne to the Earle of Flaunders; and the thirde to the

Daulphine

Daulphine of Viennois, by which marriages all Warres were aſſwaged in Fraunce. During his raigne, diuers Leapers and Lazers (procured thereunto by the Iewes) poyſoned all the welles which cauſed a great Peſtilence thorough the Kingdom: but both the one and other were grieuouſly punniſhed therefore. Neuer coulde this King obtaine of his people, any impoſt or Taxation by him leuied. He made a Law, that there ſhold be in his kingdom, but one kind of weight, one meaſure, and one money, commanding that it ſhould be duely kept. But while this was in execution, he died, without any heires male, hauing raigned fiue yeares in peace, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Marriages make peace in France.

In theſe times, certaine Troopes of Countrey people, that were called Paſtors and Shepherds, aroſe againe in Fraunce, as formerly ſome had done in the time of King Lewes the ninth. Theſe men made their vaunt, that they would croſſe the Seas, and go warre againſt the Infidels. They had two chiefe men of marke among them, and wel beſeeming ſuch an aſſembly, to wit, a Prieſt, that (for his miſ-behauiour) was expulſed his Church: and an Apoſtata Monke, of the Order of S. Bennet. Theſe two fellowes, ſo abuſed the hearts and beleefe of the poore popularity, that ſilly Shepheards left their Flocks, and Laborers their Manuall trades, to follow theſe two impoſtures: who made them verily beleeue, that the Holy Land could be recouered by none but them. In concluſion, this heape of Raſcality was quai-

Another riſing of Peazants in France.

led

led in Languedoc, because, in stead of preparing their fury against the Infidels, and passing the Seas: they fell vpon the Iewes, whom the king had repealed into France.

1321 49 Charles le Bell, Son to Phillip the fourth, succeeded after his Brother, in the year 1321. and likewise was King of Nauarre, as his three predecessors had bin. He had three wiues. Blaunch, (whom he diuorced for her adultery) Marie, and Margaret. Iourdain de l'Isle (albeit hee was Nephew to Pope Iohn the two and twentieth) was hanged and strangled at Paris, for his strange offences. This King fel to concord with the English, appeased the Earle of Flaunders, and drewe his people to a mutuall Reconciliation. He was a great Iusticer, raigned seauen yeares, dyed at Boys de Vinciennes, and is buried at Saint Denis.

Iourdain de l'Isle hanged at Paris

By his death, the second branch of the Capets (called De Valois) came to the Royalty, and began in

1328. 50 PHillip de Valois, Cozin Germaine to the three precedent Kings, dying without heire male: his succession was in the yeare, 1328. His right to the Crowne was dearely disputed, betweene him and King Edward the third of England, Son to the Sister of the three forenamed Kings, who (preferring his Mothers Title) would needs be King of France, contrary to the Decree of the Law Salique, and consent of al the

the States. He did king Phillip homage for Guyenne and Ponthieu; but (being not well pleaſed therewith) cut him off quite from Flanders, Bretaigne, Germany, Crecy, where Phillip loſt the day, with the very flower of al the French Nobility, taking Calais alſo by their flight. Truce being taken betweene both the Kings: Edward of England had both the Title of king, and Armes of France for conqueſt, which euer after was attributed to him & his. Phillip, raigned 22. yeares, died at Nogent, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

The Battell of Crecy, & great loſſe of the French.

51 Iohn, Sonne to Phillip de Valois, ſucceeded his Father, in the yeare 1350. proouing as vnfortunate in thoſe tempeſtuous times, as his father had done before him. He married Ioane, Counteſſe of Bolongne, by whom he had foure ſonnes and one Daughter. Raoull the Conſtable of France was beheaded in priſon. In the day at Poictiers, King Iohn was taken by the Engliſh, and carried into England, which imprisonment of his, cauſed many pittifull Tragedies, the moſt furious whereof were acted in the chiefe Citties of France. Foure yeares after, King Iohn paſſed into England, for the freedome of his Oſtages: but there he died at London, hauing raigned 13. yeares. His ſonne cauſed his body to be brought to S. Denis,

1350.

King Iohn, as a priſoner brought into England.

52 Charles the fift, Sonne to King Iohn, ſucceeded his Father, in the yeare 1364. He ſuſtained very great troubles during the captiuitie of his father, by a commotion which the k. of Nauar raiſed at Paris, who was aided by the merchants of

1364.

of the saide Citty, and woulde haue had the Regency, but that Charles (being then Daulphine) made opposition against him. He dealte for the ransome and deliueraunce of his Father: after whose decease, he was crowned King. Hee toke to Wife Ioane, Daughter to Charles Duke of Burbon, by whom he had three Sonnes, and one daughter. He maintained great warres against the English, hauing (at one instant) fiue seueral Armies in field against them, because they were such potent enemies: And to supply so mightie a charge, he was faine to lay a heaule taration vpon wine and Salt. Bertrand de Guesclin, a most worthy Knight, was then his high Constable: And the Bastille at Paris was then builded. A sedition happened at Montpellier, and six hundred of the seditious were executed. This King was surnamed the Wise, for his deep discretion, goodnesse, and gouernment. He so loued Learning, that he caused the Holy Bible to be translated into the French Language (which remaineth yet) in the Royal Cabinet of the Louure) with many other good Bookes beside. Hee had stil an eye to Iustice, sitting daily to hear causes, and ordering all his affayres by Counsel. With much adoo, he regained some Townes from the English, in Poictu and Xaintonge. Hee raigned sixteene yeares, yeelded his soule to God at Chasteau de Beaute, and lieth buried at S. Denis. The Sect of the Turlupins was then abolished. See Emil. Lib. 9.

Fiue armies at one time against the English.

The Bibles first version into the French tongue.

1380 52 Charles the first, sonne of Charles the fift, was

was crowned King at the age of foureteen yeares, being vnder the gouernment of his Vnckles, the Dukes of Berry, Burgundy, and the Duke of Anjou, who got into their cuſtody many millions of Gold, left by the King deceaſt. And then, (no Money being to bee found) the people were charged with heauy impoſitions, whereby great ſeditions happened at Paris, Rouen, and Orleaunce. The King toke into the Armes of France againe, the three Floure-de-Luces onely, and fell ſicke of a Phrenzy: by reaſon of two factions in his Court, the Dukes of Berry and Burgundy, againſt the Dukes of Orleaunce and Bourbon, whereby many lamentable miſhaps enſued. The Princes toke the gouernment into their hands, and diuiſion happening (concerning the treaſure) the Duke of Burgundy cauſed the Duke of Orleaunce to bee ſlaine at Paris, and the Duke of Burgundy was ſlaine at Montereau. Phillip his Sonne craued ayde of the Engliſh, who preſently toke (well neere) all Normandy; beſide the vnhappy day (to the French) of Agincourt or Azincourt, where many woefull Tragedies were acted on the Theater of France by the Engliſh, Burgundians, and the Kings Mother, who was impriſoned at Paris. The King of England maried Madame Katherine of France. The Duke of Burgundy deliuered him the King, the Queene, and the Citty of Paris, where he cauſed him to be crowned King, and many other Citties and Towns were deliuered him beſide. King Charls hauing raigned forty two yeares, died at Paris,

Factions in the Court of France.

The King of England crowned in France.

and lieth buried at Saint Denis. His raigne was long, but full of calamity.

1422 54 Charles the seauenth, Sonne to Charles the first, was made King in the yeare 1422. He found his Kingdome possessed (in all partes) by the English; Paris and the greater part of the Realme, beeing then commaunded by the Duke of Bedford, Regent for young Henry King of England; who called himselfe King of Fraunce; held his Parliament at Paris; was there crowned king; and made the Seale and Monies also in his own name: King Charles hauing nothing else, but the Countries of Poictu, Berry, and Orleaunce, whereon the English (in a mockery) called him the King of Bourges. They went to besiedge the Cittie of Orleaunce; but they were thence repulsed by the French Captaines: For they had a Maide in their Company, who was called Ioan the Pucelle, and they verily beleeued, that she was sent of God, for the succour of King Charles, and to chase the English out of France. The King, after the discomfiture of the English neere to Partenay; was conducted to Rheimes, and there crowned: But the English got the Pucelle, and burned her at Rouen The King made peace with the Duke of Burgundy, who forthwith left the English; and afterward recouered Paris and Normandy from them. King Charles raigned 38. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Ioane the Pucelle of France.

1461 55 Lewes the eleuenth, succæded his Father, in the yeare 1461. beeing then in Burgundy, whence the Duke conuayed him to Rheimes, where he was crowned. Hee found a number of

notable Enemies, both Domeſticall and Foꝛraigne: Foꝛ his Loꝛds made warre againſt him, which they tearmed The Weale-publike warre, & he loſt the day to them at Montle-hery, Granſſon, Nancy, and Guinegaſte. The oꝛder of S. Michaell was then inſtituted, and Iacques d'Armaguac beheaded. His raigne was full of feare, ſuſpition, and treachery, which ſo pierced his hart; that, in a long time of diſmay (after 33. yeares gouernment) he died, and lieth buried at Noſtre Dame de Clery.

The order of S. Michael inſtituted

56 Charles the eight, ſucceeded his Father Lewes, in the yeare 1484. being croꝛwned at the age of 14. yeares: yet the States meeting at Tours, appointed that hee ſhould not haue any Regent. Hee ſuſtained a long warre in Bretayne, which termined by his marriage with Anne, eldeſt Daughter to Fraunces Duke of Bretayne; by whom he had thꝛee Sons, but could not long enioy any one of them. At the requeſt of his Confeſſour, hee rendered to the King of Spaine the Earledomes of Rouſſillon and Parpignan, which his Father had won. Being in peace, he aduentured to recouer the kingdom of Naples, which he did (without ſtriking one ſtroke) in full conqueſt: K. Alphonſus and his ſon Ferdinand being thence retired, & left Gilbert de Montpenſier Vice-Roy there. Returning home into France, he was aſſailed on the way by the Romans, Venitians, and them of Milleyne at Fornouë, where his perſon was in great danger, the enemies being tenne to one: Nenertheleſſe, hee charged them with ſuch

1484.

The Kingdom of Naples wonne by the French.

courage, that he bare thence the victory. He deliuered the Duke of Orleaunce, beeing beſiedged in Nouarre, and made peace with the Duke of Millaine. He returned home into France, where hee dyed (within a yeare after) at Amboiſe, as hee ſtood and beheld the Princes playing at Tennis. He raigned foureteene yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Thus ended (in him) the direct ligne of Valois, he dying without any heires Maſle; and then followed the collaterall Iſſue, which began in

1499 57 LEwes the twelft, neereſt of kinne to Charles the eight, in the yeare 1499. Hee being Duke of Orleaunce, and alſo of Valois. He repudiated Ioane, Daughter to King Lewes the eleauenth, whom hee had married perforce; and eſpouſed Anne of Bretaigne, Widdow to the King his Predeceſſour. He eſtabliſhed a Parliament at Rouen, gaue orders to the Vniuerſitie of Paris; ſent his Army into Italy, toke Genes and Millayne, and Lewes Sforza, Duke of Milleyne, who dyed a Priſoner in France. The kingdome of Naples was re-taken, vnder the conduct of Monſieur d'Aubigny: And the King vanquiſhed the Venetians Army at Agnadell, where hee tooke Bartholmew their Leader, albeit the Pope banded with the Venetians againſt him. Gaſton de Foix tooke Boulongne, and wonne the battaile neere to Rauenna: where he was

The kingdome of Naples reconquered

Gaſton de Foix.

was ſlaine, by chaſing the enemies ouer-far; and yet notwithſtanding, the victory remained to the French, with ſurpizall of the Cittie, and many Captaines and great perſons taken Priſoners. Hereupon the Pope raiſed many heauy enemies againſt him, whom (in the ende) hee worthily vanquiſhed. He raigned 17. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

58 Frances de Valois (as nereſt of kin) ſucceeded King Lewes, in the yeare 1515. This King bare ſuch affection to learning, that he was ſir-named The Father and Reſtorer of the Sciences. At his beginning, he ouercame the Switzers, took Millaine and Fontarabie. Afterward, being deſirous to winne the Townes belonging to the Dutchy of Millaine, and to bring his ſiedge before Pauia: hee was taken Priſoner, in the yeare 1524. and carried Captiue into Spaine. Fraunce was then very greatly afflicted, not only by this diſaſter; but by a great Famine, becauſe the Corne was frozen vppe in the Earth. The King was deliuered by a treaty holden at Madrill, and married Elianor, Siſter to Charles the fift, Emperour; peace beeing then concluded, in the yeare 1535. The King poſſeſſed himſelfe of Sauoy & Piedmont, repulſing the Emperour out of Prouence: But peace beeing made for tenne yeares, the Emperour paſſed thorough Fraunce, with very great entertainement. War began in the Low-Countries, which (after many alarmes) was accorded in the yeare 1544. euen then when the Engliſh won Bullen. The King deceaſed at

1515

The King carried priſoner into Spaine.

The Engliſh wonne Bullen.

Rambouillet, hauing raigned 32. yeares, an lieth buried at S. Denis.

1547. 59 Henry the second succéded his father Frances de Valois, in the yeare 1547. No way degenerating from the laudable vertues of his father. Hee renewed and confirmed the alliance (made by his Father) with the Switzers, and tooke the Fortes about Bullen on the Sea, by such furious assaultes, and ouer-much neglect in the English, that they forsooke them, and made a peace. In the yeare 1552. he made his voyage for Germanie, to maintaine the liberty of certaine Princes, who had (in ỳ case) required his help. He brought Metz in Lorraine vnder his obedience; and (at his returne) tooke Danuilliers, Yuoy, Monmedy, and other places, with-drawne by his Enemies. He made agrément with Pope Iulius the third, deliuering Mirandola & Parma; reducing also Siennato her ancient liberty, wherof the Spaniards had bereaued her. During this time, the Emperor came and besiedged Metz, where (without doing any thing) he lost a great number of his men. The K. marching into the Low-Countryes, took Mariembourg, Bouoines, and Diuant, driuing his Enemie vndauntedly before him. In the yeare 1555. truce being taken with the Emperour, Phillip King of Spayne, and the King of England (which lasted but a while), & the French forces being in Italy, vnder conduct of Seigneur de Guyse: the King assailed S. Quintines, and won the day, which was called S. Laurance day. In the yeare 1557. the K. hauing assembled the

S. Laurance day at Saint Quintines.

ſame power, and vnder the ſame Leader; tooke Callice, Guines, Hames, and the County of Oy, with the Cittie of Thionuille the yeare following. Peace beeing finally concluded betweene them, by meanes of marriage of Phillip King of Spaine, with Elizabeth the eldeſt Daughter of France, and the Prince of Piedmont, with Margaret onely Sister to King Henry: In toy of the ſaide marriages and peace, a Turney was celebrated in Paris, in the ſtreete of Saint Anthony, where King Henry (running in the Liſts) was ſmitten with the Counter-cuffe of a Launce into the head, whereof he died the tenth day of July, 1559. and in the 13. yeare of his raigne, being interred at Saint Denis.

King Henry hurt in Tilting, & died ſoone after.

60 Frances, ſecond of that name, aged about 15. or 16. yeares olde, ſucceeded his Father, in Anno. 1559. In the life time of his Father, hee marryed Madame Mary Stuart Daughter to the King of Scots: And the 15. day of September, he was ſacred at Rheimes, by the Cardinall of Lorraine, Arch-Biſhop of the ſaid place. Thence hee accompanied Madame the Dutcheſſe of Lorrain his Sister, ſo far as Barleduc, and with-drawing thence to Amboiſe, thither came diuers men in armes (whereon it was called the tumult of Amboiſe) who ſaide; that they would preſent requeſts to the King, concerning the gouernment, and matter of Religion: But becauſe they came in Armes, ſome of them were executed, and the reſt appeaſed by the Kings Edict. The King, after a Councell holden at Fontainebleau;

1559

The tumult of Amboiſe

appointing an assembly of the States, to heare the greeuances of his people, and distrusting some intended mutiny: he went to the Citty of Orleance in Armes, where being desirous to proceede in his purpose, hee fell sicke of a Catarrhe, which happened in one of his eares, whereof hee dyed the fift day of December, 1560. and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1560

61 Charles, ninth of that name, succeeded his Brother Fraunces, in the yeare, 1560. And because he was but eleauen yeares olde, the Kingdomes affayres were gouerned by the Queen his Mother: Anthonie of Bourbon, and king of Nauarre, being made Lieutenant generall, which was to the great contentment of all the States then assembled at Orleaunce. The raigne of this King was trauersed with many ciuill dissentions, about the matter of Religion: whereon ensued the assembly of Poissi, the Edict of January, the death of the Duke de Guyse, slaine at ỹ siege of Orleaunce by Poltrot. Then followed the Voyage of Bayonne, the battels of Dreux, S. Denis, Iarnac, and Montcontour, with other Edicts of pacification: And the marriage of Henrie of Bourbon, with Margaret de Valois, whereat happened that most bloody and lamentable massacre. Then the siedge of Sancerre, and that of Rochelle, with the retraite of the Prince of Conde in Germany: And lastly, the death of the King, (without any children) being euen ouer-wearied with such numberlesse disturbances. The King died the 30. day of May, 1574. at Chasteau de Vinciennes

Anthony of Bourbon Lieutenant Generall.

The bloudy massacre at Paris.

Vinciennes lez Paris. But before his death, hee left the Quæne his Mother Regent, vntill hys Brother (who was then King of Poland) were returned to France; and he lieth buried at Saint Denis.

62 Henry, third of that name, being returned from Poland (to the no little griefe of that Nation, ſo to part with their King) vppon the thyrde day of Februarye, 1575. it being the verye ſame day in Lent, whereon he had bin formerly crowned King of Poland in the Citty of Cracouia, was likewiſe Sacred and Crowned at Rheimes by the reuerent Cardinall of Guyſe. The 15. day following of the ſame month, was he married to Madame Loyſe, Daughter to my Lord the Earle of Vaudemont, of the ancient and noble houſe of Lorraine. His raigne was diuerſly agitated with partialities in Religion, which paſſed vnder pretext (in faction formed againſt the State) and couered with the name of an holy league or Union, againſt which, he combatted with difficulties enow, and diuerſity of exploits on either ſide. Vnder his gouernement was the ouerthrowe of the Rutters Army: the battel of Coutras, the Eſtates of Blois, and almoſt the whole reuolt of France. The Reconciliation of two Kings, which ſo preſſed the factious and rebellious: that they had no other recourſe, but to a moſt execrable parracide, which was committed on the Kings perſon at S. Clou, by Iacques Clement a Iacobine Monke, the firſt day of Auguſt. 1589.

1574

The holy League or Vnion.

The King murdered by a Iacobine Fryer.

And

And so ended (in him) the race of that Royall branch of Valois.

63

1589. HEnry the fourth, being formerly King of Nauar, by right of succession came to be K. of France also, being issued in direct ligne from Robert Earl of Clermont in Beaunoisis, and the last Son of S. Leywes. The beginning of his raigne was very Thorny, marked with very signale actions in his progresse, the most memorable whereof, (for breuities sake) by a person of great honor and repute, were noted in these foure liues.

*Arques, Yuri, Dijon* still shall beare the markes,
Of honor right and courage in that king,
To whom the strangers pride stands trembling,
To heare the fights of *Dijon, Yuri, Arques.*

Heere, the life, fame, and due merit of that great King, would giue mee way into a large fielde of ample discourse, did not my purposed breuitie make imbarment. Wherefore, with the verie wordes of a woorthy and learned Gentleman, I will conclude, and summe vp this Man of men, this Prince-like Souldiour, and Souldiour-like Prince: whose Royall face was white with Time, watchinges, and experience, and the Lawrelles which did beguirt his venerable head, and tooke their roote in his Caske, were gathe-

red

red in the grounds of three pitched fields, thirtie fiue encounters of Armies, one hundered and forty Combats, and three hundred ſeuerall ſiedges of places, in all which, his perſon ſtroue (if it were poſſible) to haue got the ſtart of his corage. That the ſacred perſon of ſo great a King, ſhould be vndone by the hand of an vnholy villaine, and his owne vaſſaile: that a Prince of the Swoorde, ſhould be butchered with a Knife. That he, who had returned victoriouſly aliue, from the heade of ſo manie Armies (where death kept his open Shambles) ſhould bee robbed of his life, by the hand of onely one, and in the peacefull ſtrætes of Paris, which were as yet euen warme with the glorie of his Quænes Coronation, perfourmed but the day before: Is ſuch a villanie, as exceeds (if it were poſſible) the iuſt merrit of damnation, and that two Kings of one Kingdome, ſhoulde one after the other be ſo ſhamefully murdred, the one by a Iacobine Frier, the other ſometimes of the Feliants Order, is ſuch an indelible blot on the brow of Fraunce, as the vtmoſt date of time can neuer wipe off, nor any Penne ſufficientlie erpreſſe, the ſorrowe fitting a Theame ſo vnpleaſing.

Iacques Clemene.

Francis Rauilliart.

64 Lewes, the thirteenth of that Name, eldeſt Sonne to King Henry the fourth, and Maria de Medices his Quæne, being then ſcarcelie tenne yeares olde, ſucceeded his Father, in the Kingdomes Dignitie, but the Queene his Mother was proclaimed Regent. May hee long liue, heire vnto his Fathers Fame and Heroycall

1610.

Heroycall vertues, but, defended (by the hand of heauen) from his fate and hard Fortune, as all Christian Princes else (I pray to God) may be likewise preserued.

## A Briefe Chronologicall Suruay, concerning the Netherlands, deuided into 17. prouinces: with a Breuiate of the Earles and Princes there raigning, from Thierrie (who was the first Earle of Holland and Zeland) to this instant time.

COncerning the Originall of the people inhabiting these countries, we finde, that two Brethren, sons to the King of * Cathes, the one being named Battus, or Batton, & the other Zelandus, were the first Fathers of them, and that (from them) they deriued their names. For these two Princes, being too extreamly pursued by the hatred of a Stepmother, & no way pitied or supported by the King their father (escaping many traines and machinations, of poysoning, murthering, and diuers other dangers by her daily deuised, & put in practise against them) were forced to forsake their natiue abiding & flie to an Iland within the Rhine: where Battus determining to make his stay, called it Battauia after his owne name, & that is, in plainer vnderstanding, Holland. Zelandus, not liking to liue so neere, or with his Brother (least pursute should surprize them both, & reuenge there fasten, which in

* A people neere to the Scithians.

Battauia is Holland.

in more deſperate place they had auoided) he trauailed on to the vttermoſt confines of the Rhine, and liking there to ſet down his reſt, imitated his Brothers example (in ſtyling the Country) and called it Zeland. Concerning their building of Cities, Townes, Caſtles, and Fortes, which afterward came to be ruined and defaced againe, by wars with the Romans, Saxons, Gauls, Danes, &c. or to what order of life the people diſpoſed thẽſelues, and thorough how many and infinite encumbrances (from their originall) they paſſed for no meane ſtore of years together: theſe are matters meerely exempt from our intended breuitie, and may more amply be ſeen in ỹ hiſtory at large, whereunto I referre any ſuch deſirous Reader, and borrowing fauour for ſo large a leape, I inſtantly proceede to the yeare, 863. when Holland firſt became to be an Earledome.

Zeland named by Zelandus.

In the yeare before mentioned, Charles the Bald, King of France, at Bladell, in the Prouince of Campeigne, hauing there (in his company) a generall aſſembly of his Princes and Barons, for conſultation of many important matters: pleaſed to aduance the two Sons of Count Haghen (who was Vnckle to the King) for their great deſeruinges, and for the farther encouragement of the like vertuous minded Gentlemen. Walger, who was the eldeſt Sonne, hee made Earle of Teyſterbaudt; and Thierrie, the youngeſt Sonne, or Theodor, as ſome tearme him, being formerly called Thierrie of Aquitaine, hee made Earle of Holland.

863

The two Sonnes of Counte Haghen.

This

This gift of the Kings, especially that to Thierry, was much withstood by the Frizelanders, as scorning to be commanded by any new Lorde or Ruler: wherfore they consulted with the Hollanders, and a plot was layde to expell this newe Earle. But it proued to no effect, for the King comming thither (in person) with a powerfull army, made such an example on the King-leaders in this Rebellion, that the rest (in great humility) submitted themselues, casting their weapons not onely at the Kinges feete, but likewise at the Earles, and (vppon pardon) they vowed their continuall bounden dutie to Thierrie. His authority was then further strengthened, in the yeare 868. by the Letters Patents of King Charles, as also by them of Lewes, King of Germany, confirming him to be Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland. This Thierrie maried Genna, or Ienna, Daughter to Pepin the Bald, king of Italy, Sonne to the Emperor Charlemaigne. He woorthily foiled the Danes, that then possessed the Towne of Vtrecht, the Wiltes and the Slaues, disabling them from any further footing in Holland, which made them presume to meddle in Zeland, but thence they were repulsed likewise. By which meanes he remained afterward in peace, beautifying his Countries, both wyth fayre buildings and good Lawes. Hee dyed verie old, hauing raigned forty yeares, and after him succeeded

Thierry Earl of Holland, Zeland and Lord of Frizeland.

2 Thierrie his Sonne, second of that name, Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lorde of Frizeland,

land, who married with Hildegarde, Daughter to King Lewes of France, the Stammerer, and Sister to King Charles the Simple. The Frizelanders did twice revolt from their obedience, and would not allow Earle Thierrie to be their Lord, but ſlew very many of them that obeyed ỹ Earle, waſting, ſpoiling, and burning all the way as they went. But at length, they were iuſtly repayed for their inſolency, and ſuch a ſlaughter was made of the Fryſons (without any mercie) that few or none of them returned home to their dwellings. Afterward, he forced them to make the dores of entrance into their houſes, ſo low and narrow, that they muſt ſtope very lowe before they could get in, and this he did, to make them ỹ more humble and ſeruile, receiuing a new Oath of allegeance of them. And hauing raigned about fiftie yeares, beeing then aged 88. yeares olde, he dyed, leauing two Sonnes behinde him, the eldeſt whereof (being named Egbert) became Arch-Biſhop of Treues, and Arnold his yongeſt Sonne ſucceeded him.

The Frizelanders rebell againe.

3 Arnolde, or (as others will haue it) Arnulph, yoongeſt Sonne to Earle Thierrie, followed in rule as his Fathers Succeſſour: But hee helde the Earledomes of Holland, Zeland, and Lordſhippe of Frizeland, no longer of the Crowne of France, but of Otho the third, Emperor, and ſo became in fee to the Empyre. A verie fearful Comet appeared in his time, with ſtrange Eclipſes both of the Sunne and Moone, being as

A dreadfull Comet, Eclipses and earthquakes

as red as blood, and terrible Earth-quakes: a fire also fell from Heauen, in similitude like an huge Tower, burning for a long time: after which ensued so violent a Pestilence, that the liuing dyed burying the dead. The Frizons reuolting againe from obedience, made all his raigne a continuall warfare, and the Armies (on eyther side) meeting neere vnto Winckell, so dreadfull a battaile was fought betweene them; that the Hollanders sustained the worst, Count Arnolde being there slaine, and a great number of his cheefest Nobility. This battaile was fought the eightenth of October, the morrow after Saint Lamberts day, in the yeare 993. So this Earle Arnolde, hauing raigned fiue years, and being thus vnfortunately slaine, was buryed by his Father and Grand-father, in the Abbie of Egmont.

4 Thierrie, third of that name, and Sonne to Counte Arnolde, succeeded as fourth Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland. Being desirous to reuenge his Fathers death vppon the Frizons: hee was much impeached therein by Adelbold, Bishoppe of Vtrecht, against whom (neuertheless) he preuailed in two foughten battailes, in the year 1018. and (with great slaughter of the Fryzons) brought them vnder obedyence to his youngest Sonne Floris, whom hee made Lord of them. This Earle Thierrie, liuing afterward in very peacefull daies, vndertooke a Pilgrimage to Ierusalem, with the Lord of Arckell his loyall Subiect; who died at Hierusalem, and was there very honourably buried by Thierrie.

Adelbold Bysnop of Vtrecht.

rie. After whoſe returne home, and ſome yeares paſſed in peace with his Wife and Children, hauing raigned 46. yeares, he died in Anno 1039. and was buried by his Fathers in the Abbay of Egmont.

5 Thierrie, fourth of that name, was the fift Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland, after the deceaſe of Thierrie his Father. In a Tourney of Princes and Lords, performed (for pleaſure) in the Cittie of Liege, it was this Earles hard hap, to kill a Brother of the Biſhops of Cullen and Liege: whereby enſued ſuch diſcord and molleſtation, that, after many aduentures of reuenge, vnder-taken by the Germaine Gentlemen, albeit, therein they ſuſtained much loſſe of men, the Earle was ſhot into the Thigh with a poiſoned Dart, of which wound hee dyed the fiftenth of May 1048. after he had gouerned nine yeares, and was buryed by his Fathers, in the Abbay of Egmont. He was neuer marryed, and therefore left not any Childe to ſucceede him. 1039. The Biſhops of Cullen and Liege. 1048.

6 Floris, who (as you haue heard before) was Earl of Frizeland, now after his Brothers death, became the firſt Earl of Holland and Zeland. The former miſhap at Liege, could not as yet be forgotten by the Biſhops of Cullen and Liege; but they would needes proſecute freſh reuenge vppon Count Floris, who beeing a man of vndaunted ſpirite, defeated his Enemies in two ſeuerall attempts. Once by a cunning Stratagem, cauſing Ditches and Pit-fals to be made in South Holland, and couering them with Straw and graſſe, Two military Stratagems.

so that they could not be easily discerned. At this time, a bloody battaile beeing fought betweene them, there was forty thousand of the Earles enemies slaine, beside twenty fiue thousand more, who were drowned and smothered in those Ditches. An. Dom. 1058. The second foile of his aduersaries, happened foure yeares after this, when the Hollanders (putting the Germans to flight) returned with rich spoiles and great store of Prisoners, this was in the yeare 1062. yet was it this Earles ill fortune, to be afterward slaine vnarmed, as he sate vnder an Elme, taking the aire, his enemies preuailing by this aduantage. Hee had ruled in Holland 14. yeares, and in Frizeland 21. and lieth buried at Egmont.

7,8. Gertrude, widow to Earl Floris, in regard that Thierrie her son was in his nonage, gouerned those Countries in his right. And in the year 1063. she remarried with Robert the Frizon (son to Baldwin of Lisle de Buck, Earle of Flanders) with the good lyking of all the States and Nobility. Hee also was made Guardian of young Earle Thierrie, and (had this Gertrude) three Sonnes, Robert, Sur-named the young (who went with Godfrey of Bullen to the holy Land, and was (after his Father decease) Earle of Flanders;) Phillip, father to William of Ixt, & Baldwin Bishop of Teroanne; beside three daughters also, which he had by the saide Gertrude. This Robert was called the Frizon, not in regard of his birth, but of his big stature, strength and courage, for hauing preuailed against the Frizons,

1063. Robert the Frizon.

and

and hearing of his Brothers death, Baldwine de Mons, Earle of Flanders; hee laide claime to the ſaide Earledome, and (notwithſtanding the oppoſition of Richild Widdow to Earle Baldwin: by meanes of the Flemings, hee ouer-threwe the King of France in a battaile, and ſhee with her Sonne Baldwine, remaining ſatisfied with the County of Henault, Robert became quietly Earl of Flanders. For eight yeares ſpace, he carryed himſelfe with great wiſedome and valour, and dying in the yeare 1077. was buried in the Cannons Church, founded by himſelfe at Caſſel. Gertrudes time of rule by her ſelfe, and Roberts after, are reckoned as two ſeuerall gouernments.

Robert Earl of Flanders

1077

9 Godfrey, ſir-named the Croke-backt Duke of Lorraine, in this time of young Earle Thierries minority, was made an inſtrument (in regard of the former quarrell of Count Floris, and the Byſhops of Cullen and Liege, as yet not reuenged to their minds) to ſuggeſt a falſe information to Henry the fourth, Emperour, whereby the ſayde Godfrey became an Vſurper of the young Earles right, for the ſpace of foure yeares. But, as he was ſitting on the draught to eaſe his body, a Seruant of young Count Thierries, did thruſt a Jaueling vp into his fundament, whereof he died (not long after) at Maeſtrecht.

The Crook backt duke of Lorraine

10 Thierry, fift of that name, who (by Crooke-backt Godfrey, and other ſtrange oppoſitions) had long time bin debarred from quiet poſſeſſion of his right; at length, by an abſolute conqueſt

The Fryzons conquered in two battels.

of the Frizons, in two seuerall great battailes recouered all, and returned home as a Conqueror. Afterward, he married Whithilde, daughter to Frederick, Duke of Saxonie, by whom hee had a Son and a Daughter: Floris, that succeeded him, and Mathild, married to the Duke of Orleans. Earle Thierrie hauing gouerned fiftéen yeares, dyed, and was buried in the Abbey of Egmont.

1119 11 Floris, second of that name, and sirnamed the Fat or Grosse, succeeded next after his father Thierrie: he greatly fauoured men of the Church, whereby the Abby of Egmonts reuenewes were largely encreased. He being a man of very peacefull inclination, little or no disturbaunces happened in his time: but onely by the Frizons, who, for their rebelling, were seuerely punnished, and forced to submit themselues to his mercy. This Floris married Petronilla, or Parnell, Daughter to Didier, Duke of Saxony, and Sister to Lotharius the Emperor: By her he had three Sonnes; Thierrie, Floris, called the Blacke Prince of Kenemerlandt; and Symon, also one Daughter, named Hadewick, who was Countesse of Gueldres. Hauing gouerned his Countries very honorably, for the space of thirty one yeares; Hee died in Anno. 1133. and lieth buried in the Abby of Egmont.

Didier duke of Saxoy.

1133 12 Thierrie, first of that name, succeeded his Father Floris, and was much molested by the Frizons, in regard, that his Brother Floris the Blacke Prince, enuying the happinesse & quiet of

Thier-

Thierrie, went and toke part with them againſt him; vntill ſuch time as the Emperor Lotharius (beeing their Vnckle) had reconciled them, and made them friends. Conrade being ioyned as competitor in the Empire, with Lotharius, cauſed a freſh quarrell betweene Thierrie and the Biſhop of Vtrecht, he ratifying the former grant of Henry, which cauſed very long contention, and much blood to be ſhed on either ſide. Thierrie hauing gouerned his countries of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland 40. yeares, died in An. 1163. and lieth buried in the Abbey of Egmont.

Lotharius & Conrade Emperors.

13 Floris the third, eldeſt Son of Earle Thierrie, as Heire to his Father, inherited his right in Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland. The Frizons (pretending their former freedomes and imperial liberties) made ſtill their reuoltes from time to time, imboldned thereto by the often ſuggeſtions of Godfrey of Rhemen, Biſhop of Vtrecht, who as his predeceſſors had done before him, ſtill queſtioned the Earledomes of Oſtergo & Weſtergoe in Frizeland: but the Emperor Frederick went himſelfe in perſon, & made an agreement in writing betweene them. Al which notwithſtanding, much hurt was doone on either ſide, as time and treachery fitted them with apt opportunity. A great controuerſie hapned betweene the Earles of Holland & Flanders, for the Iſle of Walchren, and Count Floris (in triall of fight) became priſoner to the Earle of Flanders: who neuertheleſſe vſed him princely, and they being accorded by ỹ Archbiſhop of Cullen, and the Biſhoppe of Liege; the

1163

Earledomes of Oſtergo & Weſtergoe.

1166

The Dam or Sluce, called dogs Sluce.

great hole néere to the Dam or Sluce, was recouered with much adoe, by casting a Dogge-Fish thereinto, & speedy filling it vp with earth, whereon they named it Hondsdam, that is, Dogs-sluce. This Earle Floris, assisting the Emperor Frederick, Phillip King of France, Richard K. of England, with many other Dukes, Christian Princes & Earles, at the siedge of Damieta in Soria; fel there sick in the Army, and died in the year 1208 hauing gouerned his Prouinces 27. yeares.

1208.

14 Thierrie the seauenth, hearing of his Fathers death in Palestine; succéeded as his heire in all his Earledomes. The whole time of his regiment, was in warre and continual combustions. First by his Brother Lord William of Holland, (who was with his Father Floris in Palestine, & performed there many honourable seruices) thorow diuers disagréements ý happened betwéene them, notwithstanding as many labored reconcilings, and pacifications. Next, Baldwin Earle of Flanders, he was as molestuous to him likewise, for the Isle of Walchren: besides the Frizons rebellions, and his trouble with the Bishops of Cologne and Liege, as also his imprisonment to the Duke of Brabant, and then the intrusion of the Bishop of Vtrecht; after which, ensued a peace & united amity on all sides. This Count Thierrie has no heirs male, but two beautifull daughters; Adella, married to Henry of Gueldres, who died without any Children, and Ada, meanely married by her Mother, (after her Fathers death) to Count Lewes of Loos, that so the gouernment might

L. William of Holland.

1198.

might be diſpoſed at her pleaſure. In ỹ year 1205 Earle Thierry died, hauing gouerned his Countries 13 yeares, and lieth buried in the Abbay of Egmont. 1205.

15 Ada, daughter to Earl Thierry, was Counteſſe of Holland & Zeland, after her fathers death; which moued a great hart-burning in the Lordes & Gentlemen, that they ſhould liue vnder a Woman, and a poore Earls command. Therfore they ſent into Frizeland for Count William, proteſting to aſſiſt him in attaining the gouernment of Holland. The young Counteſſe Ada was ſurpriſed in their firſt attempt, and her husband the Earle of Loos driuen to flight; who yet won the Biſhop of Vtrecht (by Money and other promiſes) to aide him, and by this meanes he had ſome ſmall ſucceſſe for a while. But the Counteſſe Ada dying without any Children, Earle William was then the true and onely Heire to Holland and Zeland, in which right of his, he went with his power againſt the Earle of Loos, and ſuch was his ſucceſſe, that the Women did beat his Enemies with Diſtaues and Stones, they beeing glad to caſt away their Armour for lightneſſe, to ſaue themſelues by flight: yet many were drowned in the Ditches, and a great number taken Priſoners, with all the Earle of Loos Tentes, Pauillions, Plate, Jewels, and Munition, which Count VVilliam royally deuided among his Hollanders, remaining abſolute Prince of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland.

The gouernment of a Woman deſpiled.

Women beat Men with Diſtaues and ſtones.

16 William, firſt of that Name, ſucceeded 1218.

rightfully in all his Earledomes, by the death of his Neece the young Counteſſe Ada. Hee had ſome ſtrife with Didier Byſhop of Vtretcht, and Gerard Vander Are his Brother: but (vpon certaine Articles) al diſpleaſures were qualified. By his firſt wife Alix, daughter to the Earle of Gueldres, he had Floris, that next ſucceeded him, Otho biſhop of Vtretcht, William, Lieutenant of Holland, and two Daughters, the one was Abbeſſe at Rhynsbourg, and the other at Delfte. His ſecond wife was named Mary, Daughter to Edmund of Lancaſter, ſon to Henry the third, K. of England, by whom he had no iſſue. He gouerned 19. yeares, & dying, lieth buried at Rhynsbourg.

Edmund of Lancaſter, ſon to the K. of England.

17 Floris the fourth, ſucceeded his Father Count William in his Earledomes. Hee toke great delight in Juſts and Turnaments, and the Earl of Clermont proclaiming a publicke Triumph for all commers (at the Counteſſe his Wiues requeſt who greatly deſired to ſee this Floris, of whom ſhe had heard much fame and commendation) this honourable Earle of Holland, Zeland, &c. was there treacherouſly ſlaine, onely thorough the iealous ſuſpition of the olde Earle of Clermont, who was there likewiſe preſently ſlaine himſelf, and the Countes (grieuing for this great miſhap) dyed ſone after. This Count Floris hadde a Daughter, named Mathilde, or Margaret, as ſome call her, who was married to Count Herman of Henneberg; She deſpiſing a poore Widdow, that deſired her almes vpon vrgent neceſſity, holding in either arme a ſweete young childe, both

The wonderful birth of 365. Children.

both which, God hath ſent her at one birth, gaue her very reproachfull words beſide, as, that ſhee could not be honeſt of her bodie, and (by her huſband) haue two children lawfully begotten. The poore Woman, grieuing to be reiected in ſuch extreame want and neede, but much more, to heare her reputation ſo nearely touched, knowing her ſoule cleare from all diſhoneſt detection, made no further ſuite to the Lady, but (falling vppon her knees) appealed to God for defence of her Innocency, and earneſtly deſired, that as ſhee had conceiued, & borne thoſe two infants lawfully by her huſband, euen ſo, if euer that Lady ſhould be ſubiect to the cuſtom of women, that it would pleaſe him, to ſend hir as many children at one birth, as there were daies in the years. Not long after, the Lady conceiued with child by her huſband, & (for hir deliuerance) went into Holland, to viſit ỹ earl hir brother, taking vp lodging in the Abbey of religious women at Losdunen, and grew ſo exceeding great, as the like had neuer before bin ſeene. When her time came, on ỹ Friday before Palmſunday, in the yeare 1276. ſhee was deliuered of 365. children, the one halfe being ſons, and the other daughters: but the odde child was an Hermaphrodite, and they were all wel ſhaped & proportioned in their little members. Theſe children were laid in two Baſins, and were all baptized by Guydon, Suffragan to the Biſh. of Vtrecht, who named al the ſonnes Iohn, and the Daughters Elizabeth, but what name he gaue the Hermaphrodite, is not recorded. They were no ſoner bap-

This Hiſtory is auouched for a truth by diuers good Authors.

baptized, but they all died, and the Mother also. The two Basins are yet to be seene in the sayde Church of Losdunen, and a memory of them, both in Latine & Dutch. The Latine beginning thus. Margareta, Comitis Hennebergiæ vxor, & Florentij Hollandiæ & Zelandiæ filia, &c.

Underneath are these verses:

En tibi monstrosum & memorabile factum,
Quale nec à mundi conditione datum.

This Count Floris, being so treacherously slaine, as you haue heard before, had his body brought backe into Holland, by the Earle of Cleues, and other Noble Lords, who buried it in the Abbey of Rhynsbourg; hee hauing honorably and vertuously gouerned his Countries 12. yeares. He left but one Son named William, six years old, who was in the tutelage of his Vnckle Otho, bishop of Vtrecht, during his minority.

18 William, second of that name, succéded his father Floris in all his dominions, being al ỹ time of his vnder yeares, in the gouernment of Otho Bishop of Vtrecht his Vnckle, who was a verie worthy and carefull Guardian to him. The pope hauing deposed Frederick the second, & Conrade his sonne from the Empire: the princes Electors (in despight of the Pope) made this Earle William King of the Romaines, and crowned him at Aix la Chapelle, he hauing then attained to the age of 20. yeares. A long and tedious trouble happened, betwæne him, and Margaret Countesse of Flanders, a very high minded and proude woman, for the Country of Walchren, wherein, after

Earle William king of the Romans

after a great foyle and ſlaughter of the Flemings, (taking part with hir) & imp[r]iſonment of her two ſons, Guy & Iohn, ſhe implored the aid of Charles Duke of Aniou, againſt king William, and ſped thereby no better then ſhee had done before, but was glad in the end to ſeeke reconcilement. This K. William did build the Pallace of the Earles of Holland, in the village of La Hage, or the Hague where it is at this day, & a goodly Cloiſter at Harlem. At his wars in Weſt Frizeland, where he preuailed very ſucceſſefully, he wold needs, without any other aſſiſtance then himſelf, follow ẏ rebels ouer the Ice, where his horſe ſlipping in, him ſelfe almoſt drowned, & none nèer to help him, but enemies of the Frizons, ẏ lay ſecretly in ambuſh: they beat him down with clubs & ſtaues, not knowing that it was the king, & ſo they ſlew him. But when afterward they took better notice of him, by his Target & Armes theron emblazoned, in very harty ſorrow for their foule deed, they buried him ſecretly, in a poore houſe in the village of Hooktwonde, thinking ſo to wipe out all remẽbrance of him. But his body was after found, and buried in the Abby of Middlebourg, in the Iſle of walchrẽ. K. William cruelly ſlain

19 Floris the fift, ſon to king William, who was ſlaine ſo inhumanely, albeit hee was but ſixe moneths old, yet he ſucceeded his father, his Uncle Floris being his Gouernor and Tutor. At 17. yeares of age, he went with an army againſt the ever-reuolting Frizons, and ouercame them at a village called Schellinckhout, very ſeuerely reuenging his fathers death on them, & (by building

foure

foure Castles in Zeeland) brought them wholy vnder his obedience. Afterward, Counte Floris
1290 made a voyage into England, where a marriage was contracted, betweene Iohn, eldest Sonne to Earle Floris, and Elizabeth, Daughter to King Edward the first, Iohn being (not long after) sent into England, to accomplish the saide marriage, where he remained in the Court of England, till his Fathers vnfortunate death, which briefely was thus.

The History of the death of Earle Floris

A Knight lined in the Earles Courte, named Gerard Van Velson, who had bin a whole years space detained in prison, and his Brother beheaded, through certaine false suggestions whispered to the Earle, which (afterward) appearing to be a meere iniurie, the Earle sought to repaire this wrong, with verie especiall fauours doone to the Knight, great aduancements, and woulde haue bestowed also his Concubine in mariage on him. Which Gerard disdaining, and replying, that he would not weare his cast shoes: the Earle rashly answered, that he should take his leauings, in despight of his heart. To preuent marriage with the Earles Minion, the Knight bestowed his affections else where, and wedded a Lady of great honor and beauty. Which when the Earl vnderstood, he pursued his former rash folly, to the price of his owne life. Sending Gerard on an employment of much credit and respect, and wherewith he was not a little pleased, not doubting any such wicked intention. The Earl came vnto Gerardes house, vnder colour of hospitality, and there (winning

nting her to priuat conference in her bed chamber) forcibly defloured her, to performe his raſhe promiſe to her huſband. At Gerards return, and this foule wrong diſcouered, it was purſued with very bloody reuenge, by a reſolued conſpiracy ſworn againſt his life: which albeit he had ſome warning of (by a paper deliuered him by a poor woman) yet his diſaſter being inenitable, a train was laid for him as he rode a hauking, and xxi. wounds he receiued on his body, by the hand of the ſaide Gerard. But he and the reſt of the conſpirators eſcaped not vnpuniſhed, for they had their heads ſmitten off, and were then laide vpon wheeles: but Gerard was put (ſtard naked) into a Pipe ſtuck full of ſharpe nailes, and was ſo rowled vp and downe through all the ſtreets of Leyden. Then was he beheaded, and laide on a wheele, and all his kinred to the ninth degree, put to death, and laide vpon wheeles.

A ſeuere reuenge for the Earles death.

20 After the wicked murther of Earle Floris the firſt, committed by the Fryzons, as hath been declared, Iohn his onely ſon (being then in England with King Edward his Father in law) was next to ſucceede him as his rightful heire. But before he could leaue England, ſome partialities & factions happened in Holland for the gouernement, which ſome were qualified at Earle Iohns being there preſent, notwithſtanding the ſubtle policie of Wolfart of Borſſele, ſeizing the perſon of Earle Iohn, and Ladie Elizabeth his Wife, thinking to haue the gouernement of the ſayde Earle, becauſe as yet hee was but young. Earle Iohn

1297

Wolfart of Borſſele his ſecret intention.

Iohn preuailed against the Frizons, and the Bishop of Vtrecht, and hauing gouerned his countries about foure yeares, hee fell sicke at Harlem, and there died. He was the first of al the Earls of Holland, that died without children: wherfore in him failed the line masculine of the Earles from the Dukes of Aquitain, which from Thierrie, or Theodor, the first Earl of Holland, had continued 437. yeares. He was buried in the Abbey of Rhynsbourg, his widdow Lady Elizabeth being carried back into England, where she was afterward maried to the Earle of Oxford: So that by the death of Earl Iohn in this maner, those countries were deuolued to the earls of Henault, issuing by the mothers side frō the Earls of Holland.

1300

The end of the race of the Dukes of Aquitain and succession of the Earles of Henault.

1301. 21 Iohn, second of that name, called Iohn of Henault (claiming his right from Alix, sister to William king of the Romans) succeeded after Iohn, as Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland, &c. He had a long and tedious trouble with Iohn de Reuesse, who perswaded the Emperor, that Iohn Earle of Holland dying without issue, his Earledomes ought (in right) to returne to the Empire: according as Charles the Bald, Emperor of the Romans, had at first giuen them in fee & homage to Thierrie of Aquitaine. This suggestion raised the Emperor Albert in Armes, against Iohn of Henault, but the Bishop of Cullen compounded the matter betweēn them, and Iohn de Reuesse was afterward drowned, by which means, Iohn of Henault was rid of a turbulent enemy. Iohn of Henault, hauing gouerned Henault thirty years,

Iohn de Reuesse drowned.

and

and his Countries of Holland, Zeland, & Frize- 1305
land 5. years, died & was buried at Valenciennes
22 VVilliam the thirde, ſon and heire to Count
Iohn of Henault, ſucceeded his fathers earldoms:
he was commonly called The good Earle willi- The good
am, for his Vertues, Iuſtice, good life, and hono- Earle willi-
rable actions. In his time happened ſo great a am.
dearth and famine in Holland, that poore people 1316
died with hunger, euen in the ſtreetes as they
went: ſeeking alſo for hearbes and rootes in the A wonder-
fields and woods, there they were likewiſe found full dearth.
dead, and in the common high wayes: litle chil-
dren died ſucking at their Mothers breaſts, and
ſome were enforced to feede on their deade Chil-
dren. In this time of Famine, a poore woman
in the Towne of Leyden, being extreamly ouer- A ſtraunge
charged with hunger, entreated her owne ſiſter, example of
(being a woman of better ability) to lend hir ſom an vnmer-
Bread, which ſhe would thankfully repay again, ciſull Siſter.
when God ſhould inable hir. She very vnkindly,
& without any pitty of hir extremity, denied her
oftentimes, notwithſtanding the others often be-
gings, that ſhe was aſſured, ſhee could not bee
without bread. Hereupon, the vnmerciſull Si-
ſter (lying both to God, and to her owne poore
ſiſter) ſaide: If I haue any bread, I wiſh that it
may inſtantly be turned into a ſtone: wherewith
the heauy diſpleaſure of God laid hold vppon her
words, & going afterward to her Cupboord (to re-
lieue hir ſelf) ſhe found al her loaues of bread con-
uerted into apparant ſtones, & died her ſelfe with
extreamity of hunger. It is credible ſaide,
that

that one or two of these stones, are yet to be seene in S. Peters Church at Leyden, as a memorie of this iust iudgement of God.

A worthy action of Iustice, don by this good Earle William.

There is also recorded another memorable Historie, of vpright Iustice doone by this good Earle VVilliam, to a poore Countrey-Man, against a Bayliffe of South Holland, who hadde taken a goodly faire Cowe from him, that was the releefe of himselfe, his poore Wife and Children, as there are some kine in that Countrey, which doe giue twenty pottles of Milke and more, in a day. The Bayliffe, at the poore mans complaint to this good Earle William, who lay then sick in his Bed at Valenciennes (yet neuer debarred any suters from audience, were he sick or well) was adiudged to giue the poore man an hundred Crowneş of good Gold, for the wrong he had done to him, which was accordingly performed. But for his iniury to publique Iustice, (being himselfe an Officer) and abusing the authoritie committed in trust to him, the Earle sent for an Executioner, and caused his head to be smitten off by his Beddes side. This good Count William, beeing a vertuous Prince, victorious in warre, a Man learned, wise, well spoken, and iudicious, a great friend to peace, gracious to all men, & beloued in all Princes courts, hauing gouerned his Prouences 32. yeares, died the 9. of June 1337. and was buried with great pomp at Valenciennes.

1337 23 William the fourth, Sonne to the good Earle William, came to his Fathers Earledoms by

by lawfull ſucceſſion. He was a man of high merit, and a moſt famous Souldier, whereof hee made good proofe; firſt againſt the Sarrazins and Moores, in the Kingdome of Granada; Next, with the Emperour Lewes, and many Noble Earles, ayding his brother in law Edward the 3. King of England, againſt the King of Fraunce; Thirdly, in ouer-running all Lithuania, Liuonia, and warring againſt the Ruſſian Infidels, lading home his men with victory and wealthy ſpoiles; And laſtly, in preuailing againſt the Frizons, and Robert of Arckell Gouernour of Vtrecht. Yet it was his hard hap to bee ſlaine vnknowne (among the Frizons) before any coulde haue power to help him: ſo that he left no lawful Childe to ſucceede him, and therefore his Siſter, (being Empreſſe) remained his onely Heire.

Earle William a worthy ſouldier 1338

1342

Robert of Arckel, gouernour of Vtrecht. 1346

24 Margaret, Wife to Lewes of Bauaria, (then Emperour) and eldeſt Siſter to Earl William, ſlaine (as you haue heard) by the Frizons, by the Emperours interpoſition of his authority, and her owne Native right, went downe by the Rhine into Holland, accompanied with a moſt princely and well beſeeming traine, and was acknowledged to be Lady and Princeſſe of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland. But before her returne backe to the Emperour againe, ſhee conſtituted both his and her eldeſt ſonne (named William of Bauaria) to be her Regent there in thoſe Countries, for a ſumme of Money yearely paied to her; but remaining vnpaid, ſhe might reſume all her rights to her ſelfe againe. The Emperour

Margaret the Empreſſe Princeſſe of Holland.

deceasing, the Empresse Margaret came thither againe, and had resignation (from her son William) of all the fore-said Countries, retyring himselfe into Henault, as being well contented there to liue: till by intestine discord, & dangerous practises of two intruded factions, called Cabillaux and Hoecks (wherein both Nobles and Gentlemen did too far enter) the Mothers gouernment did grow vnsufferable, and Duke William was recouered from Henault, to vnder-goe the Sole-authority. Two very bloudy battailes were fought betwæn the Empresse and her Son; and in the first, Earl William escaped with great difficultie, and fledde into Holland, for this battaile was fought at La Vere in Zeland. But in the second, there was so much bloud spilt, that (for three daies after) the old Riuer of Mense (at full Sea) was (all ouer) red in that place. The Empresse (by helpe of a small Barke) escaped into England, and, vppon an agreement afterward made betwæne them; Duke VVilliam had the quiet possession of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland assigned him, and the Empresse Margaret had the County of Henault, where (fiue yeares after) she ended her daies, and lieth buried at Valenciennes.

The factions of Cabillaux and Hoecks.

1351.

A great effusion of bloud.

25 Duke William being peaceably possessed of his Seigneuries, according to the former composition, bæing also Duke of Bauaria, Palatine of Rhine, and Earle of Henault by his Mothers death, tooke to Wife the Lady Mathilda, daughter to Henry Duke of Lancaster in England, by

Mathilda, daughter to Henry duke of Lancaster

by whō he had not any children. Much ſtrife, war, and bloodie bickering, happened betweene him and the Byſhoppe of Vtrecht, with ſhrewd diſadvantages on eyther ſide; till, by the meanes of ſome Noblemen, they were reduced to amity. This Duke VVilliam (by what occaſion it could neuer bee knowne) fell diſtracted of his ſenſes, and ſlew a Knight with a blow of his Fiſt: ſo that hee was ſhut vppe (vnder good Guarde) for ninetæne yeares ſpace, euen till he dyed. Hauing gouerned his Prouinces of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland (before his madneſſe) ſeauen yeares, and Henault two. 1358

26 Albert of Bauaria, Brother to Duke William, in the time of his diſtraction, was ſent for from Bauaria, and made Gouernour of his Brothers Countries, in hope of his recouery, which by no meanes coulde bee compaſſed. Hee vanquiſhed the Frizons in many rebellions, tooke the Towne of Delft, and beheaded the Baron of Eughien, vppon ſiniſter informations, which cauſed great trouble betweene him, and fiue brethren of the ſaid Baron: but, vpon their reconcilement, Count Albert builded the Thannorny of the Chappell, at the Court of the Hage. The Barons of Eughien beheaded.

1368.

In his time, a Sea-Woman (by reaſon of great Tempeſtes at Sea, and extraordinarie high tides) was ſeene ſwimming in the Zuyderzee, betweene the Townes of Campen and Edam; which being brought to Edam, and cleanſed from the Sea-Moſſe growne about her, by her long abiding there: ſhe was like to another woman A Sea Woman ſeen in the Zuyderzee.

1401 man, endured to be apparrelled. & would fæde on meates as others did, yet sought shee all meanes to escape, and get into the water againe, had shee not very carefully bin tended. She did learne to spin, and exercise other womanly qualities, being daily seene of infinite persons, who haue made perfect testimoniall of this rare accident, and signified it for an vndoubted truth, auouching, that she liued fiftæne yeares, and lyeth there buryed in the Church-yard. In the yeare 1404. this famous Prince Albert dyed, after hæ had gouerned his Countries forty fiue yeares: nineteene as he was Tutor to his distracted Brother, and twenty seauen as Prince, Heire and Lorde of those Countries, beeing buryed at the Hage in Holland.

1404

27 William, first of that name, after the death of Duke Albert of Bauaria his Father, succæded as his immediate Heire. His first Wife was Daughter to Charles the fift, King of Fraunce, and shæ dyed young, without any Issue. He secondly married the Daughter of Iohn, Sonne to Phillip the bold Duke of Burgundie, by whom he had one onely Daughter, named Iaqueline, or Iacoba, as the Dutch vse to call her. This Count William wasted Frizeland, spoiled Liege, and preuailed against the Gueldres, as also the Lordes (Father and Sonne) of Arckell at Gorrichom, and reconciled the Duke of Burgundy to the French King. The Dolphine of France, Sonne to King Charles the first, marryed Iaqueline, Count Williams Daughter; but

Phillip the bold Duke of Burgundy.

he

he being poyſoned, by putting on a ſhirt of maile, died without Iſſue: As Earle William himſelfe did not long after, being bitten in the Legge by a mad Dogge, which hurt could neuer bee cured. So that Lady Iaqueline (his Daughter, and widow to the Dolphine of Fraunce) was his true Heire in all his Seigneuries: She gouerned thirteene yeares, and lieth buried at Valenciennes in Henault. 1417

28 Iaqueline, or Iacoba, Daughter and Sole-heire to William of Bauaria, ſucceeded her Father in all his Earledomes and Seigneuries, being then Widdow to the Dolphine of France, and yet but 19. yeares of age. In regard of her youth and widdow-hood, ſhe endured much moleſtation in her gouernment, chiefely in Holland: for the two factions tooke head againe, and bandied their boldneſſe on both ſides, the Hoeckins, fauouring the Counteſſes faction, and the Cabillantines her Enemies, by which meanes her rule was greatly diſturbed. For Iohn of Bauaria (forſaking his Biſhoppricke of Liege) ſought to make himſelfe an Earle, and marry his Nice Iaqueline (vtterly againſt her will) and yet to diſpoſſeſſe her of her rightfull inheritance, for which purpoſe he leagued himſelfe with the Cabillantines, and other powerfull Friends, who neuertheleſſe were ſlaine in their bolde aduenture at Gorrichome. And, to fruſtrate the Biſhoppes vaine hope, the Pope diſpenced her marriage, with Iohn Duke of Brabant, albeit hee was her neere Kinſman, whereby their Patrimoniall in- Iohn of Bauaria Biſhop of Liege.

heritances were the more strengthened, and hée acknowledged as their Prince, in Henault, Holland, Zeland, Frizeland, &c. It were needlesse here to relate, the following molestations of Iohn of Bauaria the bishop, to his Niece Iaqueline, taking on himselfe the title of Earle, and therefore, (by some) ranked among the Earls of Holland, or the after marriages of Lady Iaqueline; to the Duke of Glocester, Uncle to Henry the first, King of England; the fourth and last time (in great priuacy) to Frank of Borsselle, Lieutenant of Zeland, or her (no meane troubles) by the Duke of Burgundy, to whom she resigned vp all her Countries: Let it suffice, that she liued in continuall vexations 19. yeares, and dying at the Hage, was buried in the Chappell of the Court of Holland.

Iohn of Bauaria the Bishop reckoned the 29. Earl of Holland.

1436

30 Phillip Duke of Burgundy, being (both by Father and Mother) right full heire and successor to the fore-named Countesse Iaqueline; was thus entitled: Phillip Duke of Bourgogne, Brabant, and Lembourg; Earle of Flanders, Artois, Burgogne, Henault, Holland, Zeland, and Namur; Marquesse of the holy Empire; & Lord of Frizeland, Salins and Macklyn. He had three Wiues; by the two first hee had no Children, but by the last, named Isabel (daughter to Iohn K. of Portugall) he had three sons; Anthony & Iosse, who died young, and Charles Martin, Earle of Charolois, and successor to his father. This Phillip of Bourgogn instituted the order of Knight-hood of ỹ golden Fliece, & had much discontent with his Son

The Titles of Phillip Duke of Bourgogne.

The order of the golden Fliece instituted.

ſon Charles, whom (at length he married to the Lady Margaret, ſiſter to Edward the fourth, K. of England. The Rebels of Gaunt and Bruges dearly felt the valour of this Phillip; he beſieged Callis, ſurpꝛized Luxemboug. ſubdued Liege; and ouer-came the Hamecons; Hee exceeded all his pꝛedeceſſoꝛs (Duks of Bourgogne) in riches, Seigneuries, height of Pomp and State. He died the fift of June 1467. hauing gouerned about forty yeares. In his time was the famous Art of Pꝛinting firſt inuented, the men of Harlem in Holland do challenge the firſt honoꝛ thereof, but it was reduced to perfection at Mentz, by one Iohn Fauſtus, who had bæn Seruaunt to Laurence Ianſon of Harlem, as they conſtantly affirme it. 1467.

The Art of printing firſt inuented.

31 Charles, Sur-named the Warlique Duke of Bourgogne, ſucceeded in all his Fathers Titles and Dignities. The Inhabitants of Gant reſiſting him, he bꝛought them vnder obeyſance, & defeated the Liegeois in battaile, which enfoꝛced Liege to yælde to him. He made peace with the French King, who doubted to be detayned at Peronne by Duke Charles. Vpon a freſh rebellion of the Liegeois. The Duke foꝛced king Lewes to go with him to the ſiedgs of their towꝛn; which hee ruined, and pꝛactiſed the like of the Houſe of Brederode. He warred againſt the Frizons; and carried many Pꝛinces in hope of his daughters mariage. The French K. and the duke ſought to deceiue each other, and the Conſtable of S. Paul (waxing hateſull to them both) they reſol-

The warlike Duke of Bourgogne

ued his ruine, and (on a truce taken for 9. years, betweéne the King and Duke) the Constable was beheaded at Paris. The Duke warred against the Swisses, and was defeated by them, both at Granson and Morat, wherewith ỹ Swisses were enriched. The Duke besiedged Nancie, and was there slain in battel, by the Treason of the Earle of Campobachio, an Italian: where being engirt with a great troupe of Lanciers, he receiued three wounds, one in the head, the second in the thigh, and the third in the fundament. He left one onlie Daughter and heire.

The Earle of Campobachio. 1477

32 Mary, Daughter and Heire to Duke Charles, the warlike Duke of Bourgogne, succéeded her Father in al his Countries: being but 18. yeares old when he was slaine before Nancy, wherefore shee remained vnder the charge of the Duke of Cleues, and his Brother the Lord of Raueſtein. The French King seized Piccardie and Arthois: she happening into the Ganthois power, endured much trouble, by putting her chiefest seruants and Councellors to death: the Flemings were defeated, and the young Duke of Gueldres slaine. Afterward, a marriage was concluded betwéene Maximilian Arch-duke of Austria, Sonne to the Emperor Frederick, and the Lady Marie of Bourgogne, albeit shee would more gladly haue matched with the house of France.

The Duke of Gueldres slaine.

33 Maximilian, Arch-Duke of Austria, and Son to the Emperour Fredericke, marrying the Princesse Mary of Bourgogne, was thereby wedded to much war and trouble. For first the Guel-

Gueldres reuolted from the houſe of Bourgogne; next, happened the battel of Guinegate, wherein the Arch-Duke was the Conquerour: Then, Turnay yelded to him, truce was taken betwen him and the French King, and the new tumults of the Cabillaux and Hoecks, were likewiſe by him pacified. Dordrecht was ſurprized by the young Lord of Egmont; alſo, many Townes in Guelders yelded to the Arch-Duke: and (not long after) followed the death of the Arch-Dutcheſſe Mary; who had (the firſt yeare of her mariage, a Sonne, named Phillip (Father to Charls the firſt) the ſecond yeare a Daughter, called Margaret, betroathed in her infancye, to Charles the Dolphin of France, Sonne to King Lewes 11. and the third year, a Sonne named Frances, according to the name of Fraunces Duke of Brittaine his Godfather. Maximilian beeing choſen King of the Romaines, he made Engelbert, Earl of Naſſau, Gouernour of the Netherlands in his abſence: And afterward, vpon the bold inſolency of the Ganthois and Brugois (keeping the King of Romaines priſoner) Albert Duke of Saxonie, was made ſecond Gouernor of the Netherlands, and General for the Emperor Frederick againſt the Flemings. But Frederick dying, his Sonne Maximilian ſucceeded him in the Empire, by which meanes, Phillip of Auſtria, ſon to the ſaid Maximilian, inherited his right in Holland, Zeland, Frizeland, &c.

1479

Newe tumults of the Cabillaux and Hoecks

1482

Engelbert, earl of Naſſawe. 1491

1494

34 Phillip, ſecond of that name, being but 16. yeares olde, and ſucceeding his father Maximilian

The Titles of Phillip. Arch-duke o. Austria.

an, Emperor in the Netherlands, had these Titles. Phillippe Arch-Duke of Austria, Duke of Bourgogne, Lothier, Brabant, Styria, Carinthia, Lembourg, Luxembourg, and Guelders; Earle of Haspourg, Flaunders, Arthois, Bourgogne, Ferrette and Kiburch; Palatine of Henault, Holland, Zeland, Namur and Zutphen: Marquesse of the Holie Empyre, and of Bourgan; Landtgraue of Elsaten, Lorde of Windismarke, Portenau, Salynes, and Macklyn. Upon his full possession of the Netherlandes, peace was made betweene him, & Charles the 8. King of France, warre happening betwixt the Arch-duke and the Duke of Guelders, great inconueniences followed thereon: but Duke Albert beeing slaine before Groningen, the Arch-Duke inherited the realme of Spain by his wife, being made King of Castile, and George Duke of Saxonie (being then made gouernor of the Netherlands, for the Arch-Duke Phillip) continued the warres in Frizeland. For, vpon the death of Isabell Q. of Castile, Iane her daughter, being onely heyre, and married to the Arch-Duke Phillip; she heerby inuested him in the Realmes of Spain, Leon, Granado, &c. as absolute King. But he enioyed that dignity not long, for in the yeare, 1506. the 27. of September, hee died (suddenly) in the Citty of Bourgos, suspected to be poysoned. After the death of Phillip King of Castile, the Emperour Maximilian tooke vppon him the gouernement of the Netherlandes, as Guardian vnto Charles and Ferdinand his Grand-children, being

1497

1503

Iane, daughter to Isabel married to the Arch-duke Phillip

1505

1506

ing the Sons of Phillip and Iane, King & Quéen of Caſtille.

35 Charles of Auſtria, ſecond of that name, ſucceeded rightfully in all his Fathers Landes and Seigneuries, and by the Emperors appointment his daughter the Ladye Margaret (Dowager of Sauoy, and Aunt to the Princes Charles and Ferdinand) was Regent of the low countries. Afterwarde, Prince Charles toke poſſeſſion of the Netherlands, and being crowned K. of Spain and Arragon, ſoone after followed the death of the Emperor Maximilian, and in an aſſemblye at Francfort, for choiſe of a new Emperor, Charles King of Spaine had frée election, by the name of Charles the fift. Then was Ladye Margaret, (Widdow both of Caſtile and Sauoy, and Aunt to the Emperour Charles) accepted as ſole Gouerneſſe of the Netherlandes, in her Nephewes abſence. Troubles happened in Spaine, by reaſon of the Kings departure thence, and not onelie warre in Frizeland, but likewiſe betweene the French and Bourguignons, as alſo the warre of Boores or Peazants in Germany: and the Groningeois reiecting the Du. of Guelders, did yeild themſelues to the Emperor: then, hapned the 2. bloody edict frō the Emp. againſt the Netherland protеſtants, & then was the imperial diet at Auſbourg, wher the protеſtant princes preſented the confeſſion of their faith. After followed the deuouring inundation in the Netherlands, & the death of the Lady dowager Margaret, whereby Mary of Auſtria, 2. daughter to K. Phillip, and M. Iane of Caſtile

1508 — 1515 — 1519 — 1520 — Lady Margaret ſole Gouerneſſe. — 1526

1531. Castile, succéded in the gouernment of the Ne-
Mary of Austria. therlands. Warre happened betwéene the Em-
peror and the French King, but vppon the com-
ming of Quéene Elenor of Fraunce to the Em-
1554. peror her Brother, peace was concluded betwixte
them.

36 While Mary of Austria gouerned the Ne-
therlands, for the Emperor Charles her brother,
great troubles happened to the Protestantes, by
opposition of the Pope and Emperour againste
1549. them. The Emperor affected the Empyre for
Prince Phillip his Sonne, which bred a quarrel
betwixt the Emperor, and his brother Ferdinand
King of Hungary, to whome the Princes of the
Empire were more enclined, then to Phillip; and
then the Protestantes denied their comming to
1555 the Counsell of Trent. Phillip King of Spaine
married Mary Quéene of England: And not
long after, ỹ Emperor resigned the Netherlands
to his Sonne King Phillip (whereby he was rec-
koned the 36. Earle of Holland, Zeland, &c.) and
the Empire to his Brother Ferdinand, K. of the
Romans and Hungary, departing out of the Ne-
therlands, to end his daies quietly in a Monaste-
ry, not far from Placentia. He reserued 100000
Crownes yearely to himselfe, employing 4000.
for his diet and maintenance, appointing the rest
1556. to young maides marriages, and the releefe of
Widowes and Orphanes, he not liuing aboue
two yeares after. When not onely happened
his death, but likewise the deaths of the Quéens
Dowagers of France and Hungarie, as also of
Mary

Mary Queene of England, after whom ſucceeded her Sister Elizabeth, in which time, Emanuell Philebert, Duke of Sauoy, and Prince of Piemont, was Gouernour and Lieutenant Generall of the Netherlands, for King Phillip: till the King of Spaines marriage (beeing turned into teares, by the vntimely death of the French king) cauſed Margaret of Auſtria, Baſtard to the Emperor Charles the fift, and Dutcheſſe of Parma, to ſucceede the Duke of Sauoy in the Netherlandes regiment. King Phillip returned then home into Spaine, it being his laſt departure out of thoſe Countries: whereon (not long after) enſued the ſubtle bringing of the Spaniſh Inquiſition into ỳ Netherlands, by the creation of new Byſhops, and ſuch was the power and priuiledge of the Inquiſitors, as none were able to withſtande them, in confiſcation both of body and goodes at their owne pleaſure.

Elizabeth Q of England.

1559

The Spaniſh Inquiſition.

1565

Nowe, albeit the Tyrannie of the Dutcheſſe gouernment in the Lowe Countries, was more then the people could well endure, yet (to putte a ſharper Snaffle in their mouthes) King Phillip remoued his Baſtard Sister Margaret, and ſent Don Ferdinando Aluares, Duke of Alua, who quickly brought the Netherlands into a moſt pittifull eſtate: making himſelfe ſure of Gaunt, and Count Horne and Count Egmont (abuſiuelie) made Priſoners: he builded the Caſtle of Antuerpe, where he erected his owne proud Statue, and proceeded to apprehend the prince of Orange by Commiſſion, ſetting downe Articles by the

1568

Spaniſh

Spaniſh Inquiſition (which were confirmed by the King) to ruinate the Netherlandes, vppon which, ſone followed the execution of the ſons of Batembourg at Bruſſels, as alſo the Earls of Egmont and Horne. William of Naſſau, Prince of Orange, was made Gouernor of Holland, Zeland & Vtrecht for the States, and proued verie fortunate in many attempts againſt the Duke of Alua, which made him labor his repeale home into Spaine, with Don Frederick his ſon. Don Lewes de Requeſens, the great commander of Caſtile, was ſent to ſpoil the Dukes place in the Netherlands, for the king of Spain, to whom Aluaes former behauiour ſerued for an example, in hys proceeding, and notwithſtanding his beſieging of Middlebourg (neere hande to famiſhment) yet was his fleet defeated before his face, & the Town yeilded vppe by Collonell Mondragon, to the Prince of Orange. After many dangerous turmoiles, on both ſides, the States ſent to require ſuccour of Elizabeth Queene of England, and ſone after dyed Don Lewes de Requeſens at Bruſſels; in whoſe roome ſucceeded Don Iohn of Auſtria (Baſtard ſonne to the Emperor Charles the fift) as Gouernor for King Phillip in the Netherlands, all the Prouinces whereof were vnited at the pacification of Gand, whereupon, the Caſtle was yeelded vnto the States, and all the Spaniards departed out of Antuerp caſtle, which was alſo deliuered into the States handes. Don Iohn being receiued as Gouernor, he ſought occaſions how to renew warre againſt the Prince of Orange,

1574

Wil. Prince of Orange

The Commaunder of Caſtile.

1575

Don Iohn of Auſtria.

Orange, and diuers diſcontentmentes, as alſo treacherous practiſes, being noted in Don Iohn, the States grew iealous of him, and he was proclaimed the Countries enemye. Then was the Arch-Duke Mathias called to be Gouernor, and while the heart-burnings holde betweene Don Iohn and the States, the Duke of Aniou, and Duke Caſimire alſo were required to ſuccour them, but to little effect, for Arthois and Henault fell from the Netherlands generall vnion, and then followed the death of Don Iohn, of the plague, in the Campe neere vnto Mamure. 1577. The Arch-Duke Mathias. 1578.

Then Alexander Farnaſe, Duke of Parma and Placentia, baſtard Nephew to the king of Spain, ſucceeded Don Iohn in the Netherlands gouernment: Whereuppon, a ſtricter Union (then before) was made betwirte the Prouinces at Vtrecht. The Duke of Aniou was called to bee Protector, and partly Lord of the Countreyes in the Union, which made the King of Spaine proſcribe the Prince of Orainge, and ſet his life at ſale, to which proſcription the Prince (in euerie point) made his iuſt anſwere. Then were valiant and worthye ſeruices performed by Sir Iohn Norris, and Captain (afterwards) Sir Roger Williams. In the yeare following, the Generall Eſtates of the vnited Prouinces, hauing declared Phillip K. of Spain, ſecond of that name, to be faln from the Seigneury of the ſaid prouinces, in regard of his extraordinary and too violent gouernement, againſt their priuiledges and freedomes (ſolemnly ſworne by himſelfe.) In way of The Prince of Parma. 1580. The Duke of Aniou. 1581.

of right and Armes, toke vpon them all the Gouernment of the politicke Estate, and of the Religion in those Prouinces, breaking the Kinges Seales, absoluing the Subiects of their Oath to him, and causing them to take a new Oath, for preseruation of their Countrey, and obedience to the saide States. Vpon a bargaine made by the King of Spaine, to kill the Prince of Orange, the saide Prince was shot by one Iohn Iauvregui, a banquerout-Merchants Seruant, who was presently slaine, but the Prince escaped that attempt with life. Afterward, he was traiterously murdered by one Balthazar Gerard a high Bourguignon, at Delft in Holland: whereon, Prince Maurice (being his Sonne) succeeded his Father in the gouernment. Then followed the siege of Antuerpe, in which time, the States once more, re-commended their cause to the Q. of England, either to giue her the full Soueraignty of the Netherlands, or else to succor and releeue them with her forces, vppon good conditions offered. Her Maiesty graunted to send them assistance, but no soueraignty or protection of them, would she take vpon her: whereupon, certain cautionary townes and Skonces were deliuered vp to her, for repaiment of such sums of Mony, as should be disbursed by her, and Articles of couenant set down betweene them. Also, Robert Lord Dudley, Baron of Denbigh, and Earle of Leicester, was appointed by the Queene of England, to be her Gouernor generall, ouer the English powers in the Netherlands.

The States for themselues.

1582 The prince of Orange shot.

1584 The Prince of Orange murdered.

1585 The Earle of Leicester.

In

In the time of the Earle of Leiceſters gouernment for the Quæne, were ſundry woorthy ſeruices performed by the Earle of Eſſex, Sir Iohn Norris, the Lord Willoughby, Sir Phillip Sidney, Sir William Ruſſell, &c. beſide the ſubtile pretences of Sir William Stanley, Rowland Yorke, Patton, and others, who held faire weather with the Earle of Leiceſter, and had the gouernment of Zutphen Sconce, and the ſtrong Towne of Deuenter (to the great diſlike of the States) yet performed no ſuch matter, as the Earles hope was perſwaded of them. For, after the death of that matchleſſe Noble Gentleman Sir Phillip Sidney, he being ſhot before Zutphen, and thereof dying; the Earle of Leiceſter (being gone for England) both Deuenter and Zutphen Sconce were deliuered vp to the Spaniards, by baſe corruption of Money. And (not long after) the Prince of Parma beleagering Scluice; by compoſition it was alſo yeelded vp, after it hadde endured 17000. Cannon ſhot and more. Beſide, vpon ſome diſcontentment, betwæne the Earle of Leiceſter and the States; the Quæne called home the ſaid Earle into England, and the Lord Willoughby remayned there Generall of the Engliſh forces. The ſundry woorthy ſeruices, both by him, and the Engliſh performed, with the Spaniſh vndoubted hopes of Englands cõqueſt, in the dreadfull yeare of 1588. Prince Maurice his entrance into the Netherlands regiment, and the Duke of Parmaes wars in France; all theſe I paſſe ouer, referring ſuch as deſire farther ſa-

Sir Phillip Sidney ſlain 1587

Sluice.

The Lord willoughby

1588.

Prince Maurice.

tisfaction therein, to the large Hiſtory of the Netherlands.

1592 The Prince of Parma dying at Arras (after his retreate from Rouen) the ſecond of September 1592. Maurice of Naſſan, borne Prince of Orange, Marquelle of La Vere, and of Flaſhing, &c. was made great Captaine and Admirall Generall of the vnited Prouinces of the Low-countries, by the Eſtates: And Erneſtus, Arch-duke of Auſtria, was alſo made Lieutenant-Gouernour, and Captaine Generall for Phillip King of Spaine.

Erneſtus D. of Auſtria.

1594. Prince Maurice ſhoulde be murdered twice.

Prince Maurice proouing very ſucceſſefull in his warlike artemptes, a Renegate or Apoſtat Prieſt (in the habite of a Souldier) was corrupted (by the Arch-Duke Erneſtus) to murther the Prince Maurice at Breda; and vppon his owne confeſſion thereof, hee was executed at the Haige. Afterward, vppon Prince Maurice his valiant ſurpriſall of Gronning, Erneſtus hadde dealt in like manner with a Souldier, named Peter du Four (who had ſometime ſerued in the company of the Guarde to Prince Maurice) to vndertake the murdering of him at Lillo: the which treaſon beeing confeſſed by the man himſelfe, he was executed in the Towne of Berghen vp-zoom. Here might much be ſaid of the honorable ſeruices of Sir Frances Vere, and others, but our purpoſed breuity is the onely imbarment; and the Netherlandes Hiſtory (at large) may thereof diſcharge me. The Arch-Duke Erneſtus dyed the twenty one day of Febzuary, 1595.

Sir Frances Vere.

1595.

Mon-

Mondragons forces defeated by Prince Maurice, and La Motte ſlaine before Dourlaus; the Eſtates (vnder the King of Spaine) gladly ſought peace with the vnited Prouinces, and ſent Articles in writing to Prince Maurice, for conſideration of their motion. This was not done but, vppon good aduiſe in the King of Spaine, perceyuing the Netherlandes, and Prince Maurice his great fortunes againſt him, adding euery daie, (more and more) to his vtter abolition thence. Hereupon, Albertus the Cardinall, brother to deceaſed Erneſtus, Arch-Duke of Auſtria, was ſent (by the King) to gouerne there for him; many Eaſterlings and Netherland ſhips, which had bin ſtaied in Spain to meet the Indian fleete, were ſuddenly releaſed; and Phillip of Naſſau (who is now Prince of Orange and Earle of Buren, that had long time beene reſtrained of his liberty in Spain) for better countenancing ỹ intended buſineſſe, he likewiſe was ſent along with the Cardinall Albertus.

Albertus Arch duke of Auſtria.

1596

The Cardinall being made Gouernour for the King of Spaine, tooke Callice from the French King, as his firſt peece of ſeruice, but for loſſe thereof, he recouered La-fere from the Spaniards. Whereuppon, the Cardinall beſiedged Hulſt in Flanders, which yeilded in the end: but it was a deare purchaſe to the Cardinall, for this ſiedge, (continuing ſome two months) coſt him the liues of aboue three ſcore valiant Captaines, beſides other Commanders, Collonels, and men of mark, and about fiue thouſand well approued ſouldiers.

Hulſt beſiedged.

Then did the king of Spaine dispense with himselfe for payment of his debtes, which made many Merchants in Spaine, Italy, Antwerp, Amsterdam, and Middlebourg, to become Banquerouts. A league was made betweene the French king, the Queene of England, and the States, against the Spaniardes, and then did Prince Maurice goe to Tournhoult, where the Earle of Varax was slaine. Amiens also was surprised by the Spaniardes; but soone besiedged and recouered by the French king, albeit the Cardinall offered succour, which proued in vaine. Prince Maurice besiedged and toke the Townes of Alpen, Meurs, Rhinberg, Groll, Breforr, Enscheyde, Oldenzeel, Otmarsom, Goor, and Lingen, all which seruices he performed in three monthes.

1597

Tournhoult

1598

Then hapned another treacherous plot, against the life of Prince Maurice, by perswasion of the Iesuites at Doway, and vnder-taken by Peter Panne, a Cooper by Trade, but beeing then a Broaker or Banquerout Merchant; who hauing receiued the Sacrament, to performe the deede either with Knife, Ponyard, or Pistoll, the Prouinciall of the Iesuites made a long Sermon, to encourage him in the action, and assuring him of Paradice, if he performed it, vsed these wordes to him besides: Goe in peace, for thou shalt go like an Angell, in the guard of God. But the man (beeing terrifyed in conscience) discouered the whole Treason, without any compulsion, and was therefore executed at Leyden in Holland.

The Iesuits conspire the death of Prince Maurice.

The king of Spaine growing weake and sickly,

gaue

gaue his Daughter the Infanta, named Iſabella Clara Eugenia, in marriage to the Arch-duke & Cardinall Albertus, with tranſaction of the Netherlands and Bourgogne: whereupon hee left his Cardinals habit, & went to fetch the Infanta. Soone after died the King of Spaine, on the 13. day of September, Anno 1598. being ſeuenty one yeares old, and foure months.

The death of K. Phillip

1599

The Arch-Duke and the Infanta beeing come into the Netherlandes, had their inſtalment at Bruſſels, Louaine, Antwerp, &c. The Emperour ſent to the States, concerning a peace, but theyr reſolution held to make warre in Flanders. Then happened the ſiedge and memorable battaile of Nieuport, where Prince Maurice tooke dyuers Fortes from the Spanyards, and ouer-threw the Arch-dukes Army, he being there in perſon: but gladly fled away, leauing his Armes, Horſe of Combate, all his Houſhold, Artillerie, and baggage behind him, and loſt 6000. men, beſide 800. taken Priſoners, among whom was Don Franceſco de Mendoza, Admirall of Arragon, Marqueſſe of Guadaleſte, and Lieutenant Generall of the Arch-Dukes Army, who was led to Ooſtend; Don Baptiſta de Villa noua, led to Horne in Holland; Don Alonzo Ricquell, to Delft, Don Gonzalo Hernandes de Spinola, to Vtrecht; Don Pedro de Montenegro, to ỳ Hague; Don Pedro de Valaſco, to Berghen, with Don Franciſco de Torres, & Don Antonio de Mendoza, & Don Pedro de Leuſina, to Enchuiſē: beſides the Arch-dukes three Pages, Count Carlo Rezi,

1600

The battaile of Nieuport

Don Diego de Guzman, and Mortier; Don Pedro de Monte-maior, his chiefe taster; likewise his Phisition, Barber, Harbinger, Rider, Cook, Porter, the Groms of his Chamber; most of the Archers and Halberdiers of his Guard, and (in a manner) all his houshold; with three Priestes or Monkes; 40. Auncients, and 37. Pentioners, tearmed (by them) Anciant and Sergeants reformed. He lost also fiue pieces of Ordynance, 136. Ensignes of foot taken, and fiue Cornets of horse, comprehending the Mutiners Standerd, and the recouered lost Colours. Moreouer, on the Arch-Dukes side were slaine, the Earle of Saume, the Earle of La Fere, the Seneschall of Montelimar, the Baron of Pimereuil, Chassy Ottigny, Son to the President Richadot; Don Gaspar de Sapena, Colonel, who dyed at Dost-end, Don Diego de Torres, Don Gaspar de Loyazo, Don Gonzalo d'Espinola, Don Ioan de Pardo, Don Garcia de Toledo, Don Lopode Capeta, Don Alouzo Carcamo, Don Louis Faccardo Sebastian Velasco, Sebastian Doteloa, Christionall Verdugues, Mattheo d'Otteuille, Ioannettin de casa nueua, the Bay-Maister Alines, and many other neuer knowne.

Prince Maurice and the states losse.

Prince Maurice and the States, at the first encounter in the morning, and lastly in the battell, lost about 2000. men, among whom were Bernard, Couteler, and Hamelton, Captaines of horse, and some twenty Captaines of foote, but no man of Marke or speciall note. In this braue exploit at Neiuport, the vertue and valour of Sir

Frances

Frances Vere Generall, and Sir Horatio Vere, his Brother Colonell, will for euer bee remembred.

The occurrences in the following yeares, as the beſiedging of Daſt-ende; The enterpriſe on Fleſſigne; The practiſe to ſacke Antwarpe againe; Graue yeilded vp to Prince Maurice; Alſo his honourable offers to the Town of Sluice, and it beeing yeelded to him vppon compoſition, euen in the viewe of the Arch-Dukes Army: They require a larger field of diſcourſe, then by this breuity can be admitted. Proceed we then to ſpeake of the long continued ſiedge at Daſtend, which laſting three whole yeares, and eleauen weekes, was at laſt compounded withall, and on the twenty two day of September 1604. yeelded to the Arch-duke. 1601 1602. 1604 The long ſiedge at Oaſtend.

What numbers were ſlaine in this long continued ſiedge of Daſtende, can hardly be gathered, albeit, a note was found in a Commiſſaries Pocket (who hadde beene ſlaine the ſeauenth of Auguſt 1604. before Oaſtend) wherein were dyuers good obſeruations; eſpecially concerning the Arch-Dukes Campe, and what number (of each degree) dyed and were ſlaine therein, during this ſiedge, vntill the yeelding vppe thereof, (viz:) Maiſters of the Campe, ſeauen; Colonelles, fiftеene; Sergeant Maiors, twenty nine Captaines, 565. Lieutenants 1116. Enſignes, 322. Sergeants 1911. Corporals, 1160. Lanſpizadees, 600. Souldiers, 54663. Mariners, 611 Women and Children, 119. all amounting to 72124. perſons. The Arch-dukes loſſe at Oaſtend.

To continue the memory of this long siedge, as also the winning of Sluice, Counters (of Siluer and Copper) were made in the vnited Prouinces, bearing (on the one side) the figure of Oostend, & on the other, the Townes of Rhinberke, Graue, Sluice, Ardenbourg, with the Forts of Isendyke and Cadsant, with this inscription round about; *Plus triennio obsessa, hosti rudera, Patriæ quatuor ex me vrbes dedi.* Oost-end being more then 3. yeares besieaged, gaue the Enemy an heape of stones, and to her native Country four Towns. Another Counter, concerning Sluice, had these words on the one side, Traxit, duxit, dedit. Anno 1604. And with the Armes of Zeland on ỹ other side, were these words: *Beatus populus cuius ad-iutor Deus.* For the following yeares, from 1604 to 1608. I finde no especiall or memorable accy-dents; but an enterprise by prince Maurice, on the Riuer of Scheld & Antwerp, with the taking of the Castle of Wouwe, neere to Berghen Vp-zoome; Spinolas taking of Linghen, with an attempt on Berghen, and Groll, taken by compo-sition, &c. For a treaty of peace hapning betweene England and Spaine, the like also chanced to bee talkt on, concerning the Netherlands, and many meetings were made to bring it to effect. At length it was brought to passe by the labor and endeuer of a Frier (as was reported) who made many er-rands betwixt Spain and the Netherlands, vntil it was accomplished. Sinte when, nothing hath hapned of any consequence; but the taking in of the Towne of Guliche in Germany, where the prince Maurice behaued himself very honorably.

1605.
1606
1607
1608
1069
1610.

## Of the Kingdome of Ireland.

Voyding all nice and ſcrupulous curioſity, about the firſt name and Originall of Ireland, I purpoſe to follow theſe beſt receiued authors, as Giraldus Cambrenſis, Flatſbury, Henry of Marleborow, and others, that therein do giue the beſt direction. They ſay and affirme, that the Hiſpaniards the Originall offſpring of the Iriſh, becauſe Hiſpaine, in thoſe ancient daies was called Iberia, after the name of Iberius, the Sonne of Iuball, and in regard alſo, that the famous Riuer Iberus was then their habitation, did entitle this land Iberia, as Leyland, and ſome other Chroniclers Write, or Ibernia, with addition of the letter (n) to expreſſe a kinde of variation. From which Ibernia, it may eaſily be preſumed, that Iberland, or Iuerland receiued firſt ſound, and ſo Ireland, by contraction or corruption in common phraſe. It is ſaid likewiſe to be called Scotia, at the very ſame time, in reuerend reſpect of Scotach, or Scota, wife to Gathelus, an ancient Noble Captaine of thoſe Iberians, ſhe being Mother, others ſay Grand-mother, to Hiberus and Hermon, the Sons of Metellus, raigning then in Hiſpaine. Fiue brethren men of no meane merit and valour (beeing ſons to one Dela) all Woorthy Sea-men, and ſkilfull Pilots, rigging a fleete, arriued in Ireland, and perceiuing it to be but ſlenderly peopled, concluded

The Originall of the Iriſh.

*Leyland in Cyg. Cant.*

Scotach or Scota the wife of Gathelus.

ded (by casting lots, for seuerall shares) to diuide the Country amongst themselues. The foure elder brethren, who were named Gandius, Genandius, Sagandus or Gangandus, Rutheragus or Rutheranus, hauing cast the whole Iland into four partitions, and finding their yonger brother Slanius to stand quite exempted from any abyding, sucuaying more aduisedly their seueral portions: (which were thus squared, Lagenia, Leinster, lying East: Connatia, Connaght, west: Vltonia, Vlster, North: & Momonia Mouuster south, each made an abatement of his proportion, & amongst them laid out a fift part, named Media, Meeth, which afterward, from being the lesser share (by his manly carriage) proued to be the largest, & he obtained the whole monarchy of Ireland, appointing Meeth to serue for ỹ monarchs diet or table.

*An. mund. 2733 Cambr. l. Lib. 1. dict 3. rub. 5, 6.*

The first K. of Ireland.

It appeareth then, that Ireland was thus deuided into fiue seueral territories or kingdoms, and that the Spaniards, or Hispaniardes first peopled the same. There are also accounted 130. pettye kings of that Nation, from Hermon, that slewe his Brother Hiberus (of whose name the Irish receiued theirs) to Laogirius, the Son of Nealus Magnus, in whose daies Ireland was conuerted to the Christian faith, by that holy man S. Patrik. About which time cam Roderick a Scithian Prince, with no great number of men, who were the Picts, & he their king, and there they sought to make their abiding: but the Irish perswaded thẽ thence, and then they betoke themselues to the North part of Brittaine, where both Rodericke and

Roderick K. of the Picts.

and the more number of his followers, were ſlain by Marius King of Brittaine. In no long while after, one Turgeſius, a notable Pyrat of the Norweigians, came thether likewiſe, with a ſtrong power, and made himſelfe King or Conquerour of Ireland, vſing much tirrany, and deflouring al the other Kings daughters: till by the pollicie of Omalaghlilen, King of Meth, whoſe daughter alſo the tyrant would needs raviſh, a company of young youths were diſguiſed like faire Nimphs, with ſhorte ſharpe Skeines hidden vnder theyr Garments, and the faire young Ladye her ſelfe, Daughter to Omalaghlilen, was theyr chiefe conducter to the laſciuious Tyrants bed Chamber. Turgeſius, his onely companions at that inſtant, were a few diſſolute young men, affected like himſelfe, whom the King had made acquainted with this amorous purchaſe, promiſing, that (his luſt being ſatiſfied) where he liked to make election, the reſt ſhould remaine at their free diſpoſition. No ſooner were theſe diſguiſed yong Gallantes entered the Chamber, and the king preparing him-ſelfe to embrace the Kinge of Meths Daughter, but, drawing foorthe theyr Skeynes, they firſt cooled the Tyrants heate in his owne bloude, and afterwarde his Minions were in like ſort ſerued. The fame of this valiant acte being quickely flowne thorough Ireland, and the Princes riſing in Armes on ſo apte an aduantage, they reſolued to free themſelues from ſuch ſeruility: as indeede they did, and made Omalaghlilen their chiefe King or coun-

Turgeſius the Tyrant.

The iuſt puniſhment of a laſciuious Tyrant.

commander, in honor of this their great deliuerance.

*Saxo Grammat. Albert. Crantz.*

Concerning diuers other inuasions of Ireland afterwarde, by the Danes, Norwegians, Swedens, Normans, &c. reported by Saxo Grammaticus, Albert Crantzius, and others: they are matters no way incident to our present purpose, but referred to our generall determination, more capeable of such plenty of discourse. Therefore, passing ouer those former yeares of trouble and disturbance, let vs come to Sylvester Giraldus Cambrensis, his history of the conquest of Ireland, when Dermon Mac Morogh, K. of Leynster, fled out of Ireland, to craue succor of Henrie the second, King of England, who was then in Aquitaine, busied with very serious affayres, wherein I will be so briefe as I may.

*Sylvest. Girald. Cambrensis.*

*Of Dermon Mac Morogh.*

This Dermon Mac Morough, King of Leinster, hauing bin (from his youth and entrance into the Kingdome) tirranous ouer his Nobilitie, and full of oppression to all the Gentrie, became highly hated and despised, and so much the rather for rauishing the wife to Ororike prince of Meth, in the absence of her husband. Ororike not brooking such an indignity, procured Rotherick (K. of Connagh, and Monarch of all Ireland ouer the other Kings) to giue him aid, with al the forces that either of them could make. Dermon vnderstanding this main opposition, fled into Aquitaine, where he found Henry the second, King of England, and such was his distressefull tale to him, with Oath of allegeance sworne vnto him,

to

to be his true vaſſaile and ſubiect: that king Henry made kind acceptance of him, and took him into his protection, graunting him his Letters patents into England, to vſe the aide and meanes of his Subiects, for recouery of his right in Ireland. Beeing returned from King Henry into England, he came to Briſtow, where his letters Patents were many times publickely read, and liberall wadges and offers made, to ſuch as in this extreamity would giue him aſſiſtance. All proued in vaine, till Richard, ſonne to Gilbert, Earle of Chepſtone (being promiſed Dermons Daughter & heire in marriage, with inheritance and ſucceſſion in his Kingdome) was bounde to viſit him with aide in Ireland, at the following Spring: Robert Fitz-Stephens, and Maurice Fitz-gerald, had promiſe alſo of the Towne of Wexford, being the chiefeſt Towne in Leinſter, and fiue Cantreds of land to them and theirs for euer, to come likewiſe (with their beſt help) at the Spring enſuing. Upon hope of this aſſiſtaunce, Dermon ventured home among his enimies, but in very priuate manner for his owne ſafety. At time appointed, Robert Fitz-Stephens accompanied with Maurice Fitz-gerald and with thirtie ſeruiceable Gentlemen, all of his kinred, beſide three hundred bold Archers, the beſt choſen, and onely men of Wales, ſailed in three ſundry barks, and landed in the Calends of May, at the Banne in Ireland. Whereby, an old Prophesy of Merlins was ſaid to be fulfilled, (viz.) A Knight bypartes, ſhould enter firſt with force in Armes,

Dermon ſweareth allegiance to K Henry.

Gilbert Earl of Chepſone.

Robert Fitz Stephens, & Maurice Fitz-gerard,

Fitzſtephens & his men paſſe into Ireland.

A propheſie of Merlin

and

and breake the bounds of Ireland. Their landing there, proued so successful to Derman, that hee kept his word with Fitz-stephens & Fitz-gerald, for the town of Wexford, & territories thereto appertaining with the cantreds of land: he sent also for Richard Strongbow, Earle of Pembroke, son to Earle Gilbert of Chepstone, who, vpon Dermons letters, and intelligence of Fitz-Stephens great fortunes (with his followers) there desiring ernestly to make one in so worthy an imploiment made sute to k. Henry for his passage thither. But whither he obtained leaue or no, he being of very noble parentage, greater in spirit, then possessions, & aiming at the fairest fortunes: dreadles of the kings displeasure, with such power as hee coulde prouide, he landed at Waterford in September.

Richard Strongbow Earle of Chepstone and Pembroke.

Here it shall not differ much from our purpose, to report those Noble mens names, who before any other of the English assisted this woorthy Earle Richard Strongbow for Dermon, in subduing Ireland to the Crowne of England, according as they are recorded in the chancery of Ireland, & as the learned M. Camden hath also obserued them.

Robert Fitz-Stephens.
Haruey de Mont-marish.
Maurice Prendergest.
Robert Barr.
Meiler Meilerine.
Maurice Fitz-Girald.
Redmund, Nephew of Fitz-Stephens.
William Ferrand.
Miles de Cogan.
Gualter de Ridensford.
Gualter, & Alexander, sons of Maurice Fitz-Girald.
William Notte.
Robert Fitz-Bernard.
Hugh de Lacie.
William Fitz-Adelm.
VVilliam Marcarell.

Hum-

Humfrey Bohun.
Hugh de Gundeuill.
Phillip de Haſting.
Hugh Titell.
Dauid VValſh.
Robert Poer.
Osbert de Hetloter.
william de Bendenges.
Adam de Geruez.
Griffin Fitz-Stephens Nephew.
Raulfe Fitz-Stephens.
VValter de Barry.
Phillip VValſh.
Adam de Hereford.
Iohn Curcy.
Hugh Contilon.
Redmund Cauanmore.
Redmund Fitz-Hugh.
Miles of S. Dauids.
VVith diuers other beſide.

Then alſo was it generally noiſed, that Celidons propheſie was fulfilled, (viz) A little Fire-brand ſhal go before a great fire, and as the ſparks kindle the leſſer wood, ſo ſhal the ſame ſet the great wood on fire. There was another propheſy alſo, of Merlins, viz. A great fore-runner of a greater follower, ſhall come, & he ſhall tread down the heads of Deſmond & Leinſter, & the waies (before opened and made ready) hee ſhall inlarge. Dublin, Leinſter, & diuers other places were immediatly won, & Earle Richard married to Eua, Dermons daughter. Celidons propheſye. Merlins Propheſie.

By which marriage he enioyed but one daughter onely, who enriched VVilliam Mareſchall with the Earledome of Pembrokes Title, faire Lands in Ireland, fiue Sonnes, all dying childleſſe, and as many daughters, who honored their huſbands (viz. Hugh Bigod, Earle of Norfolk, Guarin Montchenſey, Gilbert Earle of Glocester, VVilliam Ferrars Earle of Derbie, and william Breoſe, with children, goodly honours, and rich poſſeſſions. Vpon

King Henry offended with Earle Strongbow

Upon the newes in England, of Earl Strongbow and his followers daily preuailing in Ireland, King Henry grew offended with him, and made a Proclamation against him, that none of his Subiectes shoulde further assist Dermon or him. But, vppon the Earles priuate passage into England, and conference with the King at Newham, neere to Gloeester, all displeasure was forgotten, and the King (hauing then an Armie in readines) should passe forthwith into Ireland, where all should be deliuered vp into the Kinges possession. King Henry landed at Waterford, on Saint Lukes day, in the seauenth yeare of hys raigne, the 41. of his age, and of our Lord, 1172. Dermon Mac Morogh beeing deade some short while before. The King beeing Royally welcommed into Ireland, Dermon or Mac Carti, Prince of Corke, Donald O Bren, Prince of Limerick, Donold O Carel, Prince of Ossorie, and Macleighlin O Felin, Prince of the Decies or Ophalie, O Rorke, K. of Meth, & Oneale, King of Vlster, with Rotherick O Conor Dun, the Brown Monarch of Ireland, came al & submitted themselues to k. Henry, swearing fealty & to be tributaries to him. Al matters being ordered in Ireland to the Kings good lyking, he departed thence to England, hauing made Earle Strong-bow Earle of Pembroke, the first Lorde Gouernor of Ireland, ioyning Reimond le Grace in Commission with him, in the yeare, 1174.

The princes of Ireland sweare fealty to King Henry.

The

¶ The names of the Gouernors, Lieutenants, Lord Iuſtices, and Deputies of Ireland, ſince the conqueſt thereof, by King Henry the ſecond.

The yeares of our Lord

Richard Strongbow, Earle of Pembroke, Gouernor, Reimond le Grace being ioyned (for his more eaſe) in commiſſion with him. 1174

Reimond le Grace, Lieutenant by himſelfe. 1177

William Fitz Adelme, Lieutenant, hauing Iohn de Curcy, Robert Fitzſtephans, and Miles Cogan ioyned in Commiſſion with him.

Hugh Lacie, Lieutenant.

Iohn Lacy, Conſtable of Cheſter. } Gouer-
and Richard de Peche. } nours. 1182

Hugh Lacy, againe Lieutenant.

Hugh Lacy the younger, Lord Iuſtice.

Henry Loandoris, Arch-biſhop of Dublin, Lord Iuſtice. 1207

Maurice Fitzgirald, Lord Iuſtice. 1228.

Iohn Fitzgeffery, Knight, Lord Iuſtice. 1253

Alain de la Zouch, Lord Iuſtice.

Stephen de Long Eſpe, Lord Iuſtice. 1258

William Deane, Lord Iuſtice.

Sir Richard Rochell, or Capell, Lord Iuſtice. 1261.

Dauid Barry, Lord Iuſtice. 1267

Robert Vfford, Lord Iuſtice. 1268

Richard de Exceſter, Lord Iuſtice. 1269

Iames Lord Audley, Lord Iuſtice. 1270

Maurice Fitzmaurice, Lord Iuſtice. 1272

Walter, Lord Genuille, Lord Iuſtice.

Robert Vfford, againe lord Iustice.

1281 Fulborne, Byshopp of Waterford, Lorde Iustice.

Iohn Stamford, Arch-Bishop of Dublin, Lorde Iustice.

William Vescie, Lord Iustice.

1295 VVilliam Dodingsels, lord Iustice.

Thomas Fitz-Maurice, Lord Iustice.

1298 Iohn Wogan, lord Iustice.

1314 Theobald Verdon, lord Iustice.

1315 Edmund Butler, lord Iustice.

1317. Roger, Lord Mortimer, Lord Iustice.

Alexander Bignor, Arch-Bishoppe of Dubline, Lord Iustice.

1319 Roger, lord Mortimer, the second time lord Iustice.

1320 Thomas Fitz-Iohn, Earle of Kildare, lorde Iustice.

1321 Iohn Birmingham, Earle of Louth, lorde Iustice.

1323 Iohn, Lord Darcy, Lord Iustice.

1327 Roger Outlaw, Prior of Kilmainan, lorde Iustice.

Anthony, lord Lucy, lord Iustice.

1332 Iohn, lord Darcy, second time lord Iustice.

Iohn, lord Charleton, lord Iustice.

1338 Thomas, Bishop of Hereford, lord Iustice.

1339 Iohn, Lord Darcy, ordayned lord Iustice by Patent, during his life, by King Edward the third.

Raphe Vfford, lord Iustice.

1346. Robert Darcy, lord Iustice.

Iohn

Iohn Fitz-Maurice, lord Iuſtice.

VValter, lord Birmingham, Lorde Iuſtice, his Deputies were Iohn Archer, Priour of Kilmainan; and Baron Carew, with Sir Tho. Rokesby.

Maurice Fitz-Thomas, Earle of Deſmond, had the Office of Lord Iuſtice, for tearme of his life, by the graunt of King Edward the third.

Thomas Rokesby, Knight, lord Iuſtice. 1355

Almericke de S. Amand. } appointed Lord Iuſtices by turnes. 1357

Iohn Butler, Earle of Ormund. } appointed Lord Iuſtices by turnes.

Maurice Fitz-Henry, Earle of Kildare. } appointed Lord Iuſtices by turnes.

Lionell, Duke of Clarence, Lord Iuſtice. 1361

Gerald Fitz-Maurice, Earle of Deſmond, lorde Iuſtice. 1367

VVilliam, lord Windſor, the firſt Lieutenant in Ireland. 1369

Roger Aſhton, lord Iuſtice. 1372

Roger Mortimer. } Iuſtices and Lieutenaunts especially recorded, in the dayes of King Richard the ſecond. 1381

Phillip Courtney. } Iuſtices and Lieutenaunts especially recorded, in the dayes of King Richard the ſecond.

Iames Earl of Ormund. } Iuſtices and Lieutenaunts especially recorded, in the dayes of King Richard the ſecond.

Robert Vere, Earle of Oxford, Marquelle of Dublin, created Duke of Ireland.

Roger Mortimer, Earle of March, Lieutenant. 1394

Roger Mortimer, Earle of March and Vlſter, lieutenant.

Roger Grey, lord Iuſtice.

Iohn Stanley, Knight, lord lieutenant.

Thomas of Lancaſter, brother to king Henry the fourth, 1401.

fourth, lord Lieutenant; whose Deputies at sundry times, were Alexander, Bishop of Meth, Stephen Scrope, knight, & the Prior of Kilmainan.

1403 Iames Butler, Earle of Ormond, Lord Justice.

Gerald, Earle of Kildare, Lord Justice.

1407 Iames Butler, Earle of Ormond, Son to the foresaid Iames, Lord Justice.

1413 Iohn Stanley, againe Lord Lieutenant.

Thomas Cranley, Arch-Bishop of Dublin, Lord Justice.

1414 Iohn, Lord Talbot of Shefield, Lieutenant.

1420. Iames Butler, Earle of Ormond, the second time Lieutenant.

Edmund, Earle of March, Iames, Earl of Ormond, his Deputy.
Iohn Sutton, Lord Dudly, Sir Thomas Strange, his Deputy.
Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir Christopher Plunket his Deputy.
Lion, Lorde Welles, Deputy to the Earle of Ormond.
Iames, Earle of Ormond, by himselfe.
Iohn, Earl of Shrewsbury, the Archbishop of Dublin (in his absence) Lord Justice.

} Lieutenants to K. Henrie the first.

Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, Father to king Edw: the fourth, had the Office of Lieutenant, by letters patents from king Henry the first, for tenne years. His Deputies (at sundry times) were the Baron of Deluin; Richard Fits-Eustace, Knight; Iames Earle of Ormond;

mond; and Thomas Fitzmoris, Earl of Kildare.

Thomas Fitzmoris, Earle of Kildare, Lord Juſtice in the daies of King Edward the fourth, vntill the third yeare of his raigne. After whom, George Duke of Clarence, brother to the King, had the office of Lieutenant during his life, and made his Deputies (at ſundry times) theſe Men following;

Thomas, Earle of Deſmond. } Deputies
Iohn Tiptoft, Earle of Worceſter. } to the duke
Thomas, Earle of Kildare. } of Cla- 1470
Henry, Lord Gray of Ruthine. } rence.

Sir Rowland Euſtace, Lord Deputy.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, younger ſon to King Edward the fourth, Lieutenant.

Edward, Son to K. Richard the 3. Lieutenant, his Deputy was Gerald, Earle of Kildare.

Iaſper, Duke of Bedford, & Earl of Pembroke, Lieutenant: his Deputy was Walter, Archbiſhop of Dublin.

Edward Poynings, Knight, Lord Deputy. 1494

Henry, Duke of Yorke, afterward King, by the name of Henry the eight, Lieutenant; his Deputy was Gerald, Earle of Kildare. 1501

Gerald Fitz-gerald, Earl of Kildare, L. Deputy.

Thomas Howard, Earle of Surry, afterwarde, Duke of Norffolke, Lieutenant. 1520

Piers Butler, Earle of Oſſorie, Lord Deputy. 1523

Geralde Fitzgeralde, Earle of Kildare, againe Lord Deputy.

The Baron of Dublin, Lord Deputy.

Piers Butler, Earle of Oſſorie, again L. Deputy. 1529

William Skeffington, knight, Lord Deputy.
Gerald Fitzgerald, Earle of Kildare, ỹ third time Lord Deputy.
William Skeffington, againe Lord Deputy.
1534. Leonard, Lord Gray, Lord Deputy.
1540 Sir William Brereton, knight, Lord Iustice.
1541 Sir Anthony Sentleger, knight, Lord Deputy.

¶ The names of all the Lordes, Deputies, and Iustices in Ireland, since the death of King Henry the eight, who died in Ianuary 1546.

1546. SIr Anthony Sentleger, knight, by Patent, dated 24. Martij, Anno primo Edw. 6.
1546 Sir Edward Bellingham, Lord Deputy, 22. Aprilis An. eodem.
1547
1548. Sir Francis Brian Lord Iustice.
1549 Sir VVilliam Brabeston, Lord Iustice.
1550 Sir Anthony Seutleger, the third time Lord deputy, 4. August.
1551 Sir Iames Croftes, Lord Deputie, twenty nine Aprilis.
1553 Sir Anthony Sentleger, the fourth time Lorde Deputy, September 1. Anno primo Reg. Marie.
1555 Thomas, Lord Fitzwalter, Lorde Deputie 27. Aprilis.
1556 Sir Henry Sidney. } Lordes Iustices.
Doctor Coren, or Corwen. }

Sir

Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Juſtice alone, eighteen January. 1556.

Thomas Earle of Suſſex, Lord Lieutenant, 19. Martij. 1557

Sir William Fitz-Williams, Lord Juſtice. 1558

Thomas, Earle of Suſſex, Lord Deputy, 6. Maij Anno primo R. Elizab. 1559

Sir Nicholas Arnold, Lord Juſtice. 1564

Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Deputie the third time. 1565

Doctor Weſton, Lord Chancellour.

Sir William Fitzwilliams. 1567

Sir Henry Sidney, Lorde Deputy the fourth time. 1568.

Sir William Fitz-williams, Lord Juſtice. 1570.

Sir William Fitzwilliams, Lorde Deputy, 11. Decemb. Anno. 14. Elizab. 1571

Sir Henry Sidney, Lorde Deputy the fift time, Auguſt 3. 1573

Sir William Drury, Lord Juſtice, 14. Septem. by patent, 18. May. 1579.

Sir William Pelham, lord Juſtice. 1580.

The Lord Arthur Gray. 1580.

Adam Arch-Byſhoppe of Dublin. } Lordes Juſtices. 1582

Sir Henry Wallop. }

Sir Iohn Perot, Lord Deputy. 1584.

Sir William Fitz-Williams, Lord Deputy. 1588

Sir William Ruſſell, Lord Deputy. 1595

Thomas, Lord Burrough, lord Deputy. 1597

Robert, Earle of Eſſex, Lord Lieutenant. 1599

Charles Blunt, Baron Montioy, Lord Deputie. 1600

Sir George Carew, Lord Deputy. 1602.

1604. Sir Arthur Chicheſter, Lord Deputy, who yet to this day continueth in that honourable office.

## ¶ Of the Kingdome of Scotland.

According to the ancient Hiſtoriographers of Scotland in deſcription of their Nations firſt off-ſpring and originall (after Brutes firſt deuiſion of Brittaine to his Sonnes) they make relation of a Noble man among the Grecians, that was named Gathelus, the ſonne of Cecrops (in the iudgement of ſome) who builded Athens: but, according to the conceite of others, the Sonne of Argus Nealus, fourth King of the Argines. This Gathelus, being bamſhed by his Father, for ſome matter of diſobedience, departed thence into Ægypt, in the thirty three yeare of Pharao Orus, then King of that Countrey, and there carried himſelfe with ſuch valiant and extraordinary ſucceſſe, againſt the Countries Enemies, (in the company of Moſes, Generall vnder the King himſelfe) that Pharao beſtowed his faire Daughter (named Scota) on him in mariage, hauing alſo then giuen him and his followers, the Citty Thebes (Ægyptiaca) reported to be taken from the Iſraelites. Vpon iuſt occaſion, Gathelus (after his Fathers in Lawes decreaſe) leauing Egypt, being prouided of Shippes and other apt neceſſaries, tooke his Wife, Chil-

Gathelus a noble Grecian.

*An. Mund. 2416.*

*Ioſeph. Lib. 2 Cap. 7.*

dren,

dzen, and a great multitude both of Greeks and Ethyopians, and ſetting fozth of Nilus, determined to ſæke his foztune in other Countries. This was in the year of the wozlds creation, 2453. and after his abiding in Egypt, aboue 39. years: what accidents befell him in this voyage, is nædeleſſe to repozt, his firſt arriuall was on the Coaſtes of Numidia in Affrick, now named Barbary: but being not able to ſettle there, he came into a part of Spaine, long after termed Luſitania. It is ſaid that the place of his landing there, was called Port-Gathele, after the name of Gathelus, which afterward became (cozruptly) to bee called Portgale, oz Portingale, the certainty whereof I reſerre to better iudgements. The people there inhabiting, gaue both him and his, at the firſt, a bold repulſe, but in the end hee prenailed victoriouſly, and after further friendly conference with the Spaniards, he began to builde a Citty named Brachara, on the bankes of the Riuer Mundus, and ſo at the firſt did hee name the Citty it ſelfe. Gathelus by the Spaniards further perſwaſions & promiſe of aſſiſtance to their vttermoſt, whatſoeuer diſaſters ſhould betide him and his: remoued to the Nozthſide of Spaine, on the Cantabrian Sea coaſts, now called Galitia, where he builded likewiſe another Cittie, named Brigantia, afterwarde called Nouium, and nowe Compoſtella.

Gathelus his departure out of Egypt.

He landed in Portingale.

The Citty Brachara builded.

Hære did Gathelus bear the Title of king, and gaue lawes to his people, commanding that they ſhould all be called Scottiſh-men, to honour the name

Campoſtella builded.

name of his deare beloued wife Scota, as hee had alwayes so tearmed them, in the time of his trauailes. In time, they grew to be so great a Nation, that the Spaniards warring with them for their owne safety, sustained the worst: & though victory remained to the Scots, yet such good Orders were agréed on, that both Scots and Spaniards should obserue their own lawes, without inuasion offered on either side. Then did Gathelus liue in peace with his neighbors, sitting daily on his Marble stone in Brigantia, administring Lawes and Justice to his people: which stone was fashioned like a seat or chaire, hauing such a fate thereto belonging (as is said) that whersoeuer that stone should be found, there shoulde the Scottishmen raigne and hold dominion. Whereof it ensued, that there first in Spain, afterward in Ireland, and nert in Scotland, the Kings ruling ouer the Scottishmen, receiued the Crowne sitting vppon that stone, vntill the time of Robert the first, King of Scotland. On the stone was this inscription engrauen.

The Scots foyleth the spaniards.

Gathelus his Marble stone.

The inscription on the stone of Gathelus.

*Ni fallat fatum, Scoti quocunque locatum*
*Inuenient lapidem, regnare tenentur ibidem.*

Englished thus:

Except olde Sawes doo faile,
and Wizards wits be blinde:
The Scots in place must raigne,
where they this Stone shal finde.

Gathelus his people doo greatly abound.

This quiet life of Gathelus, did so daily encrease the abundance of his people, that the bounds of his

his dominion was not able to containe them, and he beeing religious in couenant with the Spaniards, auoiding all meanes of breach of the peace: hauing intelligence of an Iſland lying North ouer against Spaine, and wherein was but fewe inhabitantes: made readie his ſhipping, leuyed an Armie of his ſubiectes, and vnder conduct of his two ſonnes, named Hiberus and Himecus, or Hermion (which hee had by his Quæne Scota) conueyed them ouer into that Iſland, which afterwarde was named Hibernia, after the name of Hiberus. The Hiſtory recordeth, that the Scottiſhmen offered no violence to the inhabitants, but fought all meanes to win them by gentleneſſe, which in the end was eaſilie compaſſed, and all thinges appointed in decent order: which made Hiber leaue his Brother to gouerne there in Hilberland or Ireland, and return backe to Spaine. There he found his Father Gathelus to be dead, and hee (with the peoples ioyfull conſent) was admitted to ſucceed him as his ſon: but in regard of his admirable courage, & not ſatiſfied with thoſe bounds that pleaſed his father; he made conqueſt of other Citties & Towns neare about him, ſo that they were inforced to ſue vnto him for peace, and agreed to ſuch conditions, that a league concluded amity, and mariage contracts betwæn both Scots and Spaniards, cauſing them to become as one people, continuing their ſucceſſion of Kings (after Hibers death) in his poſterity, amongſt which were Metellus, Hermoneus, Ptolomeus, Hiberius, and Simon Brechus.

Gathelus his two ſonnes come into Ireland.

The death of Gathelus and valor of his ſon *Hi*berus.

Scottes and Spaniardes one nation.

Paſſing

Passing ouer the contentions in Ireland, vnder the rule of the fore-named Himecus, the three sonnes of Metellus (viz) Hermoneus, Ptolomeus and Hiberius, being sent thither in defence of the iniuried Scots; let vs speake of this Simon Brechus, lineally descended of the Scottish blood, who was the first King that raigned ouer the Scots in Ireland, he brought with him thither ỹ fatal Marble stone, and was thereon crowned, in signe of his full possession of that kingdome, & in the yeare from the worlds creation, 3270. after the floud, 1616. 55. from the building of Rome, after Brutes entrance into Brittaine, 870. and before our Sauiours incarnation, 697. He gouerned his subiects with great Iustice fortie yeares, after whom succeeded Fandusus, from whom issued Ethion, that begate Glaucus, whose sonne (named Nottasilus) was the father of Rothsay, all which raigned successiuely ouer the Scots in Ireland.

Simon Brechus in Ireland, first K. ouer the Scots.

Fandusus & his issue.

Rothsay, to auoide the super-abounding encrease of the Scottish Nation in Ireland, transported them (by diuers numbers) into the Iles anciently called Ebonides, afterward Hebrides, but now (by the Scots) the Westerne Iles, lying on the West halfe of Scotland, and named the Ile he first possessed them of, the ile of Rothsay, after his owne name: this was 133. yeares after Simon Brechus was crowned King. Nor may we forget, ỹ they also named those Islandes (and an especiall part thereof) by the name of Argathelia, in memory of their first guide & Prince Gathelus,

Rothsay transporteth his Scots into the western Iles.

Gathelus, and as yet to this day it is called Arguile, wherein alſo, as all ouer the mayne and firme land, called then Albion, and they Albion-Scots, they planted themſelues, albeit it was a waſt and very deſert dwelling. Argathelia in remembraunce of Gathelus.

Heere could I enter into a neceſſary declaration, concerning the comming of the Pictes, into thoſe partes of Albion, what people they were, their combuſtions with the Brittains and Scots, and rule of their Kings, till their abſolute deſtruction, according to an ancient Prophecie: That the Scots ſhould in the end deſtroy all the Pictiſh progeny: But becauſe I haue briefely ſpoken of them, and hauing referred their further relation to our generall Hiſtory, we will now goe on with our matter of the Albion Scots. In the troubles of Ireland, among the Scots there inhabiting, one Ferguhardus, a very worthy and noble Prince, raigned there, who ſent an armie to aſſiſt the Brittiſh and Albion Scots, vppon their requeſt of aide, vnder the conduct of his ſon Ferguſius, who was a young gallant Prince, yet an expert Warrior, and toke with him the Marble ſtone, becauſe he went to a dangerous war, and hoped withall, that the iſſue of his paines ſhould be the attaining of a kingdome: As indeed, vpon an aſſembly and parlement held at Arguile, and his high merit to exceed all others whatſoeuer, he was elected and ſacred in that ſupreame office, in the yeare after the worlds creation, 3640. before our bleſſed Sauiours incarnation, 327. after the building of Rome 420. and after Brutes entrance The Pictes come into Albion. Ferguhardus in Ireland. Ferguſius the firſt king of Scotland

in-

into Britaine, 790. This Fergusius, after he had raigned royally the space of 25. yeares, saying into Ireland, to quiet a discontentment amongst the Nobility, was driuen vpon a Rocke, where he perished by drowning, and that Rocke hath euer since, euen to this day, bin called Rock-Fergusse, otherwise Knock-Fergusse.

Feritharis the second k. of Scotland.

After the much lamented death of Fergusius, because his sonnes were ouer young, to vndergo the waighty charge of gouernment, his Brother Feritharis was crowned King, being enthroned in his Kingly Ornaments, with all solemnitie: his two edged sworde, his scepter Royall, and his Crowne of Golde, made in forme of a Rampire, for preseruation of his Countries libertie: which manner of inuesting continued (without any alteration) till the dayes of Achaius King of Scotland, who confirming a perpetuall league with Charlemaigne, Emperor and K. of France, to last for euer betweene Scots and French, added to the Crowne foure Floure de Lices, with four Crosslets, deuided in sunder with equal spaces, rising somewhat higher then the Floure de Lices, that thereby, the obseruing of Christian Religion, and sincere faith (maintained by the Scottish Nation) might appeare the more apparant to al that behelde it. After Feritharis (who raigned worthy 15. yeares) not Ferlegus, the eldest sonne of Fergusius succæded, but Mainus the younger sonne, being then aged 24. yeares: and after him his son Doruadille, the following succession we will thus briefely relate.

Howe the first kinges of Scottes succeded each other.

Doruadill

Doruadil raigned 28. yeares.
Nothatus, Brother to Doruadil, raygned two yeares.
Reuther, ſon to Doruadill, 26. yeares.
Reutha, the Vnckles ſon to Reuther, ſeuenténe yeares, and then entering into a priuate life, he reſigned the Crowne to Thereus.
Thereus, the ſonne of Reuther, who raigned 12. yeares.
Conanus, Lord of Galloway, who after the deceaſe of Thereus in Brittaine, yeelded the gouernment to Ioſina, Brother to Thereus, and raigned 24. yeares.
Finnanus, ſonne to Ioſina, thirty yeares.
Durſtus, ſonne to Finnanus, nine yeares.
Ewin, Vnckles ſonne to Durſtus, xir. yeares.
Gillus, baſe ſonne to Ewin, who being erpulſed, Ewin, ſecond of that name, was crowned K. and raigning xir. yeares, reſigned his ſtate to Ederus.
Ederus, the ſonne of Dothan, 38. yeares.
Ewin the third, ſon to Ederus, 7. yeares.
Metellanus, ſonne to Carren, the Brother of Ederus, in the 12. yeare of whoſe raigne, our Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt was borne of the bleſſed Virgin Mary in Bethlem, which was 324 yeares, after the eſtabliſhing of the Scottiſh kingdome by Ferguſius. This Metellanus died in the 28. yeare of his raigne. The birth of our Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt.
Caratake, ſon to Cadallan, and Nephew to Metellanus, raigned xri. yeares. 54
Corbreid, yongſt brother to Caratake, 34. yeares. 58

Dardan

71 Dardan, ſur-named the Great, for his huge ſtature foure yeares.

75 Corbreid Gald, eldeſt ſonne of King Corbreid, 35. yeares. This was a very worthy and famous King, and the Countrey where hee laſt fought with the Romaines, in memory of his owne name, was called Galdia, which (as ſome thinke) is that now named Galloway.

131 Lingthake, ſon to Corbreid Gald, two yeares.

133 Mogall, nephew to Corbreid Gald, ſix and thirty yeares.

162 Conarus, ſon to Mogall, 14. yeares.

176 Ethodius, Nephewe to King Mogall. In this Kingsraigne, Lucius, King of the Brittains, with a great part of his people, receyued the Chriſtian faith, being according to the Scottiſh Chronicles, in the yeare after our Sauiours byrth, 187. This Ethodius raigned 33. yeares.

207 Satrahell, or Serrahell, Brother to Ethodius, raigned foure yeares.

211 Donald, Brother to Satrahell, 21. years. In this kings time, the Scots receiued with him the Chriſtian faith, 330. yeares after the erection of the Scottiſh Kingdome. And this Donald was the firſt that cauſed Golde and Siluer to bee coyned in his Realme, ſtamping a Croſſe on the one ſide, and his face on the other.

216 Euthodius the ſecond, beeing Sonne to the former King Euthodius, raigned 16. yeares.

242 Athirco, ſon to Ethodius, 12. yeares.

252 Natholocus, a Noble man of Argile, vi. yeares.

Findock



470 Dongard, brother to Eugenius, raignd 5. years.

481 Conſtantine, Brother alſo to Eugenius, 17. yeares.

501 Dongall, or Congall, Nephew to Conſtantine, and ſon to his Brother Dongard, 20. years.

521 Conranus, Brother to Congall, in whoſe time the great K. Arthur was borne, and S. Germane preached among the Souldiers in the Camp, and bare the Kings Standard in the field, when with the cry of Alleluia three times together, the Saxons were miraculouſly diſcomfited. This Conranus died in the 20. yeare of his raigne, the 16. of Arthurs ouer the Brittaines, and firſt of the Emperor Iuſtinian, An. Chriſti. 531.

531 Eugenius, his Nephew, and ſon to his brother Congall, in whoſe time was the bloudy battell betweene the Britaines, Scots, and Picts, wherein aboue 20000. men were ſlain, with Mordred, K. Arrhur, & Gawan or Gauan, brother to Mordred, and moſt part of ỹ Britiſh Nobility. This Eugenius raigned 38. yeares.

The death of King Arthur, Mordred, &c.

578 Conuall, Brother to Eugenius, in whoſe time S. Colme, or Colombe, came from Ireland into Scotland. This Conuall raigned ten yeares, and then Kinnatill his Brother, being enthroned at Argile by free election, liued but twenty dayes after his Coronation.

588 Aidan, Sonne to King Conran, was crowned by the holy Father Saint Colme, and raigned thirty ſeauen yeares. In this Aidans time, the Saxons hauing driuen the Brittaines into Wales, and inſulting ouer their lands and Countries;

Findocke, ſonne to Athireo, ten yeares.

Donald, Brother to Findock, being named Donald of the Iſles, twelue yeares. 273

Crathlint, Son to King Findock, twenty foure yeares. 287

Fincomarke, the Uncles ſonne to Crathlint, 47. yeares. 328

Romacus, Nephewe to King Crathlint, foure yeares. 358

Anguſianus, Nephewe to King Crathlint, two yeares. 360

Fethelmachus, Cozin to Anguſianus, three years. 363

Eugenius, the Sonne of King Fincomarke, three yeares. 369

Ferguſe, Sonne to Erthus, who was Sonne to Ethodius, Brother to Eugenius, and borne in Denmarke, 16. yeares. 424.

Eugenius, the Son of Ferguſe, in whoſe time the Wall, called Adrians Wall, was undermined and ouerthrowne; Alſo the Brittaines were made tributary to the Scots and Pictes: which was about fiue hundred yeares, after that Iulius Cæſar had brought them in ſubiection to the Romaines; after our Sauiours birth 446. and the ſeauenth of Eugenius his raigne. Then was the Iſle of Albion ſore infected with the Pelagians Hereſie, and Paladius (tearmed by ſome the Apoſtle of Scotland) was ſent by Pope Celeſtine to the Scots and Picts. This Eugenius raigned 30. yeares, and aduanced the State of his Country to more wealth and felicity, then any of his Predeceſſors had done before him. 440

The Brittaines tributary to the Scots and Picts.





tries; deuided the kingdome into ſeauen parts or deuiſions, ordaining ſeuen ſeuerall Kings to rule ouer them. In this King Aidans rule, died Saint Colme, at Dune in Ireland, whereon his tomb theſe verſes were found engraued. England made ſeuen kingdomes.

*Hi tres in Duno, tumulo tumulantur in vno,*
*Brigida, Patricius atque Columba pius.*
Saint Colme, Saint Patrick, and Brigetta pure,
Theſe three in Dune lies in one Sepulture.

Kenethus Keir, Son of Conuall, or Conwall, raigned foure months. 606

Eugenius, fourth of that name, Son to King Aidan, and (by ſome) called Brudus, according to S. Colmes prophecy of him, was crowned King of Scotland. He raigned 15. yeares. 610.

Ferquhard, Son to Eugenius, 13. yeares. 632

Donald, or Donwald, the third ſon of Eugenius, 15. yeares. 645

Ferquhard the ſecond, Nephew to Donwald, 18. yeares. 664

Maldwin, Sonne of king Donwald, in whoſe time was a grieuous Peſtilence through moſt part of the World, conſuming a greater number of Men before it ceaſed, then were left aliue, for it continued the ſpace of three yeares together. He raigned twenty yeares. 684

A generall Peſtilence.

Eugenius the fift, Nephew to Maldwin, foure yeares. 688

Eugenius the ſixt, the Sonne of Ferquhard, ten yeares. 697

Strange visions in Albion.

In this kinges raigne were many wonderfull visions seen in Albion. In the Riuer of Humber (to the apparant view of a multitude of men) a number of Ships appeared vnder saile, as ready furnished for the war. In the Church at Camelon, a noyse was heard like the clattering of Armour. Milke was turned into bloud in dyuers places of Pict-land, and Cheese conuerted into a bloudie Masse or Cake. Corne, as it was gathered in Haruest time, was all bloudie, and it rained blood in the further partes of Scotland, as the Scottish Chronicles doe make mention.

609 Ambirkeleth, Nephew, or Son (as some say) to Eugenius the fift, raigned not fully two years.

716 Eugenius the seauenth, Brother to Ambirkeleth, who caused the Histories of his Ancestours liues to be written in Books and volumes, for example to posterity, appointing these Monuments to bee carefully kept in the Abbay of Iona, now called Colmekill; he raigned 17. yeares, and dyed much lamented.

The Histories of the Kings liues written.

734 Mordacke, Nephew to Eugenius. In whose time (according to venerable Bede) foure seuerall people liued in peace and quietnesse within the boundes of Albion, though differing in manners, language, lawes, and ordenaunces: Saxons, whom hee called English-men, Brittaynes, Scots, and Picts. In which time also, Bede concluded his history, with the ending of King Mordacks life.

762 Ethfine, Son to Eugenius the seauenth, who had

had foure Gouernors vnder him in his Realme: Donald, Treaſurer of Argile, Collane of Athol, and Mordake of Galloway his Lieutenants, & Conrath the Thane of Murreyland. He raigned 30. yeares.

Eugenius, the eight Son of King Mordacke, three yeares. 767

Ferguſe the third, Son of King Ethfine, three yeares. 769

Soluathius, Son of Eugenius the eight, twenty yeares. 788

Achaius, Sonne of King Ethfine, in whoſe time was a perpetuall league confirmed betweene him and the Emperor Charlemaigne of France. And then had Hungus, the Pictiſh King, the viſion of Saint Andrew and his Croſſe, as is reported, whereby S. Andrew, became Patron both of the Scots and Picts. This Achaius raigned 32 yeares. 819

Conuall, the Brother of King Ethfine, fiue yeares. 824

Dongall, Sonne of King Soluathius, fiue yeares. 830.

Alpine, the Sonne of King Achaius, foure yeares. 833

Kenneth, the Sonne of Alpine. This is that famous and renowmed King, in whoſe time the Pictiſh Nation were vtterly deſtroyed, the Cittie of Camelon caſt downe, the Caſtle of Maidens forſaken by the Picts, and none, or verie few of them left liuing in Albion. Which happened after their firſt beginning to raigne there, 839

The vtter ſubuerſion of the Picts.

1173. yeares; 1166. from the enterance of Fergusius; eight hundred thirty nine after our Sauiours birth, and from the Worldes Creation, 4806. In memorie of this his famous victorie, King Kenneth brought the Marble Stone out of Argile (where till then it haode bæne kept) into Gourie, and placed it at Scone, neere to the place where he preuailed against the Picts. This roiall K. died in the yeare 856. hauing raigned 20. yeares in great renowne and glory.

Translation of the Marble stone.

860. Donald, Brother to King Kenneth, died in the first yeare of his raigne, which was much molested by the Danes, vnder Cadane King of Denmarke, pretending a Title to the Picts lands.

874 Constantine, the Sonne of King Kenneth, a very worthy and famous King, who redressed all disorders in his Land, appointing Priests to apply their vocation, and not to meddle with any seculer businesse, going to warre, or keeping any Horses, Haukes, or Hounds. The youth of his land (to auoide wantonnesse and idlenesse) were appointed but one meale a day; and drunkennes, either in man or Woman, was punnished with death. He raigned 13. yeares.

A vertuous King.

876. Ethus, brother of Constantine, who was a man of such swiftnesse of foot, that he could match and make way in running, with Harts and Hounds, whereupon he was sir-named Light-foot. Hee gouerned scarce two yeares.

893. Gregory, the son of Dongall, that raigned before Alpine; in whose time liued Iohn Scot the famous Clerke. This Gregory raignd 18. years.

Do-

Donald the fift, Sonne of Conſtantine the ſe- 903
rond, in whoſe time Gormond and his Danes were baptized, and Gormonds name was chan- ged to Athelſtane. He raigned almoſt 11. years. 942.

Conſtantine the third, Son of Ethus ỹ ſwift, 40. yeares. He gaue ouer his kingly dignity, and entred into Religion, as Hector Boetius affir- meth.

Malcolme, the Sonne of Donald, 15. yeares. 959

Iudulph, Sonne of Conſtantine the third, and 968
prince of Cumberland, he raigned about 9. years

Duffe, the Sonne of King Malcolme, foure 972
yeares.

Culene, Prince of Cumberland, and Sonne of 976
King Iudulph, raigned not fully fiue yeares.

Kenneth, Sonne to King Malcolme the firſt, 1000
25. yeares.

Conſtantine, the Sonne of King Culene, not 1002
three yeares.

Grime, Nephew to King Duffe, not fully nine 1010.
yeares.

Malcolme the Son of Kenneth, and Prince of 1034
Cumberland, 25. yeares.

Duncane, Nephew to Malcolme, 6. yeares. 1045.
In his time was Banquho Thaine of Lochqua- ber; of whō the houſe of the Stuarts is deſcended, euen to his Maieſty now raigning. And then was England deuided, betweene Canutus King of Denmarke, and Edmund Ironſide, after a ua- liant Combate fought betweene them.

Mackbeth, ſon to Sinell, Thaine of Glammis, 1057
raigned 17. yeares.

1092 Malcolme Cammore, Sonne of King Duncane, hee changed the name of * Thaines into Earls, being then the first that euer were among the Scots, according to their owne Hiſtories. At this time did William the Baſtard, duke of Normandy, make his Conqueſt of England. This King Malcolme raigned 36. yeares. And after ſome difference for the Crown betweene Donald Bane, Brother to King Malcolme, and Duncane a Baſtard Son to King Malcolme (which vſurpation continued for the ſpace of three years) Edgar the rightfull Prince attayned to his due claime.

* Thaines were as Barons.

1101 Edgar, Son to King Malcolme, was the firſt that euer was annointed King in Scotland: now was the generall paſſage to the Holy land, vnder Godfrey of Bullen, and many other Chriſtian Princes. This King Edgar raigned nine years.

1109 Alexander, Brother to Edgar, being ſir-named Alexander the fierce, for his ſtearne valiancy in purſuing Theeues and Robbers. Dauid, Brother to King Alexander, being in England, married Maude, Daughter to Waltheof, Earle of Huntingdon and Northumberland, & (in right of his wife) was made Earle of Huntingdon and Northumberland, with inheritance of the lands to them belonging. In this King Alexanders time (who raigned 17. yeares compleate) the order of the Knightes of Rhodes, beeing formerlie Knightes of Saint Iohn of Hieruſalem, tooke beginning, and the order of the white Monkes. Then liued alſo the Holy Man Richard de

The beginning of the Knights of Rhodes.

ſancto

ſancte Victore, beeing a *Scot* borne, but lyuing (the more part of his time at Paris in Fraunce) where hee died, and lieth buried in the Abbey of S. Victore, hee being a Brother of the ſame houſe.

Dauid, Brother to Alexander, ſucceeded as lawfull heire, and ruled 29. yeares, and two moneths. It is recorded of this King, that he excelled in Noble Vertues, and ſober conuerſation of life, being very pittifull to the poore, and ſomewhat ouer-bountifull to the Church. For when King Iames the firſt, came to his Tomb at Dunfirmling, he ſaide, That hee was a ſore Saint for the Crowne, leauing the Church ouer-rich, and the Crowne too poore. He purged his Court ſo cleane of al vicious behauiour, and diſordered cuſtomes, that it appeared to be a ſchoole of vertue. No riotous banquetting, ſurfetting cheare, or laſciuious word could be herd there, or any wanton ſignes, whereby to kindle luſt or idle concupiſcence. All the words, workes, and whole demeanor of his ſeruants, tended euer to ſome good concluſion, free from moouing ſtrife, or a thought of ſedition: the Kings owne life and example, ſeruing for their guide and direction. He builded 15 Abbeyes (viz) Holy-Rood houſe, Kelſo, Iedburgh, Melroſſe, Newbottell, Holmecultrane, Dundranane, Cambuskenneth, Kinlois, Dunfirmling, Holme in Cumberland. Alſo two Nunneries, one at Carleill, and the other at Northe Berwike; with two Abbeyes beſide New-Caſtle, one of S. Benedictes order, and the other of white

1153

The vertuous life and raigne of K. Dauid.

white Monks. He erected likewise foure Bishoppricks in his Realme Rosse, Brechin, Dunkeld, & Dublane: endowing them with rich rents, faire lands, and very commodious possessions.

1165 Malcolme, Sur-named Malcolme the Maid, because his conuersation & delight (both in minde and body) was so chaste from his verie infancie, that he liued single al his daies, and without mariage. Hee was Son to Prince Henry, that was sonne and heire to King Dauid, and raigned not fully twelue yeares.

1214 William, Brother to King Malcolme, and for his singuler Iustice Sur-named the Lyon. In this Kings time, Richard King of England, surnamed Cueur de Lyon, went his voyage to the Holy-Lande: King William raigned nine and forty yeares.

1249 Alexander the second, Sonne to King William the Lyon, who caused his Fathers death to be mourned for throw his whole kingdom: hee raigned 35. yeares.

1290 Alexander the third, sonne to the former King Alexander, in whose time was a generall Counsell at Lyons in France. He raigned 42. yeares, and by reason of his dying without any issue, the controuersie betweene Iohn Ballioll, and Robert Bruse then happened: which was heard and censured by Edward the first, king of England, albeit they maintained both their claimes, vpon their Titles seuerally, Balioll descending of Margaret, eldest Daughter to Dauid, Earle of Huntington, Brother vnto William the Lyon; and

The seuerall claimes of Iohn Baliol, and Robert Bruse,

Bruse

Bruſe comming of Iſabell, ſecond daughter of the ſaide Earle Dauid, and the nert heire male to William the Lyon, for want of ſucceſſion in the right line. By which Title (how euer Balioll is ſaide to be crowned King) Robert Bruſe inioyed the royal dignitie, in the year, 1305. He had iſſue, Dauid, that left no poſterity, and Margery, maried to Walter, Greate Stewarde of Scotland, (deſcended lineallie from the Princes of Wales, by Neſte, Daughter to Griffith ap Lhewlyn, Mother to VValter, the ſonne of Fleance, made Great Stewarde of Scotland by Malcolme the fourth.) Of whom came Robert the ſecond, firſt of the ſur-name of Stuart, that bare dominion in Scotland.

Robert Stuart, being called Robert the ſecond, was crowned King with Royall ſolemnitie at Scone, in the 47. yeare of his age, on the Annuntiation day of our Lady in Lent, 1370. he raigned ten years. It is recorded of this K. Robert the 2. that his Captaines & commanders were alwaies fortunat in war, neuer returning but with ſpoils and victories. He was a Prince of ſuch conſtancy in promiſe, that he ſildome ſpake the word which hee not performed. Such an obſeruer of Juſtice was he alſo, that he would not remoue from any place, but Proclamation was firſt made, that if any of his men or officers did take any thing vnpaid for: the partie to whome the debt was due, ſhould come in, and imediatelie ſatiſfied, he willinglie heard the complaints of the poore, and was as diligent in ſeeing their wrongs redreſſed.

1370

The firſte comming of the Stuarts to the Crowne.

1390 Iohn Stuart, Earle of Carrike, and ſonne to King Robert before named, was crowned king: but becauſe Iohn was iudged to bee an vnfortunate name for Kings, they changed it, and called him Robert, after his Fathers name, and ſo hee was King Robert the third. Then was the firſt creation of Dukes in Scotland, for the king made his eldeſt Sonne Dauid, Duke of Rothſay, and his Brother Robert, Duke of Albanie; yet neyther of theſe ſonnes ſucceeded their father, but another ſon, who was named Iames. This King Robert raigned 16. yeares.

The Kings name changed.

1424 Iames, Sonne to King Robert, ſucceeded his Father in the kingdome of Scotland: his Queen was deliuered of two Sonnes at a birth, named Alexander and Iames; Alexander dyed in his infancy, but Iames liued, and ſucceeded hys Father. This King Iames the firſt, raigned thirteene yeares. Of whom it is written, that he was a very ſeuere and vpright Iuſticer, yet ſo milde and ſweete of Nature, that not any of their Princes did more reuerently embrace peace at home among his ſubiects, or more willingly conclude it abroad with ſtrangers, then he. His Wiſedome appeared ſo manifeſtly, in many very great and eſpeciall affaires, that Kinges of other Nations did louingly ioyne in league and friendſhip with him. Hee had bin ſo wel educated in all Sciences and Gentlemanly actiuity, by the carefull diligence of the beſt Schoole-maiſters, that it coulde not be eaſily iudged, in which hee was moſt perfect: For hee was an excellent Muſitian, a rare

Poet,

Poet, a moſt elequent Orator, & ſo exactly (both in minde and memory he comprehended ỳ depth of Diuinity and Lawe) that for all theſe (in his time) he gaue not place to any one. Laſtly, he was not onely a beauty to his Countrey, in prouiding his peoples quiet at home, but fought alſo for their defence againſt their enemies abroad. The inuention of Gunnes happened in his time, and he cauſed diuers pieces of Artillery to be made in Flanders, one of which being a great and goodly Piece, he called the Lyon, whereon theſe verſes he cauſed to be engraued.

The inuention of guns in this kings time.

*Illuſtri Iacobo Scotorum Principi digno,*
*Regi magnifico, dum fulmine caſtra reduco,*
*Factus ſum ſubito, nuncuper ergo Leo.*

Iames the ſecond, ſon to King Iames the firſt, being but ſixe yeares olde, ſucceeded his Father in the Crown, and was the 103. King of Scotland from Fergusius the firſt. In this kings time was the famous Art of Printing inuented, in the Citty of Mentz in Germany. This King raygned 24. yeares, & among his Subiects in the Camp, hee carried himſelfe ſo gently towards all men, that they ſeemed not to feare him as their King, but reuerenced and loued him like a father. Hee would ride vp and downe amongſt them, and eat and drinke with them, euen as if hee had bin fellow-like with the meaneſt. 1436.

The Arte of Printing found out.

Iames the third, Sonne to King Iames the ſecond, being but ſeauen years of age, ſucceeded his Father 1461

father in the kingdome, and raigned 29. yeares.

1488. Iames the fourth, ſon to King Iames the third, was crowned King of Scotland, the 24. day of June, 1488. he being then aged xvi. years. This King Iames the fourth, married the Princeſſe Margaret, eldeſt Daughter vnto Henry the ſeauenth, King of England, and raigned fiue and twenty yeares, deſeruing to be ranked and numbred amongſt the beſt princes that euer there gouerned, for his politicke rule, and adminiſtration of Iuſtice.

King Iames married the eldeſt daughter to Henry 7. King of England.

1513 Iames the fift, being a Childe, aged one yeare, fiue moneths, and ten daies, and ſonne to king Iames the fourth, was Crowned King of Scotland, the one and twentieth day of September, 1513. his Mother the Quæne being appoynted Regent of the Realme. This King raigned 32. yeares, being an obſeruice of Iuſtice, a defender of the Law, and a ſound ſhielde for the poore and innocent, in which regard (of his Nobility) hee was called King of the Commoners. He would ſet at libertie the poore oppreſſed with the tyranny of the rich, and repreſſe the rich from ſpoyling the poore. All which he did with a kinde of ſeueritie, but yet in ſuch ſort, as therein appeared a wonderfull gentleneſſe in his naturall diſpoſition: becauſe he ſeldom did put any of them to death, but did eyther by inpriſonment, or mulct, puniſh the offence. For it was his vſuall ſaying, That he would neuer take life from any, but onelie to keepe the Lawe ſound, for example to others, and to keepe downe their boldneſſe, that dwelt about

about the borders. His death was great lamented of his ſubiects, to whom he was a perfect Patron, and a louing Father.

Mary, Daughter and heire to King Iames the fift, began her raigne ouer Scotland, the 18. of December, 1542. She was but ſeauen daies old when the King her Father died, and left her his kingdome, hir mother then lying in child-bed, in the Caſtle of Lithquo, of which place the Lorde Leuingſton being then Captaine, had the charge both of mother and daughter committed to him, with the mothers good liking, & free conſent. This Q. Mary maried Frances the Dolphin of France, who after his fathers death was king of France: but King Frances dying, Mary Qu. of Scotland, and Dowager of France, returned home againe into Scotland, where hir Mother had bin Regent al the time of hir abſence, I meane vntill the 1. of June, 1560. on which day the Queen Mother of Scotland died. Afterward, Mary Q. of Scots maried Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley, Earl of Roſſe, Duke of Albanie, & ſon to the Earle of Lennox, who was proclaimed king at the Market Croſſe in Edenburgh, the 28. of July, 1564. and on the tenth of Februarij, 1566. he was made Knight of the Order of S. Michael, in the Chappel of Holirood houſe, with great reuerence and ſolemnitie. In the month of June next folowing, the 19. day, and betwen the houres of 1. and 11. before none, Queene Mary was deliuered of a goodlie young Prince, who afterwarde was crowned King of Scotland, by the name of Iames the firſt.

1542

Mary Dowager of France returneth backe into Scotland.

Iames

1567 Iames the firt, Sonne to King Henry and M. Mary, being about a yeare old, began his raigne ouer Scotland, and was crowned King thereof, the 19. of July, 1567. Hee succæded also in his rightfull inheritance of the Crowne of England, (after the decease of Queen Elizabeth, of famous memory) the 24. day of March, 1602. gloriously uniting those kingdomes in one, which formerly (by Brute) had bin long time deuided.

¶ Of the Island of Albion, before Brutes arriuall there, and tearming it Brittaine, after his owne name; Also, what Kinges raigned there before he came thither.

¶ *To the Worshipfull, Maister William Dios, Esquire, Remembrauncer of the Honourable Citty of London.*

Geog. Com. lib. Berof. ant Lib. 1.

WHether this Lande were peopled before the flod or no, it is no part of my purpose to argue hær thereon, albeit Dominicus Marius Niger, and Berosus do affirme, that well as this Islande was inhabited with people, long before the dayes of Noah, as any other Countrey or part of ỹ world beside.

beſide. But after the floud, according to Annius de Viterbo, Beroſus and others, when Noah deuided the earth among his three Sonnes, that part which is now knowne by the name of Aſia, fell to the lot of his eldeſt Sonne Sem; Affrica to his ſecond Sonne Cham; and Europe (withall the Iſles thereto appertaining) to his third Son Iaphet, among which, this Iſland (now called Brittaine, with other Iſles thereto belonging) was certainely numbred. Iaphet, Noahs third Sonne (by ſome called Iapetus; by others, Atlas Maurus, becauſe hee died in Mauritania) in the iudgement of Bodinus, auouching the conſent and authority of the Hebrew, Greeke, and Latine Writers, was the firſt that peopled the Countries of Europe, deuiding it alſo (by the Grand-fathers example) among his Sonnes, of whom Tuball (according to Tarapha) had the rule of Spaine, Gomer the Italians, and Samothes was the founder of Celtica, which contained in it (as Bale teſtifieth) a great part of Europe, but eſpecially thoſe Countries now called Gallia and Britannia, which peopling of this Iſland (by Iaphets Children) is affirmed to be 200 yeares after the floud.

*Annius de Viter. in Comment. ſup. 4. Lib. Beroſ. de ant. Lib. 1*

*Iohannes Bodin ad fact. hiſt. cogn.*

*Franciſcus Tarapha.*

Samothes, being the firſt Sonne of Iaphet, and called (by Moſes) Meſech, by others, Dis, had for his portion (as Wolfangus Lazius auoucheth) the Countrey betweene the Riuer of Rhine, & the Pyrenean Mountaines, where hee founded the kingdom of Celtica, tearming his people Celtæ: which name was as indifferent to them of Gallia,

Samothes, firſt King of Celtica.

*Wolfang. Lazius de migr. gen.*

as to the Inhabitantes of the Isle of Britaine. This King Samothes, is reported to bee a Man excelling all other (in that age) in learning and knowledge, & that (of him) the arose a sect of Philosophers, both in Britaine & Gallia, which were cald Samothei, & as Aristotle and Secion do say, were surpassing, both in the Law of God & man, and therefore greatly addicted to religion: especially them of Britaine, which not onely made the whole nation to take name of them, but, as Bale and Doctor Caius affirme, the Island it selfe was named Samothea, which was the first peculiar name it had, before the arriuall of Albion.

*Lib. de Magic. succ. ff. Lib. 22.*

*De ant. Czt. cent. Lib. 1. Script. Brit. cent. 1.*

Magus second King.

Magus, the Sonne of Samothes, was second King of Celtica after his Father. This Magus was likewise so famous for his learning, that the Persians Magi, or Diuines, are said to come of him.

Sarron third King.

Sarron, succéded his Father Magus, in the Countrey of Gallia, and the Isle Samothea, of whom Diodorus Siculus reporteth, that a sect of Philosophers descended among the Celtes, who were called Sarronides.

Druis 4. K.

Druis, or (after Seneca) Dryus, raigned after his Father Sarron, indifferently ouer the Celtes and Samotheans. Of him came the Philosphers, called Druides, whom Cæsar anoucheth, to haue the charge of common and priuate sacrifices, the discussing of pointes of Religion, the education of youth, the determining of matters in variance, and full power to interdict so many from the Sacrifices to their Gods, and societie of men,

*De bello Gallico. Lib. 9. & Lib. 6.*

as

as diſobeyed their award. If any doubt aroſe in the Countries, about matters of Diſcipline; they alwayes reſorted to theſe Druides, who, (as Humphrey Llhoyd witneſſeth) made theyr cheefeſt aboade in the Ille now called Angleſey, and there (at all times) receiued their reſolution. *Anti. Lib. 5*

Bardus, the Sonne of Druis, was the fifth King ouer the Celtes and Samotheans: a man much renowmed for inuention of Muſique and Ditties, and he made an order of Philoſophicall Poets, or Heraulds, calling them Bardi, after his owne Name. Of theſe Bardi, Nonnius; Strabo, Diodorus, Stephanus. Bale, and Sir Iohn Price doe thus record. That they vſed to Regiſter the Noble exploits of auncient Captaines, and to draw the pedegrées and Genealogies of ſuch as were liuing. They did ſo excell, in ſinging ſweete Songes and Ditties to theyr Harpes, that, if two Armies had beene ready to ioyne battaile, and any one of theſe Bards (by fortune) entred among them; they had not the power to ſtrike, vntill he left ſinging, and went from the Armies. Bardus fifth King.

When Bardus was deceaſed, the Celts began to affect liberty, and (addicting themſelues to pleaſure and ydleneſſe) would liue no longer vnder the ſtrict orders of their auncient Kinges: which brought them the ſooner vnder ſubiection to the Gyant Albion, who ſtraited Celtica and the Celtes, within the bounds of Gallia, tearming this Iſland (formerly called The Celtes ſubiected by Albion the Gyant.

Samothea) Albion, according to his owne name, and subdued the people; albeit the Title of Samotheans (according to the iudgement of diuers Writers) had continued from Samothes to Albion, the space of 310. yeares. This Albion was the fourth Sonne of Neptune, whom Moyses calleth Nepthuim, and who did put his said Son in possession of this Iland, by conquering the Samotheans, as he did the like to his other Sonne, named Bergion, in Ireland and the Orkenies, which were brought vnder his obeysance. Concerning the Historie of Hercules Lybicus, (whom Moyses nameth Laabin) his Conquests in Spaine, his passage into Italy against Lestrigo, and lastly his killing Albion and his Brother Bergion; it being nothing incident to my present purpose, I leaue it. Also the Story of Danaus Daughters, being fifty in number, that they should arriue in this Iland (after the slaughter of their Husbandes, the fifty Sonnes of King Ægyptus) and that one of those Ladies should bee named Albina, of whom this Land should bee called Albion: I passe it ouer likewise, and will now proceede to the knowne History of Brute. Yet not daring to enter into so rich a Mine of hidden treasure, till being guided by the Light of Brittaine (the learned labour of a worthy Gentleman and Antiquarie, Maister Henry Lyte of Lytescarie, Esquire, and which (with his owne hand) hee presented to our late Soueraigne Mueene and matchlesse Mistresse, on the day when shee came in royall manner to Paules

Bergion ruled in Ireland.

Church

Church) I be guided therein for my better direction, vſing his owne words.

The Light of Britaine.

BRitannia Maior (the Countrey of the bright Britona, called Britomartis, the preſident of Britaine) that is to ſay, the chaſt Diana of *Calydonia ſylua: Aſtrorum decus; Syluarum dea; caſta et innupta; cuſtos, et cultrix nemorum; metuenda Virago; terror ſylueſtribus apris.* This Britannia maior, was firſt found by Brute of Albania; the Conquerour of the Greeks; the mightie deliuerer of the Troyans, and firſt founder of the Noble Britaines. Who by the Oracle of the bright Britona, called Diana of Calydonia ſylua (Aſtrorum decus) brought the remaines of the Albanian Troyans of Aſia, from Albania Calydonia ſylua, & Ætolia in Greece; to Albania Calydonia ſylua, and Ætolia in Britaine. Before whoſe moſt happy and fortunate arriuall, there was neither Towne, Citty, Countrey, Riuer, Region, or place of name in Britannia: for Britannia (at Brutes arriuall) was no Britannia, but a rude and ſolitary Deſert or wilderneſſe, without name, Ferarum altrix, a verie nurſery or place of ſtore for wilde Beaſtes. The Countries and Regions of Britayne, were then all ouer-growne with Woodes, repleniſhed with all kindnes of ſauage and cruell beaſts; as Lyons, Beares, Wolues, Fores, wild Boares,

Britania of Britona, and Britomartis

Diana Britonas Oracle.

Albania.
Calydonia.
Ætolia.

Britannia a Wildernes.
*Ferarum altrix.*

and all other game belonging to the Chase. Beside diuers other kind of wilde Beastes and Cattell; especially a certaine kinde of white monstrous wilde Buls and Kine, with long shagd curled haire and maines, which kind of Cattel were as fierce and cruell, as Lyons, and could neuer be tamed by mans art; as you may finde it registred and recorded in our ancient Chronicles, and noted in the very common Dictionaries, vppon these wordes Caledonia, and Caledonia sylua Britanniæ, alwayes mistaken, and corruptly written Caledonia, for Calydonia: because the reason why our Countrey was first called Caledonia sylua, was no better knowne to the auncient Romaines in Iulius Cæsars time, then it is (at this day) knowne to diuers of our Antiquaries and Chronicles of Britayne. For one deriueth Caledonia sylua, from Calden, and another fetcheth Calydonia sylua, from Kaled: But the ones faire Daughter Kaled, is too young to bee the Mother of Calydon, or Calydonia sylua Britanniæ; And the others Calden, or Hazell-sticke, is as weake to be the Mother of Calydon. For Calydon, of whom Calydonia sylua, by Ætolia in Greece tooke name, was the Sonne of Ætolus, who was the Sonne of Mars, the God or Patron of battaile. Mars was the father of Ætolus, of Parthaon, & of the bright Britona called Britomaris, the president of Britayne.

Wilde Buls and Kine.

Calydon was the son of Ætolus.

Mars the father of Etolus, Parthaon & Britona.

Ætolus, the Sonne of Mars, and Brother to bright Britona, was Father of Calydon, of whom Calydonia sylua, by Ætolia in Greece,

(Mother

(Mother of our Calydonia ſylua, the generall name of all *Britayne*) tooke name: but eſpecially of *Calydonia ſylua ſecunda*, which is Scotland, called *Britannia ſecunda*. In which part of *Brytaine*, at this day, is the moſt ancient Towne of *Parthaon*, now called *Perth*; and Saint *Iohns* Towne, the principall Towne of *Ætolia*, now called *Atholl*, a Region or Countrey of *Britannia*, *Albania*, or *Calydonia ſylua ſecunda*, where the great *Calydon* Wood, which beginneth at *Striueling* (called the *Dolorus Mount*) runneth foorth thorough *Mentieth* and *Stratherne*, to *Ætolia* (that fruitefull Region of *Grampius Mount*) which reacheth to *Lochquhaber*, and to *Calydonium Promontorium*, which is *Cathneſſe* or *Orcha*, the angle, point, cape, foreland or lands end of *Scotland*.

Parthaon, now Perth in Aetolia.

Aetolia, now Athol.

Calydon wood.

Calydoniũ Cathneſſe.

This *Calydonia ſylua Erytannia*, was the daughter of *Calidonia ſylua*, by *Ætolia* in *Greece* who tooke his originall from *Calydon* the Sonne of *Ætolus*. *Ætolia*, now called *Atholl* in *Britayne*, is the Daughter of *Ætolia*, a Citty of *Albania*, and *Calydonia ſylua* in *Greece*, ſo called of *Ætolus* the Sonne of *Mars*. *Parthaon*, now called *Perth*, or Saint *Iohns* Towne, the principall Towne of *Ætolia* in Scotland, tooke his glorious name of *Parthaon*, the Brother to bright *Britona*, called *Britomaris*, the preſident *Brytaine*: Of whome, all *Britannia* (contayning all the Countries and Regions of *England*, *Scotland*, *Wales*, and *Cornewall*, called by *Alexander Necham*, in his booke De diuina ſapientia,

Calydon.

Aetolia.

Parthaon.

Bruti tellus) took the most glorious name of Britaine.

Britannia of Britona.

For Brute of Albania, the Founder of Britaine, came to this Isle by the Oracle of Britona, called Diana of Calydonia sylua: therefore hee called this Isle of Britannia, of the bright Britana, &c. The same Brute also, who was borne in Albania, banished to Albania, and the first founder of Britayne called Albania; called all our Countrey of Britayne, Albion, seu Albania: not of the White Rockes and Cliftes, as some men suppose, but of Albania in Asia, and Albania Epiri in Greece, the Countrey of Helenus and Andromache, Quæne of Albania Epiri, from whence, Brute of Albania brought the Albanian Troyans, the founders of Britayne.

Albania of Albania.

Chronicles and written Records of Brute.

To approue what formerly hath beene sayde, without any neede of repetition, wee haue a multitude of most glorious Recordes and Chronicles, Written and Painted, confirmed by the Testimony of Iulius Cæsar, by Pope Eleutherius; by a Parliament holden at Norham vppon Twede; and another at Lincolne, in the time of King Edward the first, who, by his Letters sent from Lyncolne to Pope Boniface, dooth approue Brutes Historie to bee no Fable: as some Critickes of our time haue done, who will not beleeue our ancient written Records, although confirmed by Emperors, Kings, Popes, and Parliamentes, neyther the Testimony of Strangers. Wherefore, by the Oracle of Diana, called Britomartis, the President of Britayne,

and

and by the Oracle of Diana Lucifera, that is to ſay, Venus, called Boſphorus, the bright Queen of Phrygia, and Caria, Mother of Eneas, and the Graces, of whom came Brute of Albania, founder of Britaine, who brought in Carius, a Noble Prince of Lydia and Caria, with the people of Caria, and Swannes of Carie in Britaine: By the Oracles aforeſaide, the Swans of Carie in Britaine, are now ſtirred vp to maintain the verity of the Brittiſh Hiſtory. The Goddes of the Gentiles, whoſe Temples our fore-fathers (of the Troyan race) erected in diuers Countries and regions of Britaine: eſpecially at Troia-noua, now called London in Britaine, where the Troynouants did ſometimes Sacrifice Buls, Bullocks, and Stags, to Diana Tauropolia, whome the Gentiles called the Queene of Heauen: whych was the ſame Diana called Bellona, whome the Brigantes honoured at Yorke, Brigantium Ciuitas. And what were theſe Brigantes, I pray ye? Herodian ſaith, that the Briges, Phryges, and Brigantes were all one. Whereupon I conclude, that the Brigantes, that is to ſay, our Northerne Britaines, were Phrygian Troyans. The Brigantes of Brittaine, are the people of Yorkſhire, Richmondſhire, Lancaſhire, Durham, weſtmerland and Cumberland, hard to the Pictes Wall, where the Abij and Picti Agathyrſi dwell, about Abus Aeſtuariũ, now called Humber. And what were thoſe Abij, but Albanian Troyans, that came alſo from Abus, a Riuer of Albania Epiri? And the auncient Brittaines, called Picti Agathyrſi

Dianas Temple at Troia noua

Diana Tauropolia, Theontea Dea.

Diana Bellona of Yorke.

Briges. Phryges. Brigantes.

*Abus Aeſtuarium.*

thyrsi, what were they? Euen Scythian Troyans of Albania, who sprang of Scythes and Agathyrsus, the Sonnes of Hercules, that sometime raigned in Troy: for the famous Cittie of Troy in Phrygia, the head of all Asia, was in Scythia.

*Aby Albani Agathyrsi*

The noble Troyans were called Taurini, and Tauroscythi, of a famous mountaine of Asia, called Taurus Mount, which runneth thorough all Asia; a great part of the Mountain Taurus endeth in Caria which is a countrey of Asia belonging to Troy. Venus, called Bosphorus, the mother of Eneas and the Graces (of whome came Brute of Albania, the founder of Britaine) was Queen of Phrygia and Caria. The famous Riuer of Mæander is in Caria, which riuer hath Golden sands and singing Swannes, that sometime serued Venus, Queen of Phrygia and Caria: wherefore the Swans of Caria, and Signets of Troy in Britaine, must allwayes sing of Troy & Troyans. The daughters of heauen and earth, Isis, Themis, Rhea, Thetis, Abus, Arius, Alanus, Ax, Tameres, and all our famous Riuers of Britain, with the Deucalion Sea, and Illandes of Brittaine, especially Archadia, Aemonia, & Arachne are glorious records of Brute and the Troyans, the founders of Britaine. Diuers our most ancient Cities and Townes of Britaine, as Oxford vpon Isis and Themis, Troia-noua vppon Isis, Themis, and Rhea Albanorum; Yorke, *Brigantium ciuitas*; Antandros, turned to S. Andros; Parthaon, Perthe, turned to Saynt Iohns Town, Albanum ciuitas, turned to S. Albanes, Chester

Troyans, called Taurini, & Tauroscythi.

Taurus the mansion of Venus.

Riuers of Britaine, are Recordes of Brute.

Townes and Cities, Recordes of Brute.

Cheſter, and Doriſceſtria, with the auncient Townes of Derby and Leiceſter; and Tyanton vpon Tamares Riuer of Britaine, with diuers other Townes and Citties of Britaine, are Records of Brute and the Troyans, Founders of Britaine.

The diuers Nations and people of Britaine, as the Troy-nouants, *Brigantes*, Scotobrigantes, the people of Albania, Calydonia, and Aetolia; the Iberi, the Albani, and Georgij, the people of Derbie and Leyceſter, the people of Cheſter, that came from Ceſtria Epiri, with the Dores, Ioues, and Cares, and the Tamarites of Tyanton, commonly called Tanton: All theſe are Records of the Noble people of Greece and Aſia, the remaines of the Troyans that came into Britaine with *Brute*. Diuers Nations and people of Britain, Recordes of Brute.

To theſe, adde a Catalogue or Regiſter, of the ancient Princes, Noblemen, and Gentlemen of Britaine, whereof there are ſome remaining to this verie day, beginne wee then thus. *Brute*, Corineus, Locrine, Camber, Albanacte, Madan, Mempricius, Ebranke, and hys twentie ſonnes, *Brute* Greenſheild, Aſſaracus, and Cecilius, &c. *Belinus* and *Brennus*, Cambra, or Cambria, Antenors Wife, Cambra, *Belinus* Daughter, Conidagus King of Albania, ſlewe Morgan at Glammorgan. Conidagus builded ỹ Temple of Minerua at *Bangor* in Wales, & the temple of Mars at Parthaon, now S. Iohns town of Actolia in Scotland. Aruiragus, in whoſe Princes, Noblemen, and Gentlemen Recordes of Brute.

dayes

dayes, a Ioseph of Aramithia, preached in Britaine. Leile, Androgeus, Brother to Cassibelanus; this Androgeus let Iulius Cæsar into Britaine. Pirrhus, Alexander Arcadius, Alexander Audax, Achaius, Etolus, Helena, Coile, Constantine; Graye, Persie, Dercie, Carie, Busir, or Bousir, Cicell, Cydne, Dennis, Bridgis, Andros, Carowe, Caros, Tracie, Rhese ap Rhesus; Oen, or Owen, King of Calydon, Brent the son of Hercules. Thinn, Euance, Bryce, Hil, Drake, Calais, Nele, Gryne, Dorill, Hodie, Crane, &c. These and infinite more beside, whiche Brute brought with him from the Countries of Isis and Themis, and from Albania, Calydonia Sylua, and Etolia in Greece, to Albania, Calydonia Sylua, and Etolia in Britaine, are undoubted records of him and the Troyans, Founders of Britaine.

Thus much out of Maister Lytes Light of Brittaine, which worthy Gentleman being deceased, his Son Maister Thomas Lyte, of Lytescarie, Esquire, a true immitator and heyre to his Fathers Vertues, hath (not long since) presented the Maiesty of King Iames, with an excellent Mappe or Genealogicall Table (contayning the bredth and circumference of twenty large sheets of Paper) which he entitleth Brittaines Monarchy, approuing Brutes History, and the whole succession of this our Nation, from the very Originall, with the iust obseruation of all times, changes and occasions therein happening. This worthy worke, hauing cost aboue seauen yeares labour,

bour, beſide great charges and expence, his highneſſe hath made very gracious acceptance of, and to witneſſe the ſame, in Court it hangeth in an eſpeciall place of eminence. Pitty it is, that this Phœnix (as yet) affoꝛdeth not a fellowe, oꝛ that from pꝛiuacie, it might not bee made moꝛe generall: but, as his Maieſty hath graunted him pꝛiuiledge, ſo, that the woꝛld might be wooꝛthie to enioy it, whereto, if friendſhip may pꝛeuaile, as he hath bin already, ſo ſhall he be ſtill as earneſtly ſollicited.

Brute, the ſonne of Siluius, hauing vnfoꝛtunately ſlaine his father in hunting, as he ſhot his Arrow at a Deare, was thereſoꝛe banniſhed his Countrey, wherupon he went into Greece, where a great number of the Troyans (liuing beſoꝛe in ſeruitude) reſoꝛted to him, and by his valour hee gaue them liberty, by conquerring Pandraſus, King of that Country, who was deſcended of the Noble Achilles. Hee compelled him alſo, to let him haue his faire Daughter Innogen in marriage, with furniture, money, victuals, and Shipping, wherewith (after many hard aduentures) paſſing along the ſtraits of Gibralterra, and coaſting along the ſhoꝛe on the right hand: hee met with Corineus, and another company, that came with him from Troy likewiſe with Antenor. Joyning then their powers together, they ſayled on, til arriuing within the riuers mouth of Loire, which deuideth Aquitaine from Celtike Gallia, (ſuppoſed to bee Gaſcoigne) they landed in the Dominions of a King, called Goffarius, and Surna-

Brute ſlewe his Father Siluius.

Brute met with Corineus.

Surnamed Pictus, by reason hse was descended of the people of Agathyrsi, who were other-wise termed Picts. King Goffarius with his men dyd sharply resist thse new commers, but sustayned the worst twice, & in the last conflict, *Brutes* Nephew (named Turnus) was slaine; in whose memory *Brute* builded there a City, which (to this day) is called Tours in Touraigne. Departing thence, he and his traine came to the Isle of Britaine, and landed at the hauen, now called Totnesse, Anno. 2855. and after the destruction of Troy 66. before the building of Rome, 368. years which was before our Sauiours natiuity, 1116. almost ended. He found this land desolate, sauing a few Giants, who in short time were vanquished: for Corineus wrastled with the strongest of them, named Goemagot or Gogmagog, at a place beside Doner, where hee cast him headlong downe from one of the rockes, in regard whereof, the place is called Gogmagogs Leap or fal. Brute builded London, calling it Troy-newydh, or Troia-noua. He begate on his wife Innogen, 3. sons, among whom he deuided his kingdome before his death. To Locrine, who was the eldest, hee gaue the middle part, calling it Loegria, or Loegiers. To Camber his second sonne, he gaue the west part of the Iland, calling it Cambria or Cymbry, deuided from Loegria, by the riuer Seuerne. To his third son Albanact, he gaue al the North part, entitling it Alban or Albania, according also to his name. To Corineus his deare esteemed friende and companion, hee gaue that part

Brutes resistance in Gallia.

Brutes landing in Albion.

The building of London.

The deuision of Brittaine by Brute, to his sonnes.

part of the Land, which (after him) to this day is called Corinwall. Laſtly, when he had gouerned this land 24. yeares. Hee died and was buried at that new Citty which he had builded. Anno ante incarnat. Chriſti, 1132.

Locrine, after his Father Brutes death, was king of Loegria, and Lorde Paramount of the whol Iſland of Britain. In his time, Humber or Humyr, King of the Hunnes entered into Albania, and ſlew Albanact. But Locrine and Camber, to reuenge their brothers death, met in Armes with Humber, neere to an arme of the Sea, that parted Loegria and Albania: where killing him in the fight, they threw his body into the water, which in memory of his name, is yet called Humber. Locrine married Guendolen, Daughter to Corineus, but falling in loue with Eſtrilde, a ſtrange Lady in King Humbers Campe: hee reiected his wife, which cauſed her to raiſe an army againſte him. In triall of that fight, Locrine was ſlaine, and Guendolen drowned Eſtrilde, with her Daughter Sabrine, or Hauren, in the Riuer of Seuerne, ſo called after her name. Locrine raigned twenty yeares, and left a Sonne, named Madan.

The death of Albanact

The death of k. Locrine

Madan, ſonne of Locrine and Guendolen, began his raigne ouer the Britons, an. mundi, 2909 He vſed great tyranny among his people, & builded Madancaiſtre, now called Dancaſter. Hauing ruled this land 40. yeares, hee was deuoured of Wolues & other wild beaſts, as he was abroad in hunting. He left 2. ſons, Mempricius & Manlius.

Madan deuoured by Wolues.

Mem-

2949 Mempricius, eldeſt ſonne of Madan, ſucceeded his Father, and ſlew his Brother Manlius, for better confirmation of his gouernement. He fell into vnlawfull luſting after women, ſo that hee forced his peoples wiues and daughters: and albeit he had a wife and many Concubines, yet he vſed the abhominable ſinne of Sodome. So that becomming hatefull both to God and man, being one day loſt of his people, as he was hunting, hee (as his father) was eaten of wilde beaſtes, after he had raigned 20. yeares.

Mempricius deuoured by wild beaſts.

2969 Ebranke, ſonne of Mempricius by his lawfull wife, ſucceeded in rule ouer the Britons. Hee had one and twenty wiues, on whom he begat twenty Sonnes, and thirty Daughters. He was the firſt Prince of this Land, that euer inuaded Gallia, now called France, from whence he returned with great riches and triumph. Hee builded the Citty of Caerbranke nowe called Yorke, about the 14. yeare of his raigne: & in Albania or Scotland, hee builded alſo the Caſtle of Maidens, and the Cittie of Alclud. He gouerned Brittain very nobly forty yeares, and lieth buried at Caerbranke or Yorke.

The building of York

3009 Brute Tarianlas, or Greeneſhield, Sonne of Ebranke, ſucceeded his Father in the regiment of Brittaine. Hee ſought to bring all Gallia vnder his ſubiection, and (ſome do auouch) that hee performed it, albeit Brinchild gaue him a great foile in Henault. He raigned twelue yeares, and was buried by his father at Yorke.

3021 Leill, the ſonne of Brute Greenſhield, raigned after

after his Father. He builded the Citty called Caerleil, that is to ſay, Leill his Citty, or the Citty of Leill, and repaired alſo Carleon, now called Cheſter, which is ſaide to bee built before Brutes entrance into this land, by a Gyant named Leon Gauer. Leill raigned 25. yeares, and was buried at Carleill. The building of Carleill.

Lud, or Ludhurdibras, the Son of Leill, ruled Britaine after his Father. He builded the Citty of Kaerkin, now called Canterbury; the Citty of Caerguent, now called Wincheſter, and Mount Paladour, now cald Shaftsbury: Aquila, a Prophet or Bardh of the Britiſh nation, wrote diuers Prophecies concerning the building of Shaftsbury. Lud raigned 29. yeares, and was buryed at Canterbury. 3046. The building of Caterbury, Wincheſter and Shaftsbury.

Baldus, or Bladus, ſon of Lud-hurdibras, ſucceeded his Father in the rule of Brittaine. Hee was ſkilfull in the Sciences of Aſtronomy and Nigromancy: he builded the Citty of Caerbran, now called Bathe, and made there hot Bathes; though William of Malmsbury is of ỹ mind that Iulius Cæſar made thoſe baths: which cannot bee ſo, becauſe Iulius Cæſar neuer went ſo farre that way into the Land. This Bladud was ſo proud of his art, that he would nedes preſume to fly in the aire: but hee fell on the Temple of Apollo in Troy-nouant, and was there torne in pieces, hauing raigned twenty yeares. 3085. The building of Bath. 3105.

Leir, the Son of Bladud, followed his Father in Britaines gouernment, being a Prince of moſt Noble Nature, and gouerned his Subiectes very

The building of Leircester, on the Riuer of Sore.

royally. He builded the Towne of Caerleir, now called Leircester. And because the History of his three Daughters, Gonorill, Regan, & Cordeilla, with their seuerall marriages to Henuinus, duke of Cornewall, Maglanus, Duke of Albania, and Agauippus prince of Gallia, is very wel knowen, and all the fortunes thereto belonging; I am the easier induced to passe it ouer, with all the troubles happening to King Leir, through his owne weaknesse. Leir raigned forty yeares, and was buried at Leircester.

3155

Cordeilla, youngest daughter to K. Leir, succeeded as Queen and Gouernesse of Britain; but her two Nephewes, Cunedagius and Morgan, sons to hir, as vnkind Sisters, made short hir time of gouernment, after the decease of her Husband Aganippus. For they imprisoning her, and shee being a Lady of vnconquerable courage: greefe, and despaire of liberty, made her there to slay her selfe, after she had ruled fiue yeares.

3170

Britaine deuided the second time

Cunedagius and Morgan, deuided the whole land betweene them, after Cordeillas death. But enuy and couetous desire in either, to rule alone, raised them in armes against each other, & Morgan was slaine in Cambria by Cunedagius, and the place of his death is yet called Glan-Morgan, Morgans land, he not hauing raigned aboue two yeares with his Brother: who afterward builded three temples, one to Mars, at Perth in Scotland, another to Mercury, at Bangor in Cambria, and the third to Apollo in Cornwall. He raigned 33. yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

Cunedagius builded 3. Temples.

Riual-

Riuallus, Son of Cunedagius, next ruled Britaine, in whoſe time it rained blood 3. daies together, which blood engendered ſuch multitudes of Horſeflies, that many people were ſtung to death by them. In his time was the City of Rome builded: he raigned 46. years, & was buried at York. 3203.

The building of Rome.

Gurguſtius, ſon of Riuallus, raigned 37. years. 3249

Syſillius, or Cecilius, Brother of Gurguſtius, 49. yeares. 3287

Iago, or Lago, Cozin to Gurguſtius, twentie eight yeares. 3336

Kinimacus, or Kinmarus, Son of Siſillius, 54. yeares. 3364

Corbodug, Son of Kinimacus, 43. yeares, or (by ſome) 62. yeares. 3418

Ferrex and Porrex, Sons of Gorbodug, raigned ioyntly, till ambition deuided them, & Ferrex being ſlaine in battaile, the Mother of them both wrought (afterward) the death of Porrex. After which, great troubles endured for the ſpace of fifty yeares, for the Sole-Monarchie of this land became then a Pentarchie, as deuided betwixt fiue Kinges or Rulers: And hers ended the line of Brute. 3476.

The Pentarchy of fiue Kings.

The Pentarchy.

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Rudacus. | King of | Cambria or Wales. |
| 2. Cloton. | | Cornewall. |
| 3. Pinnor. | | Loegria. |
| 4. Staterus. | | Albania. |
| 5. Yewan, or Owen. | | Northumberland. |

3529 Mulmutius Dunwallo, the Sonne of Cloton, who was allowed for most rightfull Heire, hee succeeded as Sole-Monarch of Britaine, after his Father. This Mulmutius builded a Temple in Troy-nouant, cald ỳ Temple of Peace, which some do hold to be that ancient monument, called Blackwell-Hall. He builded also two Townes, Malmsbury and the Vies, and was the first king that was crowned with a Crowne of Gold. He made diuers good Lawes, which long time after were called Mulmutius lawes, being turned out of British into Latine, by Gildas Priscus, & (long time after) translated out of Latine into English, by Alfred K. of England, and mingled among his statutes. He began to make the foure great high waies of Britain, and gaue priueledges to Temples, Ploughes, Citties, & high waies leading to them, so that whosoeuer fled to them, should bee in safety from bodily harme, and thence he might depart without preiudice to his person. In regard that he was the first king crowned with a golden Crowne, most writers giue him the name of the first King of Britaine. And among his other ordinances, he first appointed weights and measures whereby men should buy and sel, and deuised very seuere punishments for Theft. He raigned 40 yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

The buil-ding of Blackwell hall.

Malmsbury and the vies builded.

Mulmutius Lawes.

The 4 high waies of England.

The begin-ning of san-ctuary.

Waights & measures to buy and sell by.

3574 Brennus and Belinus, the Sonnes of Mulmutius, had (in their Fathers life time) the Land once more deuided betweene them: Belinus enioying Loegria, Wales, & Cornwall: and Brennus all the Countries ouer and beyonde Humber.

Britaine a-gaine diui-ded.

ber. But when Brennus grew couetous to exceed his portion, and ſought to compaſſe it by forraine aſſiſtance, he was enforced to flight, and Belinus quietly ſeated in the whole poſſeſſion. Then finiſhed he the foure high-waies of Britaine, which his Father had begunne, which were called, the Foſſe, Watling-ſtreete, Erming-ſtreete, and Hiknel-ſtreete, confirming to them the priuileges which his Father had formerly granted. He builded the Hauen called Belines-gate, and a Caſtle alſo Eaſt-ward from that Gate, called (long time after) Belines Caſtel, but is the ſame, which we now call the Tower of London: Hee raigned twenty fiue yeares, and was buried in Troy-nouant.

The names of the foure high wayes of England.

Belines-gate.

The building of the Tower of London.

Gurguintus, the Son of Belinus, ſucceeded in Britaine after his Father. He ſubdued Denmark, and made them pay tribute to Brittaine: In his daies was the Towne of Cambridge, with the Vniuerſity, firſt founded by Cantaber a Spanyard, according to Caius. Hee raigned 19. yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant. 3506

The foundation of Cambridge.

Guintholinus Sonne to Gurguintus, raigned after his Father, beeing marryed to a vertuous Lady, named Mertia, who deuiſed certaine Lawes, which afterward were tearmed Mercian Lawes. He ruled 27. yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant. 3614

Sicilus, Sonne to Guintholinus, raigned after his Father, albeit hee was then but ſeauen yeares old, but his Mother Mertia had both the gouernment of his perſon, and of the Realme,

in which time shee deuised those Lawes before mentioned. It is saide, that then the Picts arriued in Brittaine, and possessed those partes, which now are the Marches of England and Scotland: hee raigned seauen yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

The arriual of the Picts.

3663. Kimarus, Sonne of Sicilius, raigned three yeares.

3669 Elanius, Sonne of Kimarus, raigned seauen yeares.

3670 Morindus, Bastard Son of Elanius; In his time a came a wonderful Monster out of the Irish Seas, that destroyed many people, and the King in fighting with the said monster, was deuoured by him: hauing raigned fiue yeares.

3676 Gorbouianus, first Sonne of Morindus, who builded the town of Grantham, raigned 10. years.

3686 Archigallus, Elidurus, Vigenius, and Peridurus, being all likewise the Sonnes of Morindus, raigned seuerally in Brittaine, by great contentions, all their times scarcely reaching to 27. years, yet Elidurus was crowned King three times, ech after other. But no sooner died Elidurus (a King of most milde and princely nature) but there passed aboue 185. yeares, betweene the said Elidurus, and the beginning of King Luds raigne, in which time there raigned 33. Kinges: of whose names and rule, Authors doe so disagree, that I passe them ouer, and come to King Helie, who was the last of those 33. Kings, who gaue name to the Isle of Elie, builded a goodly pallace there, with reparations of the Sluces, Ditches, & Cau-

33. Kinges betwixt Elidurus and Lud.

The Isle of Ely.

sies,

ſles about the Iſle, for conuayance away of the water, yet he raigned not fully a yeare.

Lud, eldeſt ſon to King Hely, ſucceeded in Britaines gouernment. He enclosed Troy-nouant with a Wall made of lime and ſtone, and fortifies with diuers faire townes; building alſo a gate in the weſt part of the wall, which he cald Ludsgate. He erected likewiſe a goodly Pallace, ſomewhat neere to Luds-gate, which is now the Byſhop of Londons Pallace, and (in meere affection to the Citty) hee altered the name thereof from Troy-nouant, & called it Caer-Lud, that is Luds Towne, ſince when, corruption hath tearmed it London. K. Lud raigned 11. yeares, & was buried neere Lud-gate. He left two ſons, named Androgeus & Tenancius, whoſe minority in yeares made them vncapable of gouernment. 3805

Luds-gate.

Troy-nouant altered to Luds Towne.

Caſſibalme, Brother to K. Lud, was admitted King of Britaine, or rather Ruler and Protector of the Land, during his Nephewes nonage. In the 8. yeare of his raigne, Iulius Cæſar (with his Romans) came into Britain, wher being wearied (at firſt) with a ſharp battell, & (after that) his nauy well-neere deſtroyed by a ſudden tempeſt; hee returned back into Gallia or France. But ỹ nert ſpring (being the year before Chriſt 51.) he croſſed the ſeas againe with a greater army, and compelled Caſſibelane to conſent, that Britraine ſhould become tributary to the Romains. Then raigned foure Kings in Kent, Cingetorix, Taximagulus, Caruilius, & Segonax, all whoſe power could not withſtand Cæſar: whoſe prevailing thus in Britaine,

3508

The Romãs comming into Britain with Cæſar.

Four Kings in Kent.

raine, was Anno mundi, 3913. and after Brute, 1060. Cassibelane raigned 17. yeares.

3921 Tenantius, Luds youngest Sonne, succéeded as lawfull King of Brittaine, because his Brother Androgeus had assisted Cæsar, against Cassibelane: He raigned 23. years, and was buried at London.

3944 Kymbeline, or Cimbeline, Son to Tenantius, succeeded after his Fathers decease. In his time The birth of Iesus Christ was the Sauiour of the World, our Lord Iesus Christ, borne of the euer-blessed virgine Marie: Kymbeline raigned 35. yeares.

The year of Christ 17 Guiderius slaine at Portchester. Guiderius, eldest Sonne to Kymbaline, was King of Britaine, in the yeare of our Lorde after his incarnation 17. Hee, iudging the Romaines tribute to bee vniust, denied to pay it. This Guiderius was slaine at Portchester, valiantly resisting against Claudius & his Romains, where one Hamo, who was on the Romans side, attired himselfe like a Britain, changed his shield and armor, and so entring the thickest of the British host, came at last where the K. was, and so slew him. But Aruiragus, Brother to Guiderius, perceiuing this villainy, caused himself presently to be clad in the kings coat, armor, and other furniture, whereby the Kings death was scarcely discerned. He renewed the fight with such vndaunted courage, ỹ Claudius was beat backe to his ships, & Hamo to the next adioyning Woods, whether Aruiragus pursued him, and slew him ere he could get off the hauen, casting him piece-meal into the sea, which Hauen (in memory of his name) was euer after called

called Hamans Hauen, afterward by corruption) Hampton Hauen, and now (at this day) commonly called Southampton. Guiderius raigned 23. or (after others) 29. yeares.

How Southampton became ſo named.

Aruiragus, youngeſt Sonne to Kymbeline, ſucceeded his Brother, as King of Brittaine. In his time, Veſpaſian came into Britaine, landing at Sandwich or Richborough. Alſo, about the yeare of Chriſt, 53. and while this Aruiragus raigned, Ioſeph of Arimathia was ſent by Phillip the Apoſtle into Brittain: and one Simon Zelotes came then thether alſo. Then began Brittaine to be gouerned by Romaine Lieutenantes and Treaſurers. Aruiragus raigned 28. yeares, dyed in the yeare of Grace, 73. and was buried at Gloceſter.

46

Ioſeph of Arimathia came into Brittaine.

Britain gouerned by Romayne Deputies.

Marius, ſonne of Aruiragus, ſucceeded his father in the State, and then came the Picts, with Roderick their King, into this land: but Roderick was ſlaine by Marius, and his people vanquiſhed. In memory of which victory againſt the Picts, Marius erected a Stone, where the battell was fought, whereon was engragen Marij victoria. The Stone was ſet vppon Staneſmoore, and the whole Country thereabout, taking name of this Marius, was calo Weſtmaria, now Weſtmerland. Marius raigned 53. yeares, and was buried at Carleill.

73

The Pictes comming into Britain

Weſtmaria, Weſtmerland.

Coilus, Sone of Marius, was (after his Fathers death) King of Britaine, hauing bin educated among the Romaines, which made him pay them the tribute all the time of his raigne. Hee builded

125

Colchester builded.

builded the Towne of Colichester in Essex, now called Colchester: he raigned 55. yeares, departed this life at Yorke, and lieth there buried, as some say, but others, at Coilchester.

Lucius, sonne of Coilus, succeeded King after his Father, being a very godlye and vertuous Prince. And because since the comming of Ioseph of Arimathia into the land, there was much talke about Christ, and Holy Religion, which many had begun to embrace, he sent to Pope Eleutherius, that hee would send some more learned men to him, whereby both he and his might fully be instructed in the faith of Christ. Eleutherius sent vnto him Dunianus and Faganus (by some called Fugatius and Damianus) two worthy learned Clearkes, who at their comming, converted the King and his people from Paganisme. There were in those dayes (within the bounds of Britaine) 28. Flamines, and 3. Archflamines, that were as Bishoppes and Arch-bishoppes of the Pagan Religion: in whose place King Lucius appointed the 28. Bishoppes, and three Arch-Bishops of Christian Religion. One of which Arch-bishops held his See at London, another at Yorke, and the thirde at Caerleon Arswike in Glaumorganshire. To the Arch-bishop of London was subiect Cornewall, and all the middle part of England, euen vnto Humber. To the Arch-Bishoppe of Yorke, all the North parts of Britaine, from the River of Humber, to the furthest parts of Scotland. And to the Arch-Bishop of Caerleon, was subiect all Wales, with-

161

Britain converted to the Christian faith.

Arch-bishops & Bishops appointed in Britaine.

in

in which countrey were then ſeauen Byſhoppes, where now there are but foure. This King Lucius is ſaide to builde the Church of Saint Peter at VVeſtminſter, and Saint Peters Church of Cornehill in London. This Lucius raigned 12. yeares, and dying without iſſue, the Brittaines fell at variance, by which meanes, the Romaine Lieutenants go on againe with their Gouernement, the Emperor Adrian comming in perſon into Britain, & then the wal of Adrian was built, from the mouth of Tine, to the Water of Eske, containing thirty miles in length. Adrian hauing quieted all diſturbances in Britain, Lollius, Vrbicus, Calphurnius Agricola, Vlpius Marcellus, Pertinax, Clodius Albinus and Heraclitus, ſucceeded eath other as Lieutenantes (ouer the Brittaines) for the Romaines, which manner of Gouernement ſo continued, to the yeare of our Lord, 207.

S. Peters Churches at Weſtminſter & London in Corne-hill

The Wall of Adrian.

Seuerus, Emperor of Rome, did now beginne his rule in Britaine, cauſing a Trench to bee caſt from Sea to Sea. Hee raigned not fullye fiue yeares, and was buried at Yorke. His Sonnes Geta and Baſſianus contended for the Gouernment, Geta was ſlaine in battell, and Baſſianus ruled fiue yeares: but hee was likewiſe ſlaine by one Caranſius, a Britaine of vnknowne Byrth, whom the Britaines accepted as their King. till Alectus was ſent from Rome with his Legions of Souldiors, who conquered Caranſius in field, and ſlewe him.

207

A Trench caſt in Brittaine from ſea to ſea.

Aeſclepio-

Aesclepiodotus, Duke of Cornwall, preuayling in fight against Alectus, and Liuius Gallus, or Wallus, whom (when he had slaine, he threw into a Brooke, which toke name of him, and was called Wallus Brooke, nowe Walbrooke) was admitted to raigne ouer the Britaines. And discord being afterward raised, betweene the King, and one Coell, Earle of Colchester, they met in a fielde of battaile, where Asclepiodotus was slaine, after he had raigned thirty yeares. At this time was Britaine in cruell persecution, vnder the bloody tyrants Diocletian and Maximus; Alban, a Cittizen of Werlamchester, being the first that suffered martirdome in Britaine, hee being conuerted to Christian faith by zealous Amphibilaus, and because he would not sacrifice to their false Gods, he was beheaded on the top of the hill ouer-against VVerlamchester, where a Church and Monastery was builded in memory of hys martyrdom, and VVerlamchester being destroyed, the place toke name of him, and is to this day called S. Albanes. A number of Christians were likewise assembled at another place, to heare the word of life preached by that vertuous man Amphibilaus, but they were all there slaine by the Pagans, and the place (in their memory) named Lichfield, The fielde of dead bodies. It is also recorded, that in the dayes of these Tyrants, Diocletian and Maximus, of godly men and Women, professing the faith of Iesus Christe, there were martired in sundry place, aboue 17000.

Wallus Brooke, Walbrook.

The martirdome of S. Alban.

Werlamchester, S. Albanes.

*Iohn Rossus Warwicens. in lib. de wigorn. Epis.*

Lichfielde, why it was so called.

261

Coell, Earle of Colchester, began his rule ouer the

the Britaines, in An. Dom. 262. But Conſtantius being ſent from Rome to ſuppreſſe him, hee couenanted to pay the tribute, & gaue his daughter Helena (a Noble and learned Lady) in mariage to Conſtantius. King Coell raigned 27. yeares, and is ſaid to be buried at Colcheſter, or rather at Gloceſter.

Conſtantius married Helena, daughter to King Coell.

Conſtantius ſucceeded in the rule of Britain, after Coell, and had by his wife Helena a Sonne, named Conſtantine, that was afterwarde Emperor, and ſir-named Conſtantine the Great. In this Conſtantius dayes, Amphibliaus was apprehended, and ſuffered martyrdome at Redburne, neere to VVerlamcheſter, fiftene yeares after the death of S. Alban: Conſtantius raigned eleuen yeares.

289

The martirdome of Amphibilaus.

Conſtantine, ſonne of Conſtantius and Helena, and ſir named the Great, was King after his Father, and created Emperor in Britaine. His Mother Queene Helena went to Ieruſalē, where ſhe found the Croſſe that our Sauiour was crucified on, and the Nailes, which ſhee gaue to her Sonne Conſtantine; who did ſet one of them in the Creſt of his Helmet, another in the bridle of his horſe, and the third he threw into the Sea, to aſſwage a rough Tempeſt.

306

Q. Helena found the Croſſe and the Nailes.

Octauius or Octauian, beganne his raigne ouer the Britaines in Anno 329. being called Duke of VVindſore. He aſſembled a great companye of people, and fought with the Gouernours of the Land which Conſtantine had heere appoynted: yet was he expelled by Traherne into Norway, and

329

Octauius put to flight by Traherne

and Traherne being slaine by treason afterward, Octauius sent Maximianus, Cosin to the Emperor Constantine, to whom he gaue his daughter in marriage. Octauius raigned 54. years. About this time, the Empresse Helena, Mother to Constantine, for loue she bare to Colchester and London, did newly engirt them both with Walles rounde about, causing great Bricke and huge Tyles to be purposely therefore made, which are yet to be seene in the Towne and Castle of Colchester.

Helena walleth London & Colchester.

383 Maximianus, or Maximus, vsurped in Brittaine the Title of the Empyre, and assembling all the men of Warre, and youth of the Realme, he went into France, expelled the French-men out of Armorica, and placed Brittaines there vnder Conon Meridoc, Duke of Cornewall, whereon it was euer after called Britayne the Lesse. This Maximus or Maximianus, hauing slayne the Emperour Gratian, at Lyons in France, was slaine himselfe at Aquileia, by the Emperor Theodosius, after he had gouerned the Britaines eight yeares.

Litle Britain

390 Gratian, a Britaine, taking on him selfe the Rule of Britaine, for his stearne and rough Gouernement was quickely slaine. About this time, did the Saxons first enter into this Lande, and the Romain Empyre greatly declining, their rule in this kingdome, and payment of Tribute (which hadde continued for the space of foure hundered eighty three yeares) nowe quite ceased.

The Saxons first entrance into Britaine.

Con-

Conſtantinus, Brother of Aldroenus, King of little Brittaine, at the ſute of the Arche-Byſhoppe of London, in Name of all the Brittaines, accepted the Gouernment of this Lande, and was Crowned at Ciceſter. Hee had three Sonnes, Conſtantius (who was made a Monk) Aurelius Ambroſius, and Vter, Sur-named Pendragon. This Conſtantinus was Trayterouſly ſlayne in his Chamber, by a Pict, and then one Vortiger, a Britaine, a man of great power amongeſt the Britaines, tooke Conſtantius out of the Abbey of Wincheſter, and Crowned him King. But cauſing him ſoone after to bee murdered, and the murderers ſtrangled, leaſt hee ſhould bee diſcouered, hee got himſelfe to bee choſen King, Aurelius Ambroſius, and Vter Pendragon, (Brethren to the murdered king) being glad to flye into Brittaine Armorica. Hengiſt the Saxon, and his Brother Horſſus, bringing great ſtore of Saxons into the Realme, by marrying his Daughter Rowen to Vortiger, greiue into no meane fauour, filling ſtill the Lande with three ſortes of Germaine people, (to witte:) Saxons, Iutes, and Angles, who at length, made ſuch ſpoyle and hauocke of the Brittaines, that from Sea to Sea, the whole Realme, was moſt pittifully waſted and ruined: the Britaines beeing enforced for to flye out of theyr owne Countrey, and the Saxons enioyed their poſſeſſions. Vortiger was depoſed, and Vortimer his Sonne crowned King, who had foure principall Battailes with the Saxons, and

Conſtantinus crownd at Ciceſter.

Hengiſt the Saxon & his Brother Horſus.

Vortiger depoſed, & Vortimer Crowned.

and prevailed very worthily against them, til (by the meanes of Rowen, Daughter to Hengist) Vortimer was poysoned after hee had gouerned the Britaines seauen yeares and odde moneths. Then was Vortiger restored to his kingdom againe, and Hengist performed his bloody treachery on Salisbury Plaine, on a May day, murdering 460. Noble Britaines with Knives, which he and his Saxons had closely hid in their Pockets. There was Vortiger taken prisoner, and could not gaine his liberty, till hee had graunted Hengist three Prouinces or Countreyes of his kingdome, to wit, Kent and Essex, or (as some write) Sussex, where the South Saxons afterwarde inhabited, and Norffolke and Suffolke, where the East-Angles planted themselues. At this time was the Heptarchie or seauen kingdomes of this Lande, Aurelius and his Brother Vter, returned out of Brittaine Armorica, with a powerfull Army, and marching into VVales against Vortiger, assayled him in his Castle, which they consumed with fire, where perrished Vortiger, and all else there with him.

The Britain Nobles murdered on Salisbury plaine.

The death of Vortiger.

481.

Aurelius Ambrose was made King of Britain, anno 481. He gaue Hengist battaile, who flying for safety, was taken by Edoll Earle of Chester, & beheaded at Conningsborow. In memory of the Britaines slaughter on Salisbury plain, stones were fetcht out of Ireland, and set vp in the same place, and called to this day Stone-heng. Aurelius raigned nineteene yeares, was poysoned by a counterfeit Monk, and buried at Stone-heng.

The death of Hengist.

Stone-heng

Vter

Vter, ſur-named Pendragon, becauſe Merlin likened him to a Dragons heade, which (at his birth) marualouſly appeared in the firmament, at the corner of a blazing Starre. Hs loued fayre Igrine, wife to Gorlois Duke of Cornwall, on whom he begot the valiant Prince Arthur. Vter raigned 18. yeares, and was buried by his Brother at Stone-heng. 500

The birth of Arthur.

Arthur, Sonne of Vter Pendragon, ſucceeded his Father in the kingdome. Hee fought twelue battailes againſt the Saxons, returning Conqueror in euery one of them: yet coulde he not driue them out of the land, but ſtill they poſſeſſed Kent, Sutherie and Norfolke. He inſtituted the order of the round Table, was deadly wounded in a battell which he fought with his cozen Mordred; and hauing raigned 26. yeares, was buryed at Glaſtenbury betweene two Pillers, where hys body was afterward found, in the dayes of King Henry the ſecond, about the yeare, 1191. 516

Arthur had 12. battailes againſt the Saxons.

Conſtantine, Cozen to Arthur, and Sonne of Cador, Duke of Cornewall, ſucceeded next in ꝟ gouernement: But Aurelius Conan warred againſt him, and ſlew him in the fielde, when hee had raigned foure yeares, and was buryed at Stone-heng. 542

Aurelius Conan, was next King of Britaine, albeit his Vncle had moſt right thereto, whom he impriſoned, and cruelly murdred his two ſons: after which himſelfe liued not long, but died before he had raigned two yeares. 546

Conan murdered his Nephewes.

Vortiporus raigned after his Father Aurelius 548

Conan foure yeares, and left no issue to succeede him in the kingdome.

580 Malgo, Nephew of Aurelius Conan, raigned fiue yeares.

Careticus ruled Britain three yeares, and the English and Saxon Kings (remouing the Britaines) enlarged the bounds of their owne Dominions: so that beside the Kinges of Britayne, there raigned eight Kings of the English & Saxons, as Ethelbert in Kent, Ciſſa in Suſſex, Ceauline in Weſtſex, Creda or Crida in Mercia, Erkenwine in Eſſex, Titila in East-Angles, Ella in Deira, and Alfred in Bernitia. The Brittaines loſt poſſeſſion of the more part of their auncient ſeats, and the faith of Chriſt was thereby greatly decayed, for the Churches were deſtroyed, and the Arch-Byſhoppes of Caerleon Arſwike, London and Yorke, withdrew (together with their Cleargie) into the Mountaines and Woodes in Wales. Now was Auguſtine the Monke, and others ſent to preach the Chriſtian faith in Britaine, and was made Arch-byſhop of Britaine, for the Engliſh Nation, and King Ethelbert (with his people of Kent) were conuerted to the Chriſtian faith.

Eight kings of the Engliſh & Saxons.

The Britains looſe their ancient ſeats

Auguſtine the Monke ſent into Britaine.

613 Cadwan was elected King of the Britaines in Anno 613. For (after Careticus) they had remained (for about the ſpace of 24. years) without any eſpeciall Gouernor, being led by ſundry Rulers: this Cadwan had before bin Duke or Ruler of North-wales. He gouerned two and twentie yeares.

The Britains 24. yeares without a King.

Cad-

Cadwallo or Cadwalline, Sonne of Cadwan, succæded as King of the Britaines, after his Father. He raigned 48. yeares, and being dead, his body was balmed with ſweete confections, and put into a Brazen Image, by meruailous Arte melted and cast, which Image was also mounted on a goodly brazen horſe, and ſo ſet vp aloft on the Weſt gate of London, called Ludgate, in token of his Conqueſts, and for a terror to the Saxons. The Church of Saint Martine vnder the ſame Gate, was then alſo builded by the Britaines. 635

S. Martins at Ludgate built.

Cadwallader, Sonne of Cadwallo, succæded him in the Britaines gouernment, whoſe raygne laſted but three yeares, for hee was conſtrayned (with his people) to forſake their Natiue Countrey, and by Sea to flye ouer into Britaine Armorica, thereſto ſeeke releaſe for their languiſhing bodies. In this Cadwallader ended the line and gouernment of the Britains, now called Welchmen, which name they tooke of their Leader Wallo or Gallo, or elſe of a Queen of Wales, called Gales or Wales. The Britaines had the greater part of this Lande in rule (reckoning from Brute to this time) 1822. yeares, and nowe the whole Dominion of the Lande, came to the Saxons. 673

The ending of the Brytaines Gouernment.

Egbert, the Son of Alcmund, a petty Prince, the ſon of Offa, of the bloude of Ina, King of the Weſt-Saxons, hauing bin baniſhed by k. Brightrick into France; after Brightricks death, was repealed home, and ſuccæded as the ſeauentæenth King of the Weſt-Saxons. He ſubdued the Corniſhmen, 800

The victories of King Egbert.

nishmen, and seuearely punished the vnquyet Welch-men. Bernulfe King of Mercia, was ouerthrowne by him, and Kent, Essex, Southrie, and Sussex, with their seuerall Kings, al brought vnder his obeysance, and the kingdome of Northumberland yeelded vnto him. Then subdued he North-wales, and tooke the Citty of Chester. Afterward, assembling a Counsell at Winchester, he was there crowned King and Soueraign Lord of the whole land: which he chaunged from the name of Britaine, and from the seuerall appellations of the Heptarchie, and called it Englelond, or Angles-land, that is to say, The Englishmens Land, wherof in Latine it was termed Anglia, a name taken from the Angles, whych, of the three people then possessing it, to wit, the Iutes, Saxons, and Angles (being indede all but one Nation) were the most valiaunt and populous. In his time was the first inuasion of the Danes, and hee had an ouerthrowe by them at Carrum: which successe causing them to aduenture the like attempt the yeare following, landing their Fleet in Wales, and ioyning with the Welch-men, they were ouerthrowne by K. Egbert, at a place called Hengistenton, and a great number of them slaine. This glorious Prince, hauing greatly enlarged the bounds of his kingdome, and raigned seauen and thirtie yeares, died, and was verie Royally buried at Winchester.

The first nomination of England, by K. Egbert.

The first inuasion of the Danes.

837. Ethelwolph, eldest sonne to the most victorious King Egbert, succeeded next in the kingdom

of

of England. All the time of his raigne, hee was grieuously troubled with the Danes inuasions; but he had a worthy victory ouer them at Ockley in Southrey, such as the like hath hardly beene heard of in the English Dominions. He deuided the kingdom betweene himself, & his son Ethelbald, & hauing raigned twenty yeares, was honourably buried in the Cathedrall Church at Winchester. 857

A worthie victory ouer the Danes

Ethelbald succeeded his Father Ethelwolphe by inheritance, but to his second sonne Ethelbert (in his life time) he had giuen the kingdomes of Kent and Essex, which he had conquered. This Ethelbald presumed to defile his Fathers bedde, and maried his Step-mother Iudith: he raygned fiue yeares, and dying, was buried at Shirbourn.

Ethelbald defiled his fathers bed.

Ethelbert, second sonne of King Ethelwolph, succeeded after his Brother Ethelbald in the regiment. This Ethelbert droue the Danes out of Kent, many times ouerthrew them, & put them to flight. He raigned fiue yeares, and was buryed by his Brother Ethelbald at Shirbourne. 862.

Ethelred, third Sonne to King Ethelwolph, raigned next after his Brother Ethelbert. Hee fought nine battails with the Danes in one year, bearing still the victory away with him; but dissention among the Saxon Kinges, furthered the Danes in conquest of their kingdomes. Ethelred was slaine in fight with the Danes, hauing raigned fiue yeares, and was buried at Winbourne Abbey. 867

Nine Battails fought with the Danes in one yeare.

Alfred, or Alured, sur-named the Great, yon- 87:

geſt ſonne to Ethelwolph, ſucceeded his Brother in the Kingdome. Hee was very greatly troubled with the Danes, who inuading diuers parts of the Land, did moſt cruelly waſt it: yet had he (in one yeare) ſeuen battailes with them, and ouerthrowing them at length, recouered his kingdome. He builded 3. Monaſteries, one at Edlingſey, afterward called Athelny, neer Taunton in Sommerſet-ſhire; the ſecond at Winchester, called the New Minſter; and the third at Shaftſbury, where his Daughter Ethelgeda was Abbeſſe. But, by perſwaſion of Neote, a famous Learned Monke, he built the Vniuerſity of Oxford, being himſelfe a good Grammarian, Rhetorician, Phyloſopher, Muſitian and Poet, as alſo a moſt perfect Architect. Hee raigned 29. yeares, and ſix monthes, and was buried in hys New-Minſter, at Winchester.

K. Alfred builded 3. Monaſteries

Oxford built by Ki. Alfred.

900

Edward, ſonne to King Alfred, and ſurnamed the Elder, ſucceeded in the kingdome after his Father. Hee ſubdued the Kingdome of the Eaſt-Angles, and ſo enlarged the boundes of his Kingdome, that he had moſt part of Great Britaine vnder his obedience; he built a new Towne at Nottingham, on the South-ſide of Trent, and made a Bridge ouer betweene the old Towne and new. He repayred Mancheſter in Lancaſhyre, (accounted then the Southend of Northumberland) and built a Towne, called (by ancient writers) Thilwall, neere to the Riuer of Mercia, placing therein a Garriſon of Soldiors. Diuer other Townes and Caſtels alſo he builded, as two at Buck-

The East-Angles cõquered by K. Edward

K. Edward a great builder.

Buckingham, on either ſide the Riuer Ouſe, againſt the Danes incurſions, and another at the mouth of Auon: he repayred the Towns of Toceter and Wigmore, and hauing raygned 24. yeares, was buried in the New Minſter or Monaſtery at Wincheſter.

Athelſtane, or Adelſtane, eldeſt Son of King Edward, ſucceeded his Father, and (as his Anceſtors) was crowned at Kingſton on Thames. 924
A great army of the Danes, Scots, and Iriſh, was ouerthrowne by King Athelſtane; Northumberland, Weſtmerland, and Cumberland yelded vnto him. Hee was the firſt of the Engliſh Kinges, that obtained the gouernement of the whole Kingdome, which continued ſo 140. years after, though not without ſome interruption, the Danes (in the meane time) vſurping the Crown by the ſpace of thirty yeares. The Welch & Corniſhmen ware ſubdued by him. He builded two Monaſteries, one at Wilton, in the Dioceſſe of Salisbury, and another at Michelme in Somerſetſhire, founding alſo a Colledge of Prieſts, at S. Edmundſ-bury. There were ſeine famous Monaſteries in this land, but he beautified them either with ſome new piece of building, Jewels, Bookes, or Lands, and cauſed the ſacred Scriptures to be tranſlated out of the moſt pure Fountaine of the Hæbrewes, into the Engliſh Saxon tongue. He raigned 16. yeares, and was buried at Malmesbury.

King Athelſtane the firſt monark of England.

Edmund, Brother to King Athelſtane, ſucceeded next after him, and vanquiſhing the Danes, 940

was afterward vnfortunatly slain, hauing raigned fiue yeares, and was buried at Glastenbury.

946 Eldred or Eadred, Brother to King Edmund, succeeded next in the royall Dignity, being crowned also at Kingstone vpon Thames. Edwin and Edgar, Sonnes to King Edmund, were put by from ruling, in regard of their tender age. Eldred subdued the Northumbers, repayred the Abbey of Abington, built by King Ina, but ruined by the Danes. And hauing raigned nine yeares, was buried in the olde Monasterie at VVinchester.

955 Edwine, eldest Sonne to King Edmund, succeeded his Vnckle Eldred, and was crowned at Kingston. This Edwin was wholly addicted to sensuality and pleasure, banished Dunstane, Abbot of Glastenbury, for reprooving his Rape of Algiua, his neere Kinswoman, euen when hys Lords were sitting in Counsell. He hauing raigned foure yeares, was deprined, and dying with greefe, was buryed in the new Abbey at VVinchester.

959 Edgar, Brother to King Edwine, was annointed and crowned King at Bathe, and afterward at Kingstone. He was a great fauourer of Religious men, and had a Fleete of three thousand and fiue hundered shippes alwayes in readinesse, and sayled therewith (once a yeare) about all great Britaine. Hee had the whole Isle, and all the Kinges thereof in subiection to him, and was rowed vp and downe the Riuer of Dee, by seauen Kings his vassailes: Luduall, one of those Kings,

K. Edgar his fleet of ships

Kings, did pay him a yearly tribute of Wolues. He raigned 16. yeares, and was buried at Glaſtenburie. A tribute of Wolues.

Edward, eldeſt Sonne to King Edgar, ſucceeded his Father, being crowned at Kingſton, but by Counſell of Elfrith, his Step-mother, he was treacherouſly murdered, when hee had raygned three yeares, and was buried at Shaftesbury. 975

Ethelred, or Egelred, ſecond Sonne to King Edgar, was crowned at Kingſtone; but becauſe his comming to the Crown was by his brothers murder, he could neuer obtaine his peoples affection. All the Danes in England (by the command of King Ethelred) were murdered in one night. He raigned 38. yeares, and was buried in Saint Paules Church in London. 979 The Danes murdered in one Night.

Edmund, Son to King Ethelred, and Surnamed Ironſide, was immediately proclaimed K. after his Fathers death; as the Cleargy and Nobility did the like to Canutus, becauſe they hadde ſworne fealty to his Father Swaine, or Sweno: whereon three great battailes were fought betwixt King Edmund and Canutus, & the Danes ouerthrowne at Otford in Kent, beſide the great battell at Aſhdone in Eſſex, neere Saffron walden, where the Engliſhmen were foyled by the Danes, and the Land once againe deuided, betweene Canutus and King Edmund, who was treacherouſly ſlaine at Oxford, hauing raigned but one yeare, and ſome few months, and was buried at Glaſtenbury. 1016 Edmund Ironſide and Canutus both proclaimed Kings.

Canutus the Dane, challenging all England to 1017.

to himselfe, was crowned King in Saint Paules Church in London, and maried Queen Emma, the widdow of king Etheldred: hee raigned xx. yeares, and was buried at Winchester.

1035. Harold, surnamed Harefoot, vsing the power of the Danes in England, inuaded the Realme, while his brother Hardi-kenutus Gouerned in Denmarke. Hee raigned foure yeares, dyed at Oxford, and was buried at Westminster.

1041 Hardikenutus, or Hardy-Canutus, Sonne of king Canutus, and his Queene Emma, obtayning his Fathers Kingdome; sent for his mother from exile. He died with the cup in his hand, as he sat merrily disposed at his Table, in the third yeare of his raigne, and was buried at Winchester. With this Hardy-Canutus, ended the dominion of the Danes in England, who had grieuously oppressed this nation, for the space of 250. yeares.

The ending of the Danes gouerment in England.

1042 Edward, the sonne of Ethelred and Emma, was next crowned king at Winchester, all the Danes being then quite expulsed the land. This Edward was surnamed the Confessor, for hys vertuous life and worthy Lawes: also he is saide to be the first that cured the Disease, called, The Kinges Euill. Hee raigned three and twentie yeares, and was buried at Westminster, which (in his life time) hee had most sumptuously repayred.

The Kinges Euill.

1067 Harold, sonne of Earle Goodwin, toke vpon him the gouernment of the kingdome: but William, Duke of Normandy, came into England with

with a powerfull Army, and (in battell) Harold was ſhot through the braines with an Arrowe, hauing raigned but nine months, and was buried in the Monaſtery of Waltham in Eſſex, by whoſe death, Duke William obtained his Conqueſt of England.

England conquered by D. William.

William, Duke of Normandy, baſe Sonne of Robert, Duke of Normandie, and Nephew to King Edward the Confeſſor, whom he perceiued more addicted to vertue, then policy, and through debility of body not like to liue long: contryued his owne attaining to the crowne of this land, after the deceaſe of the aged King. For hee placed diuers Normans, in the cheefeſt roomes about him while he liued, and when he was dead, leuied an Army of diuers Nations, and therewith pretending the Patronage of England, againſt Harold, Earle Godwins Sonne, who vſurped the Kingdome; firſt fought with him, and ſlewe him at a place now called Battell, in Suſſex, and then tooke the Crowne on him, by election of the Eſtates. Seeking next to barre Titles, he impriſoned Edgar Etheling, the onely true heire of the Saxons bloud, and by means of Ethelbert, Archbiſhop of Hamborow, procured Sweno, King of Denmark (for money) to ceaſe the Danes claime. Hee builded foure ſtrong Caſtles: one, at Nottingham, another at Lincoln, the third at York, and the fourth neere to Haſtings, where he landed at his firſt arriuall in England. Hee deuiſed the Couer le feu Bell, to bee Rung nightly at eight of the clocke, in all Citties, Townes, and Villages,

1067

Duke Williams policy to get the Crowne.

Edgar Etheling, true heire of the Saxons bloud

Rake vp the fire.

villages, for preuention of mighty tumults. He ordained the Tearmes, and that they shoulde be kept foure times in the yeare, and Iudges to sit in seuerall Courtes, for desciding controuersiall matters betwixt party and party, as is vsed vnto this day. He appointed Sheriffes in euery shyre, and Iustices of the peace, to see offenders punnished, and the Countries kept in quiet. He ordained the Court of Exchequer, with the Barons, Clarkes and Officers, thereto belonging, as also the high Court of Chancery, with the Booke then called, The Rowle of Winchester, nowe, The Doomesday Booke, whereby the whole Land was tared, and euery mans estate, and wealth thoroughly knowne. He raigned twenty yeares, ten months, and 26. dayes, and was buried in the Abbey of Saint Stephen, at Caen in Normandy, which he had founded. And this is well worthy memory, that hee being so great a Conqueror, yet after his death, coulde not haue so much ground to bury his dead body, without wronging some other, vntill that (by his Executors) it was bought for him.

The foure Tearmes.

The Exchequer and Court of Chancery.

K. William destitute of a Graue.

1087 William Rufus, second sonne to the Conqueror, by his Fathers appointment succeeded him in the Kingdom, and was crowned at Westminster. Robert, elder Brother to King William, & Duke of Normandy, went with Godfrey Duke of Bullen, and other Christian Princes to the Holy-land, to recouer it from the Sarazins. This King William Rufus, caused new Walles to be builded about the Tower of London, and layed

the

the foundation of Weſtminſter Hall. Hee raigned thirteene yeares, and was ſlain with an Arrow, by one Sir Walter Tyrel, a French knight, in the New Foreſt in Hampſhire, his body being buried at VVincheſter. In which Foreſt, not many yeares before, had ſtoode 36. Parish Churches, diuers faire Townes, Villages, and Hamlets, containing thirty miles in circuite: all which was laide waſt by the Conqueror, the poor inhabitants expelled thence, and it was made a place for wilde beaſtes to liue in. It was ſomewhat ſtrange, that in that very place, the King ſhould bee ſo vnfortunately ſlaine; Richard his Brother blaſted to death, and Henry the Conquerors Nephew, by his eldeſt Sonne Robert, as hee ouer-earneſtly purſued the game, in the the buſhes (like to another Abſolon) ſtraungely ſtrangled to death; vengeaunce from God (as was thought) punniſhing the fathers offence in his poſterity.

The foundation of Weſtminſter Hall.

511

New forreſt in Hampſhire, and ſtrange accidents ther happening.

Henry, ſur-named Beauclerke for his Learning, and youngeſt ſonne to the Conqueror, ſucceeded his Brother King William, & was crowned at VVeſtminſter. Robert, Duke of Normandy, being returned from the Holie-Lande, warred with his Brother Henry, for his right in the crowne of England, and after much contention, being taken and committed Priſoner vnto Cardiffe Caſtle in VVales, after 26. yeares impriſonment, hee there dyed, and was buried at Gloceſter. Maud, King Henries Daughter, was maried to the Emperor Henry: but his other

1100

Robert D. of Normandy.

children.

children, William, Duke of Normandy, his Sister Marie, Countesse of Perch; Richard, Earle of Chester, with his Brother Otwell, Gouernor to Duke William, and the saide Earle of Chester his wife, the Kinges Neece, with diuers others, to the number of 140. persons, beside 50. Marriners, following the king out of Normandie, were all drowned. King Henry raigned 35. years, died in the Forrest of Lyons in Normandie, and was buried in the Abbey of Reading, which he had founded. In this king Henry first of that name, ended the line of ỹ Norman kings, concerning their heires male, who had raigned about 69. yeares: and then began the French, by Title of the heyres generall.

King Henries Children drowned.

1135 Stephen, Earle of Bullen and Mortaigne, son to Stephen Earle of Bloys, by Adela, Daughter to king William the Conquerour, vsurped the crowne from Maud the Empresse, and her young sonne Henry, which caused great Warres betweene him and her, and very miserable times to the people; till by an assembly of the Lordes at Winchester, Articles of peace and agreement were concluded. King Stephen raigned eyghteene yeares, ten moneths, and three and twenty dayes, and was buried in the Abby of Feuersham in Kent.

K. Stephen vsurped the Crowne.

1154 Henry, sur-named Fitz-Empresse, and Shortmantle, succeeded next in the crown of England. He erpelled strangers out of the Land, and had a long and troublesome contention, with Thomas Becket, Arch-Bishop of Canterburie. Hee crow-

Tho. Becket Archbishop of Canterb.

crowned his ſonne Henry, as fellow-King with him, which procured him much molleſtation, by meanes of his Queene, and his other ſonnes. In his time, was the conqueſt of Ireland, Dublin, and Waterford, being won by Earle Strongbow. He had diuers Concubines, but eſpecially faire Rosamond, whom he kept in a Labyrinth at Woodſtock, where ſhe was poyſoned by M. Elianor. King Henry the ſecond raigned 34. yeares, nine months and two dayes, and dying, was buried at Font-Euerard in the Dutchy of Alanſon. In him ended the raigne both of the Normans and French-men, ouer the Realme of England.

Richard, Earle of Poictiers, and ſecond Son to King Henry, was crowned King at Weſtminſter. He went to the Holy-land, and performed many worthy ſeruices there: his brother Iohn (in his abſence) aſpired to rule the whole land, being prouoked thereto by the French king. As King Richard beſiedged the Caſtle of Chalus Cheuerel; he was wounded with an impoyſoned quarrell, ſhot at him by one Barturam de Gurden, or Peter Bazile, whereof he dyed, hauing raigned nine yeares, nine moneths, and odde daies, and was buried at Font-Euerard. 1189

Ki. Richard went to the holy-Land, he was called Cueur-de-Lion.

Iohn, Lord of Ireland, Earle of Mortaign and Gloceſter, & brother to king Richard, was crowned at weſtm. He had long & tedious contentions with his Barons, as alſo with the pope, by whoſe meanes, Lewes the French kinges ſonne, was drawne into the buſineſſe, & had the crowne offe- 1199

red

red him by the Lords, whereon he wrought great spoile in the Land. King Iohn raigned 17. years, six monthes, and 27. dayes, and dying by poyson, was buried at VVorcester.

1216 Henry, third of that name, and eldest Son to King Iohn, succeeded immediately after his Father, albeit he was but nine yeares old: the Barons and French Lewes, being still very molestuous, against whom VVilliam Marshal, Earle of Pembroke, was chiefe Generall of the Kings forces, and preuayled worthily. This King Henry, raigned 56. yeares, and 27. dayes, and was buried at Westminster.

William Marshall, Earle of Pembroke.

1272 Edward, eldest Sonne to King Henrie, and Surnamed Long-shankes, was crowned at Westminster, after his returne home from the Holy Land. This King conquered Wales, and deuided it into Shyres; and banished the Ielves for euer out of England. Hauing raigned 34. yeares, seauen months, and twenty dayes, hee dyed, and was buried at VVestminster.

Wales conquered

1307 Edward of Carnaruon, sonne to King Edward the first, succeeded in the kingdome after his Father. This king did ouermuch affect an Esquire of Gascoigne, called Pierce Gauaston, and dishonoured many of his Lords, to aduance him: as he did the like, by the two Spensers, the Father and Sonne. At length, he was imprisoned by his Barons, with helpe of the Queene and Prince, and then deposed, when he had raigned nineteene yeares, fiue months, and seauenteene dayes.

Piece Gauestон.

Edward

Edward the third, ſon to king Edward the ſe- 1327
cond, was crowned at Weſtminſter in his Fa-
thers life time. Flanders, yeelded themſelues &
all their Townes to King Edward, and, laying
claime to the Crowne of France (in right of his
Mother Queen Iſabell) he entred that land with
a puiſſant army, and quartered the Armes of
France, with his owne of England. He deuiſed
the worthy Order of the Garter: and Prince The Order of the Garter.
Edward, ſurnamed the Blacke Prince (beſide
his famous victories in Fraunce) reſeated Don
Peter king of Caſtile in his kingdom, which his
baſtard Brother Henrie vſurped againſt him. K.
Edward the third raigned fifty yeares, and fiue
monethes, and dying at Sheene, was buried at
Weſtminſter.

Richard, ſecond of that name, ſon to Edward 1377.
the Blacke Prince, being about eleauen yeares
old, ſucceeded after his Grand-father King Ed-
ward; the Duke of Lancaſter, and the Earle of
Cambridge, being Protectors of the yong kings
perſon. The rebellion of Iacke Straw, and Wat Iack Straw, & his rebels
Tyler, with the Eſſex and Kentiſhmen then hap-
ned, and the worthy act of William Walworth,
Lord Maior of London, in arreſting the traitor.
Great ſtormes aroſe betweene the king and hys
Nobles, becauſe he had let to Farme the realme
of England, to Lords that abuſed the king, and
much miſgouerned him, ſending abroad blanke
Charters, &c. Whereupon, in the end, Articles Articles againſt the King.
were framed againſt the king, and he committed
to the Tower of London: Henrie, ſurnamed

Bullingbrooke, ſonne to Iohn of Gaunt, being proclaimed king, and Richard quite depryued, when he had raigned 22. yeares, three months, & nine dayes. Dying, hee was buried at Langley.

1399. Henry Plantagenet, borne at Bullingbroke, in the County of Lincolne, beeing Coſin-Germaine to king Richard the ſecond, ſucceeded next by Richards depriuation, and entailed the crown to him and his heires. Owen Glendoure, with his VVelchmen, entered into Rebellion againſt the king, and did put him in great daunger of his life by Treaſon, by conueying a Caltrop into his bed. This king Henry raigned 13. yeares, and odde months, and was buried at Canterburie, with great ſolemnity.

The Crown entailed.

1413 Henry of Monmouth, ſonne and heire to king Henry the fourth, ſucceeded after his father. Hee vrged his title to France, and fought the famous battell at Agin-court. Hee raigned nine yeares, ſixe months, and foure daies, and dying at Boys de Vinciennes in France, was buried at Weſtminſter.

The battell of Agin-court.

1422 Henry of windſore, being but nine moneths olde, did yet ſucceed in his lawfull right. He was alſo crowned king of France at Paris, and had his time troubled with many grieuous combuſtions both abroad and at home, as alſo diuers foughten battailes, to the effuſion of much blood. He raigned 38. yeares, ſixe months, and foure daies, and was buried firſt at Chertſey, and afterwarde remoued to windſore.

The houſes of Yorke & Lancaſter.

1461 Edward, Earle of March, tooke on him the gouern-

gouernment of the Realm, being ſon to Richard Duke of Yorke, that was ſlaine at Wakefield. His raigne alſo was filled with many troubles, broyles, and Rebellions: yet hee gouerned 22. yeares, one month, and eight daies, and was buried at Windſore.

Edward the fift, ſon to king Edward the fourth, ſucceeded after his father, being neuer crowned, but depoſed by his Vncle Richard, Duke of Gloceſter, when he had raigned two months, & eleuen dayes, and with his brother, was murdered in the Tower of London, where both their bodies were obſcurely buried. 1483

Edw. 5. neuer crownd

Richard, Duke of Gloceſter, vſurped the kingdome two years, two months, and one day: and was ſlaine in battell at Boſworth fielde, by Henrie Earle of Richmond, and buried at Leiceſter. In him ended the line of the Plantagenets. 1483.

Boſworth field.

Henry, Earle of Richmond, ſurnamed Tudor, ſon to Edmund of Hadham, Earle of Richmond, who was ſon of Owen ap Meredyth, and Queene Katherine the French kings daughter, wife to king Henry the fift. This king Henrie, builded and repayred in his life time, many goodly houſes, beſide his Manor of Richmond, and his Chappell at Weſtminſter; as Baynards Caſtle in London; the goodly Hoſpitall of the Sauoy, neere Charing-Croſſe, to which hee gaue lands, for releefe of an hundred poore people. Sir Religious houſes for Franciſcan Friers, of the Obſeruant and Couentall orders, (viz.) at Rich- 1485

The memorable buildings of king Henrie the ſeuenth.

mond, at Greenwich, and at Newarke, for Obſeruants: at Canterbury, New-Caſtle, & Southhampton, for Couentals. Hee gaue alſo manie ſums of money, to good and godly vſes. And for that one of the goodlieſt Chappelles in Europe, was (by his meanes) finiſhed, formerly begun by king Henry the firſt, called the Kings colledge Chappell, in the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge: I cannot omit the ſumme he gaue to accompliſh the ſame, which was 10000.li.(viz.) 5000. pounds in his life time, and the reſt by will at his death, vnder his great Seale of England, which was truely paide, as is yet to be ſeen in the ſame Colledge. Hee married his eldeſt daughter Margaret, to Iames the fourth, King af Scots: of which happy marriage, we enioy our dread Soueraign now raigning, King Iames the firſt. King Henrie raigned 23. yeares, and ſomwhat more then 8. months, and was buried in his new Chappell at Weſtminſter.

Kinges Colledge chappel in Cambridge.

1509

Henry the eight, ſonne of king Henry the ſeauenth, ſucceeded next in the kingdome after hys father. He baniſhed the Popes authority out of England, and was proclaimed King of Ireland, becauſe the former Kinges were onely called Lords of Ireland. He wun Terwin, Tourney, and Bullen in Fraunce, and gaue the Church of the Gray Fryers in London to the Cittie, to bee a place of releefe for poore people; S. Bartholomewes Spittle, the Gray Fryers, and two pariſh Churches, the one called S. Nicholas in the Shambles, the other S. Ewin in Newgate Market

Lords of Ireland.

King Henries gifts, to charitable vſes.

ket, were then made all one parish Church, and he gaue in Lands for maintenance thereof, fiue hundred Markes by the yeare for euer. He raigned 37. yeares, 9. months, and 5. daies, and was buried at Windſore.

Edward the firſt, onely ſon to king Henry the eight, was crowned king at Weſtminſter. He cauſed the Maſſe to be vtterly abolished, Images to be defaced in Churches, and the Lords ſupper to be miniſtred in both kindes. There was then good orders deuiſed for the poores reliefe, & poore people were diſtinguiſhed by three ſeuerall degrees, in manner following: 1547

The Maſſe abolished.

Three degrees of poore.
1. The poore by impotency.
2. Poore by caſualty.
3. Thriftleſſe poore.

1. The poore by impotency, were alſo diuided into 3 kinds
1. The fatherles poore mans child.
2. The aged, blinde, and lame.
3. The diſeaſed perſon, by leproſie dropſie, &c.

2. The poore by caſualty, were alſo of three kinds.
1. The wounded Souldior.
2. The decayed Houſholder.
3. The viſited wt grieuous diſeaſe.

3. The thriftleſſe poore were likewiſe of 3. kinds.
1. The Riotor, that conſumeth all.
2. The Vagabond, that will abyde in no place.
3. The yde perſon, as Strumpets and others.

1 Chriſts Hoſpitall was appointed for the innocent and fatherleſſe childe, to be trained vp in Chriſts hoſpitall.

knowledge of God, and vertuous exercises.

2 Saint Thomas Hospitall in Southwark, was appointed for relieſe of the aged, blinde, and lame.

S. Thomas Hospitall.

3 Bridewel was also appointed for the Vagabond, ydle strumpet, and vnthrift.

Bridewell.

Of all which seuerall Hospitals, this Vertuous yong k. Edward was the founder, and gaue the lands of the Sauoy (which then serued as a harbour to Loyterers, Vagabonds, and strumpets, that lay all day in the fieldes, and at Night were harboured there) to the maintenance of these houses: which Lands were of the yearelie value of fiue hundred pounds, and he gaue 4000 Markes beside, of Lands taken in Mortmaine, so yearely valewed. This worthy young King raigned sixe years, fiue months, and eight dayes, and was buried at Westminster.

1553 Mary, eldest daughter to King Henry the eight, and Sister to King Edward, succeeded after her Brother. She married with the Prince of Spain, who was afterward king, and raigning 5. years, fiue monethes, and tenne dayes, was buried at Westminster.

1558 Elizabeth, second Daughter to king Henrie the eight, and Sister also to king Edward, came next to her right in the Crowne of England To write of the Princely life and raigne of that Virgin Empresse, and matchlesse Queene, woulde require large Volumes, yet all too little for her high deseruing merit. Hauing liued (well neere) threescore and ten years, and happily raigned 44. yeares,

yeares, 4. months, and od dayes: ſhe died the 24 of March, 1602. & was buried at Weſtm. The lines engraven on her Tombe, may ſerue for her further memory.

*A Sacrifice to Poſterity.*

HAuing reſtored Religion to the Primitiue ſincerity, eſtabliſhed Peace, reduced coine to the iuſt valew, reuenged Domeſticall rebellion, ſuccored France, greeued by ciuill war, ſupported *Belgia*, ouer-come the *Spaniſh* inuincible Nauy, pacified Ireland, by driuing out the *Spaniards*, and compelling the Rebels to yeeld to her pardon, increaſed very much the Reuennewes of both Vniuerſities, by a Law for theyr prouiſion of Victuall, enriched all England, & adminiſtring moſt prudently the Imperial ſtate thereof 45. yeares in true piety, in the ſeauenty yeare of her age (in moſt happy & peaceable maner departed this life) leauing heere hir mortal parts, enterred in this famous and renowned Church (by her conſerued) til by the command of Chriſt, they riſe againe immortall.

1602

Iames, king of England, Scotland, Fraunce, and Ireland, firſt Monarch of the whole Iſlands or Countrey, was proclaimed king the 24. of March, 1602. being the onely inheritour to k. Henry the ſeauenth, and Elizabeth his Queene, iſſuing from Lady Margaret, eldeſt Daughter to them both. In whoſe happy marriage, ended

the long ciuill dissentions, of the two deuided families of Yorke and Lancaster: And by his most rightfull succession, in the deuided kingdomes of England and Scotland, hath united them in one sole Monarchy of Great Britaine. Long may hee raigne, to Gods glory, and comfort of his Kingdomes.

## ¶ A briefe Catalogue of the Princes of Wales, from the time that King *Edward* the first had conquered Wales, to this instant.

1. EDward, borne at Caernaruon, & therefore called Edward of Caernaruon, being Sonne to king Edward of England, first of that name, was the first Prince of Males of the English bloud, after the death of Prince Lhewelyn, and came to Chester, in the 29. year of his fathers raigne, where he receiued the homage of the free-holders of Wales.

2 Edward of Windsore, beeing eldest son to king Edward the second, in the 15. yeare of his fathers raigne, was created Prince of VVales, and Duke of Aquitaine, in a Parlament holden at Yorke.

3 Edward borne at Woodstock, & sonne and heyre to king Edward the third, in the 17. yeare of his Fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales at London. This Prince was surnamed the Blacke Prince, hee tooke Iohn the French king prisoner, and dyed in the 46. yeare of his age,

age, his father yet liuing.

4 Richard, ſonne to Edward the Black Prince, was created Prince of Wales at Hauering in the Bower, in the fiftie yeare, of king Edward the 3. his Grandfather, and was afterward king of England, by the name of king Richard the ſecond.

5 Henry of Monmouth, ſonne and heire to king Henry the fourth, was in the firſt yeare of his fathers raigne, created Prince of Wales at VVeſtminſter.

6 Edward of Weſtminſter, ſonne and heyre to king Henry the firt, in the 31. yeare of his Fathers raigne, was created Prince of wales, and Earle of Cheſter, at weſtminſter.

7 Edward, eldeſt ſonne of king Edward the 4. borne in the Sanctuary at Weſtminſter, in the 11. yeare of his Fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales, and Earle of Cheſter at London. He was afterward king of England, by the name of Edward the fift, but neuer crowned, becauſe both he and his Brother were made away, by the treachery of their Vncle Richard, Duke of Gloceſter, that vſurped the Crowne.

8 Edward, the onely Sonne of king Richard the third, being a child of ten years olde, in the firſt yeare of the ſaid kings raign, was created prince of wales at London.

9 Arthur, ſonne and heire to king Henrie the ſeuenth, in the fift yeare of his Fathers raigne, was created Prince of wales at London: & dying at Ludlow Caſtle, in the 17. yeare of his

Fathers

fathers raigne, was buried with great Funerall solemnity at Worceſter.

10 Henry, Duke of Yorke, ſon to King Henry the ſeauenth, and Brother vnto Prince Arthur, was after the ſaide Princes death, in the nineteenth yeare of his Fathers raigne, created Prince of Wales: and was afterward King of England, by the name of King Henry the 8. In the 26. yeare of his raigne, the Principality and Countrey of Wales, was (by Parliament) incorporated and vnited vnto the Kingdome of England, and all the Inhabitants thereof made equall in freedomes, liberties, rights, priuiledges, lawes, and in all other reſpects, to the naturall ſubiects of England.

11 Edward, ſonne to King Henry the eight, and borne at Hampton Court, the Principality of Wales, being incorporated (as hath bin ſayde) to the Crowne and kingdome of England, was no otherwiſe Prince of Wales, then vnder the generall Title of England, as the King his Father was king of England, and (vnder ỹ name) king of Wales, as it being a member of England. Nor do I read of any other creation or inueſture, that he had in that Principality. He was King after his Father, by the name of K. Edward 6.

Prince of Wales by generall title

1. Princeſſe of Wales.

1 Marie, Daughter to King Henry the eight by the Princeſſe Katherine Dowager, Widdow of Prince Arthur, was Princeſſe of Wales.

2. Princeſſe of Wales.

2 Elizabeth, Daughter alſo to King Henrie the eight, was in a Parliament, in the 25. yeare of

of her Fathers raigne, declared Princeſſe and Inheretrix of the crowns of England, with all dominions to the ſame belonging; and therefore was (as her Siſter) Princeſſe of Wales.

All theſe fore-named Princes of Wales, were created (ſolemnely) by and in Court of Parliament, except three, which were Richard the ſecond, Edward the fifte, and Edward, Sonne to Richard the third. Thoſe that were created out of Parliament, were Princes, whoſe fortunes proued hard and diſaſtrous: For Richard the ſecond was depoſed, and after murdered; Edward the fift was alſo murdered in the Tower of London; and Edward, ſonne to Richard the third, dyed within three moneths after, as a iuſt iudgement of God, for his Fathers wickedneſſe.

12. Henrie, ſonne and heire to our dread Soueraigne King Iames, in the eight yeare of his Fathers raigne ouer England, &c. was created in the Court of Parliament at Weſtminſter, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall and Rothſay, Earle of Cheſter, and Knight of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter: The ſtrong arme of Heauen be his continuall keeper and defender. Prince of Wales by creation.

## Briefe Obſeruations, not vnfitly annexed to this our ſhort Summary of England.

### ¶ Of Biſhopprickes, and their circuites.

Iuriſdiction of Canterb.

CAnterbury erected firſt by Auguſtine the Monke, in the time of Ethelbert, king of Kent, by prouincial regiment, reacheth ouer all the South and weſt parts of this Lande, and Ireland alſo, and there are few ſhyres, wherein the Arch-byſhop hath not ſome peculiers. But in it ſelfe, as (from the beginning) was, and is proper to the See. It extendeth but ouer one parcell of Kent, which Rudburne calleth Cantwarland, the Iuriſdiction of Rocheſter including the reſt: ſo that in this one County, both the greateſt Archbiſhoppricke, and leaſt Biſhoppricke are vnited together. Canterbury hath vnder it one Arch-deaconry, that hath iuriſdiction ouer 11. Deanries, or 161. Pariſh Churches. In time of popery, vnder name of firſt fruites, it paide to Rome (at euery alienation) 10000. Ducats or Florens, beſide 5000. which the new elect did vſually pay for his pall, each ducat being then worth an Engliſh Crowne.

Iuriſdiction of Rocheſter.

Rocheſter, included within the limits of Kent, was erected alſo by Auguſtine, in the raygne of Ceolrijc, ouer the weſt-Saxons. It hath one Arch-Deacon, whoſe gouernement in ſpirituall cauſes, ruleth 3. Deanries, or 132. pariſh Churches.

ches, whereby appeareth, that in Kent are 393. parish churches, whereof the saide tiwo Arch-deacons haue cure and charge. It paid to Rome at the bishops admission, 1300. Ducats or Florens.

London was erected at first by king Lucius, who made it an Archbishops See (as in due place hath already bin remembred) and so it continued till Augustine translated that title to Canterbury. It includeth Essex, Middlesex, and parte of Hertfordshire, containing (in quantity) the ancient Kingdome of the East-Angles, before it was united to the West-Saxons. It hath foure Arch-deaconries, (viz.) London, Essex, Middlesex and Colchester, that haue vnder them 363. parish Churches, beside peculiers. The Archdeaconry of S. Albanes, was added thereto by king Henry the eight, which hath also 25. parishes, whereof foure are in Buckingham, the rest in Hertfordshire. It payed to Rome, three thousand Florens. Iuriſdiction of London

Chichester beganne in the Isle of Seales or Seolsie, and was translated to Chichester in the time of William the Conqueror, when generall remoue of Sees was made, from small Villages to greater Townes. It hath Sussex onely vnder iurisdiction, wherein are 16. Deanries, and 551 parish Churches: and paide to Rome (at euerie alienation) 333. Ducates. Iuriſdiction of Chicheſter.

VVinchester, was giuen to Birinus, & his successors, by Kinigils & Oswald, of the Northumbers, in whose time it was erected. It Gouerneth Hampshire, Surrie, Iardseie, Gardeseie, and Iuriſdiction of vvincheſt.

the

the Ile of Wight; contayning eight deanries, 276. Parish-Churches, beside perpetuall Prelacy of the Honourable Order of the Garter. It paid to Rome 12000. Ducates or Florens.

Iurisdiction of Salisbury

Salisbury was made chiefe See of Shirbourne, by Bishop Harman (Predecessour to Osmond) who brought it from Shirbourne to that Cittie. It gouerneth Barkshire, Wiltshire, and Dorsetshire. It paid to Rome 4000. Florens.

Iurisdiction of Excester.

Excester hath Deuonshire and Cornewall, sometimes two seuerall Bishoppricks, but (in the end) brought into one of Cornewall, and from thence to Excester, in the time of King William the Conqueror. It paid to Rome at euery alienation, fiue thousand Ducates or Florens.

Iurisdiction of Bath.

Bath, the See whereof was sometime at Wels, before Iohn (the bishop there) annexed the church of Bath vnto it, which was in An. 1094. it hath Somersetshire onely, and it paide to the Court of Rome, 430. Florens.

Iurisdiction of Worcester.

Worcester, hath VVorcestershire, and part of Warwickshire; Before the Bishoppricke of Gloucester was taken from it, it paid to the Pope two thousand Ducates of Golde, at change of euerie Prelate. It began in the time of Offa, King of the East-Angles.

Iurisdiction of Gloster.

Gloucester hath Glocestershire onely, wherein are nine Deanries, and 294. Parish-Churches. It neuer paide any thing to Rome, because it was erected by King Henry the eyght, when he had abolished the Popes vsurped authority.

Iurisdiction of Hereford

Hereford, hath Herefordshire, and part of Shrop-

Shropſhire. It paid to Rome at euery alienation 1800. Ducates.

Lichfielde, had Couentry added to it, in the raigne of King Henry the firſt, at the earneſt ſute of Robert, Biſhop of that Sée: It hath Staffordſhire, Darbiſhire, part of Shropſhire, and the reſt of Warwickſhire, voide of ſubiection to the Sée of VVorceſter. It was erected in the time of Penda, King of the South-Mercians: And paide to the Pope three thouſand Flozens, at euery alienation. Iuriſdiction of Lichfield

Oxford, hath Oxfordſhire onely, & neuer paide any taxation to Rome, being erected by K. Henry the eight. Iuriſdiction of Oxford.

Elie, hath Cambridgeſhire, and the Iſle of Elie, being at firſt a wealthy Abbey; it was erected by King Henry the firſt, in Anno 1109. It paid to the Pope at euery alienation, 7000. Ducates. Iuriſdiction of Elie.

Norwich, called in elder times Epiſcopatus Donnicenſis, Dononiæ, or Æſtanglorum, was firſt erected at Felſtow, or Felixſtow; afterward remoued to Donwich; thence to Helmham; next to Theodford, or Thetford; and laſtly (in the Conquerours time) to Norwich. It contayneth Norffolke and Suffolke onely, but (at firſt) included Cambridgeſhire alſo, and ſo much as lay within the Kingdome of the Eaſt-Angles. It began vnder Cerpenwald, King of the Eaſt-Saxons; and paid to Rome 5000. Ducates. It contained ſometime 1563. Pariſh-Churches, beſide 88. religious Houſes; but now wee heare of no moze then 1200. Iuriſdiction of Norwich

Peter-

Iuriſdiction of Peterborow.

Peterborow, ſometimes a notable Monaſtery, hath Northampton and Rutlandſhires, beeing a Dioceſſe erected likewiſe by King Henrie the eyght, and neuer paied firſt Fruites to the Pope.

Iuriſdiction of Briſtow.

Briſtow, hath Dorſetſhire, ſometime belonging to Salisbury: a Sée alſo erected by king Henry the eight.

Iuriſdiction of Lincoln.

Lincolne, of all other (of late times) was the greateſt, and albeit that (out of it) were taken the Sées of Oxford and Peterborow; yet it ſtill retaineth Lincolne, Leiceſter, Huntingdon, Bedford, Buckingham ſhires, and the reſt of Hertfordſhire, extending it ſelf from Thames to Humber. It paied to the Pope at euery alienation, 5000. Ducates: and began in the time of King William Rufus. Thus much of the Biſhoprickes in Lhoegres or England, as it was left to Locrine; now goe we to VVales.

Iuriſdiction of Landaffe.

Landaffe, or the Church of Taw, hath Eccleſiaſticall Iuriſdiction in Glamorgan, Monmouth, Brechnoch, and Radnor ſhires, and paide 700. Ducates to Rome, at euery exchange of Prelat. But it was a poore aunſwere (vppon call) of the incumbent, in Court before the Lord Preſident, when hée ſayd: The Daffe is heere, but the Land is gone.

Iuriſdiction of S. Dauids

S. Dauids, hath Pembroke and Caermardineſhires, whoſe liuery and firſt fruites to the Sée of Rome, was 1500. Ducates.

Iuriſdiction of Bangor.

Bangor is in North-wales, and hath Caernaruon, Angleſeie, and Merioneth ſhires: and paid to

to Rome, 126. Ducates.

S. Aſaphes, hath Preſtholme, and part of Denbigh, and Flint Shires, in eccleſiaſticall Juriſdiction, and is the leaſt in circuite in VVales, amounting (in all) not to one good Countie; yet it paied to Rome at euery alienation, 470. Ducates. Hitherto of the Prouince of Canterburie, for ſo much thereof as now lieth within compaſſe of this Iſland. Iuriſdiction of Saint Aſaphes.

The Archbiſhops Sée of Yorke was reſtored about the yeare of Grace 625. in the time of Eadwin, king of Northumberland, Paulinus ſitting as firſt Byſhoppe there, by ordination of Iuſtus Arch-biſhop of Canterbury. It hath Juriſdiction ouer Yorkeſhire, Nottinghamſhire, and the reſt of Lancaſhire (not ſubiect to the Sée of Cheſter.) It paied to Rome 1000. Ducates, beſide 5000. for the pall of the new elect. York & her Iuriſdiction.

Cheſter vpon Dee, otherwiſe called Weſtcheſter, hath Cheſterſhire, Darbiſhire, the moſt part of Lancaſhire, euen to the Ribell, Richmond, & a part of Flint and Denbighſhires in Wales. It was made a Byſhoppricke by Henry the eyght, An. regni 33. Iuly 16. Iuriſdiction of Cheſter.

Durham, hath the County of Durham, & Northumberland, with the Dales; the Biſhops haue bin (ſometimes) Earles Palantines, ruling vnder name and ſucceſſion of Saint Cuthbert. It paid to Rome 9000. Ducates, at euery alienation. Iuriſdiction of Durham.

Caerleill, was erected Anno 1132. by king Henry the firſt, and hath Cumberland & VVeſtmerland in rule. It paid to the Pope a thouſand Florens. Iuriſdiction of Caerleill.

Bish. of Man

There is another Bishopricke, called the See of Mona, or Man, somtime named Episcopatus Sodorensis, whereof one VVimundus was ordained the first Bishop, and John the second, in the troublesome time of king Stephen. But the guift of this Prelacy is said to rest in the Earls of Darby, to nominate thereto (from time to time) such as they deeme conuenient.

## ¶ Of the Colledges in Cambridge and Oxford. and their Founders.

### In Cambridge.

| Years of the foundations | Colledges. | | Founders. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1546 | 1. Trinity Colledge. | | King Henry the 8. |
| 1441 | 2. The Kings Col. | | King Henry the first, Edward the fourth, Henry the 7. Hen. 8. |
| 1511 | 3. Saint Iohns. | by | L. Margaret, grandmother to Henry 8. K Hen. 6. and Lady Marg. before named. |
| 1505 | 4. Christs Colledge. | | |
| 1446 | 5. The Queens col. | | Lady Margaret, wife to Henry the first. |
| 1496 | 6. Iesus Colledge. | | Iohn Alcock, bishop of Elie. |
| 1342 | 7. Bennet Colledge. | by | The Brethren of a Guild, cald *Cor. Chr.* |
| 1343 | 8 Pembroke Hall. | | Maria de Valencia, Countesse of Pembr. |

Hugh

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 9. Peter Colledge. | by | Hugh Balſham, Biſhop of Elie. | 1256 |
| 10. Gundeuill, and Caius Colledge. | | Edmund Gundeuil, Parſon of Terrington, and Iohn Caius, Doctour of Phyſicke. | 1348 |
| 11. Trinity Hall. | | VVilliam Bateman, biſhop of Norwich. | 1354 |
| 12. Clare Hall. | | Rich. Badow, Chanceller of Cambridg. | 1326 |
| 13. Katherine Hall. | | Robert Woodlark, Doctor of diuinity. | 1459 |
| 14. Magdalen Colle. | | Edward D. of Buck, and Tho. L. Audley. | 1519 |
| 15. Emanuell Colle. | | Sir VValter Mildmay, &c. | 1585 |

In Oxford.

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1. Chriſtes Church. | by | King Henry the eight. | 1539 |
| 2. Magdalen colledge | | Wil. Wainfleet, firſt fellow of Merton Colledge, then ſcholler of Winchester, and afterward Biſhop there. | 1459 |
| 3. New Colledge. | | Wil. Wickham Biſhop of Winchester. | 1375. |
| 4. Merton colledge. | by | Walter Merton, Biſhop of Rocheſter. | 1276 |
| 5. All Soules Colledge. | | Hen. Chichelie, Archbiſhop of Canterbury | 1437 |
| 6. Corpus Chriſti Colledge. | | Richard Fox, Biſhop of Winchester. | 1516 |
| 7. Lincoln colledge. | | Richard Fleming, biſhop | 1430 |

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1323 | 8. Auriell Colledge. | by | shop of Lincolne. |
| | | | Abraham Browne, Almoner to K. Ed. 2. |
| 1340 | 9. Quæns colledge. | | R. Eglesfield, Chaplaine to Phillip, Queene and Wife to King Edward the third. |
| 1263 | 10. Balioll Colledge | | Iohn Baliol, King of Scotland. |
| 1557 | 11. Saint Iohns colledge. | | Sir Thomas White, Lord Mayor of London. |
| 1555 | 12. Trinity Colledge | | Sir Thomas Pope Knight. |
| 1216 | 13. Excester colledge | | Walter Stapleton, bishop of Excester. |
| 1517 | 14. Brazen-nose. | | William Smith, Bishop of Lincolne. |
| 873 | 15. Vniuersity Col. | | William Archdeacon of Durefme. |
| | 16. Glocester Colledge. | | Iohn Gifford, who made it a Cell for 13 Monkes. |
| | 17. Iesus Colledge. | | Hugh ap Rice, Doctor of the Ciuill-law. |

Hostels or Hals in Oxford.

| | |
|---|---|
| Broade-gates. | Saint Mary Hall. |
| Hart Hall. | White Hall. |
| Magdalen Hall. | New Inne. |
| Alburne Hall. | Edmund Hall. |
| Postminster Hall. | |

The

## ¶ The Names of the Shires in England and Wales.

THE firſt tenne Shires do lye betwéene the Britiſh Sea, and the Thames, according to Polydore.

| | |
|---|---|
| Kent. | Wiltſhire. |
| Suſſex. | Dorſetſhire. |
| Surrey. | Sommerſetſhire. |
| Hampſhire. | Deuonſhire. |
| Barkſhire. | Cornewall. |

On the North-ſide of the Thames, betwéene it and Trent, which paſſeth thorough the midſt of England, are 16. other Shires, ſire toward the Eaſt, and the other toward the weſt.

| | |
|---|---|
| Eſſex, ſometime all Foreſt, ſaue one hundred. | Huntingdon, wherein are foure hundreds. |
| Middleſex. | Buckingham. |
| Hertfordſhire. | Oxford. |
| Suffolke. | Northampton. |
| Norffolke. | Rutland. |
| Cambridgeſhire, wherein are twelue hundreds. | Leiceſterſhire. |
| | Nottinghamſhire. |
| | Warwickſhire. |
| Bedfordſhire. | Lincolnſhire. |

There are ſix alſo weſtward, toward Wales.

| | |
|---|---|
| Gloceſter. | Shropſhire. |
| Hereford. | Stafford. |
| Worceſter. | Cheſterſhire. |

These are the 32. Shires, which lye by South of the Riuer Trent; beyond which Riuer, there are other eight.

Darby.
Yorke.
Lancaster.
Cumberland.
Westmerland.
Richmond,
wherein are fiue
Wapentakes;
} And when it is accounted as a parcell of Yorkshire (out of which it is taken) then is it reputed for the whole Riding.
Durham.
Northumberland.

So that in the portion somtime called Lhoegria, there are now forty Shires. In Wales also there be thirteen, whereof seauen are in South Wales.

Cardigan, or
Cereticon.
Penmoroke, or
Penbroke.
Caermardin,
wherein are nine
} hundreds or Commots.
Glamorgan.
Monmouth.
Brecknocke.
Radnor.

In North-wales likewise are fiue.

Angleseie.
Caernaruon.
Merioneth.
} Denbigh.
Flint.
Montgomerie.

Which beeing added to those of England, doe make vp 53. Shieres or Counties.

¶ A

¶ A Brieſe Collection, of the Originall, Antiquity, Increaſe and Moderne eſtate of the honourable Citty of London.

*To the Worſhipfull, M. Cornelius Fiſh, Eſquire, and Chamberlaine of the ſaide moſt famous Cittie.*

CONcerning the name of this auncient and worthy Citty, by diuers Authors it hath bin (as diuerſly) deſcanted on: Tacitus, Ptolomeus, and Antoninus called it Londinium and Longidinium: Amianus Marcellinus tearmed it Lundinum and Auguſta: Stephen (in his Citties) calleth it ΛΙΝΔΟΝΙΟΝ: our Britaines, Lundayn: the old Saxons, Londonceaſter, or Londonbeig; Strangers, Londra and Londres; and the Inhabitants, London. By other writers (whom ſome iudge fabulous) it hath bin called Troia-noua, or Troynouant, New Troy, according to the Name that Brute (firſt founder thereof) gaue it: Dinas Belin, Belins Citty; & Caer-Lud, or Luds-Towne, of King Lud: who not onely re-edified, but alſo gaue it that name. Eraſmus deriued it from Lindum, a Cittye in the Iſle of Rhodes: and ſo (by variety of iudgements) it hath run into the like variety of names. In which ſtraunge ſtreame of opinion, howe a man may beſt carry himſelfe, with-

The names by diuers giuen to London.

without impeach to any, is, freely to leaue each man maister of his owne coniecture: whether Londons true name took originall from any of these fore-mentioned, or whether Woodes and Groues (being named in ỹ British tong Llhwn) London should receiue her title, by way of excellency, and be called, The Citty, or A City thicke of Trees, because the Britains called these woods and Groues by the names of Citties & Townes, which they had fenced with trees cast downe and plashed, to stop vp all passage.

Cæsar and Strabo, alledged by M. Camden

But leauing the name, we finde that London was burnt and destroyed (howe faire soeuer it was built before) by the Danes, and other Pagan enemies, about the yeare of Christ, 839. but afterward, in the yeare, 886. Alfred, King of the west-Saxons, both restored, repayred, and made it honourably habitable: giuing the charge and keeping thereof, to his Sonne in Law Ethelred, Earle of the Mercians, with whom hee had formerly married his Daughter Ethelfleda. That it was strongly defenced with wals, I read, that the Londoners did shut vp their gates, and manfully withstood the Danes, preseruing their king Ethelred within their wals; this was in Anno Christi, 994. Also in Anno 1016. when Edmund Ironside gouerned the VVest-Saxons, Canutus the Dane brought hys Fleete to the West part of the bridge, and threw a trench about the Citty, as hoping by assault to win it: but the Citizens repulsed him, and droue him from theyr walles. Those walles were (from time to time)

London burnt by the Danes.

Wil. Malmsbury.

well

wel maintained & repayred: with ſtones from the Iewes broken houſes, in King Iohns time, 1215. when the Barons (entring by Ealdgate, or Aldgate) brake their houſes downe. And in K. Henries time the thirde, when the walles and gates were repayred (in more ſeemely wiſe then before) at the common charge of the Citty. The circuite of London wall on the landes ſide, is meaſured thus. From the Tower of London in the Eaſt, to Ealdgate, commonly called Aldgate, 82. perches. From Algate to Byſhopſgate, 86. perches: From Byſhopſgate in the North, to the Poſtern of Cripleſgate, 162. perches. From Cripleſgate to Ealderſgate, or Eldrich gate, 75. perches. From Ealderſgate to Newgate, 66. perches. From Newgate in the Weſt, to Ludgate, 42. perches, amounting in all to 513. perches of Aſſize. From Ludgate to the Fleete Dike, 60. perches. From Fleet-bridge South, to the River of Thames, about 70. perches. Which perches (in compleat number) riſe to 643. each perch contayning fiue yards and an halfe: which in yards doe amount to 3536. & an halfe, containing 10608. foote, that make vp two Engliſh miles, & more by 608. foote.

Maintenance of the wals.

London wall in circuite.

There were but foure Gates (at firſt) made in the wall of this Citty, viz: Aldgate, Eaſtward; Alderſgate, North-ward; Ludgate, Weſtward; and the Bridge-gate (ouer Thames) Southward. But other Gates and Poſterns (for eaſe and conuenency of paſſage) were afterwarde made, as mens affayres required to other quar-

Four Gates & no more in elder time.

t

The Posterne gate by the Tower.

ters of the Citty. A Posterne gate was somtime neere to the Tower of London, which decaying by length of time, and a deepe Ditch made without the wall, it fell downe in the year, 1440. the eighteenth of King Henry the first, and was neuer after builte againe: but a plaine Cottage of Timber, Lath, and Loame, with a narrow passage, being erected instead thereof, it so continueth. Aldgate was next in the East, so named by the antiquity thereof: for it was so called in king Edgars time: and the Soke or Franchise (wyth the Port of Aldgate, and all customs thereto appertaining) were likewise giuen by Matilda (M. to Henry the first) to the Priour of the B. Trinitie, within Aldgate (and by her founded) in as ample and free maner as she enioyed them. The third was Bishopsgate toward the North, built by some Bishop of London, as is imagined, for other certainty is not as yet found, which Gate did much ease to such as trauailed East, and by North, as to Norffolke, Suffolke, Cambridgeshire, &c. because before the erection thereof, such as iourned out at Aldgate, of necessity held on to the miles end, and turning them on the left hand to Blethon-hall, now Bednal-Greene, rode directly to Cambridge Heath, and so tooke their iournies North, or East, and by North, or occasion required. Otherwise, refusing Aldgate way, they had no other helpe then out at Aldersgate, through Aldersgate streete, and Goswell street, now tearmed Pickt-hatch, towards Iseldon, and by a Crosse of stone on their right hand, set

Aldgate.

Bishopsgate

ſet vp for a marke by the North end of Golding-lane; paſſed through a long ſtreet (yet called Ald-ſtreete, or Old-ſtreet) to another Croſſe by Sewers ditch Church, where now ſtands a ſmiths Forge, and there they turned againe Northwards, to Totenham, Enfield, waltham, ware, &c. This Biſhopſgate, the Dutch Marchants of the Haunce, Stiliard, or Guildhalla Tentonicorum, were bound by couenant, both to repayre and defend, at all times of daunger and extremity. The fourth, was a Poſterne, now called Mooregate, which one Thomas Faulconer, Maior of London, An. 1413. and third of Henry the fift, cauſed to be made there on the Mores ſide, where neuer Gate was before: that people might paſſe vpon cauſe-wayes into the fielde for recreation, becauſe the fielde was then a mariſh. The fift Gate was the Poſterne of Cripleſgate, ſo called long before the Conqueſt, in regarde of Criples begging there: and the body of S. Edmond the Martyre was brought into London thereat, when it was conuayed from Bedriſworth (now called Bury S. Edmunds) thorough the Eaſt Saxons Kingdome, to the pariſh church of S. Gregory, neere to the Cathedrall church of S. Paul, where it reſted 3. daies. This poſterne of Crippleſgate, was a priſon of commitment for Cittizens and others, being arreſted for debte or common treſpaſſes, as now the Compters are: & it was new builded by the Brewers of London, An. 1244. But in An. 1483. Edmund Shaa, or Shaw, Goldſmith and Maior of London, gaue

The Eaſterlings.

Mooregate.

Cripleſgate.

Fabians manuſcript.

400.

400. Marks by his will, and stuffe of the Olde gate, to builde it againe new, as now it is, which his executors performed in the yeare, 1491.

Alderſgate. The first was Aldreſgate, or Alderſgate, not Aldrich, Elders or Elderngate, as deriued from ancient men that builded it, or trées there sometime growing: but from antiquity of the gate it selfe, being one of the foure that were first builded, and to serue the North-parts, as Aldgate did for the East, both bearing the name of Aldgate, and Alder or Alderſgate, to differ their seniority in building. The 7. was a Posterne gate made in the 6. yeare of Edw. the 6. in the Wall of the dissolued cloyster of Gray Friers, now cald Christs Church

Christs hoſpital poſtern and Hospitall, seruing for passage to S. Bartholmewes in Smithfield. The 8. west and by North, was called Newgate, because it was later buyl-

New-gate. ded then the rest, by reason that S. Pauls Church being burned in the Conquerors time, about the yeare 1086. Mauritius, then bish. of London, not repayring ỳ old church, but seeking to begin another, extended ỳ work in such largenes of ground, that al passage from Aldgate in the East to Ludgate in the west, was almost stopt vp. Whereupon this gate was first deuised and made, and so named: seruing aptly for passage & cariages, from Aldgate, along Cornhil, through West-chesp. & S. Nicholas Shambles, and the Market taking name of Newgate, to any Westward part ouer Oldborne bridge; or turning (without the gate) into Smithfield, to Iſeldon. or any part North & by west. It hath bin a Gaole or prison for fellons

&

& other offenders long time, as the records in K. Iohns time teſtifieth. And in an. 1422. the firſt of Henry 6. the executors to Richard Whittington had licenſe to reedifie the ſaid gate, which they did with his goods. The 8. gate was Ludgate in the weſt, builded by k. Lud, before Chriſts natiuitie, 66. years, ſeruing for the weſt, as Aldgate for the Eaſt, & was repaired with the ſtones of ỹ Iewes defaced houſes, when the Barons were in armes in k. Iohns time, as Aldgate & the other gates thē were. A notable teſtimony to confirm this aſſertion, apeared in the year 1587. when the gate was taken downe to be new builded, for a ſtone was then found in the wal, which had bin taken from one of thoſe Iewes houſes, with this Inſcription thereon (but in Hebrew Caracters) *Hæc eſt ſtatio Rabbi Moſes, filij inſignis Rabbi Iſaac: This is the ſtation or ward of Rabbi Moſes, ſon of the honorable Rabbi Iſaac.* And it ſeemed to haue bin fired in the front of ſome one of the Iewes houſes, as a note or ſigne, ỹ ſuch a one dwelled there. It was made a free priſon in the 1. yeare of K. Richard 2. Nicholas Brembar being then maior, & after confirmed (in the time of Iohn Northampton Maior 1382) by a common Counſel in the Guild-hal, ỹ freemen of the City, for debt, trepaſſes, accounts & contempts, ſhold be impriſoned in Ludgate, & for treaſons, fellonies, murders, and other criminall offences, Newgate ſhould be the priſon. Laſtly, there is alſo a breach in the Citty Wall, and a Bridge made of Timber ouer the Fleete Dike, betwixte Fleete-bridge and Thames, directlie ouer

Ludgate.

Ludgate made a free priſon.

uer against the House of Bride-Well, but it is not as (as I thinke) called any Gate.

The South side of London.

Now concerning the South-side of the Citty, and that it was sometime walled too, the Citty being then round engirt with a Wal: the Testimony of William Fitz-Stephen (who wrote in the raigne of King Henry the second) may serue to approue it, for these are his very wordes. The Wall is high and great, well towred on the North-side, with due distances betweene the Towers. On the South-side also, the Citty was walled and towred: but the Fishfull Riuer of Thames, with his ebbing and flowing, hath long since subuerted them. If then wee shall speake of Water-Gates, as already wee haue done of Land-gates, and, being now in the west, returne towards the East; the first then was called Ripa Reginæ, the Queens-banck, or Queens Hith, deseruing well to bee esteemed a Water-Gate, and the very chiefe of the Citty, beeing a common Strand or landing place, equall with, and (in olde time) farre excelling Belines-Gate. For, beside the antiquity thereof, and to whom, (in those daies) it seuerally appertained; I finde that King Henry the third, in the ninth of his raigne, commaunded the Constables of the Tower of London, to arrest the Shippes of the Cinque-Portes on the Riuer of Thames, and compell them to bring their Corne and Fish to no other place, but to the Queenes-Hith only. And when corn arriued betweene the Gate of Guilde-Hall, of the Merchantes of Colleyne, and the

William Fitz Stephē his words.

Water gates

Queenes-Hith.

The Stil-yard, or Guilda-Halla Teutonicorum.

Soke

Soke of the Arch-biſhop of Canterbury (for hee had then a Houſe neere to the Blacke-Fryers) it was not to bee meaſured by any other quarter, then that of the Queenes Soke or Hith, on paine of forty ſhillings amercement. Afterward, Queenes-Hith, and the Farme thereof (granted by Richard Earle of Cornewall) was by the ſaid King Henry the third, confirmed to Iohn Giſors then Maior, the Comminaltie of London, and their Succeſſours for euer (as appeareth by his royall Charter) for the ſum of fifty poundes. It was alſo ordained by King Edward the fourth, that all Shippes, Veſſels, or Boates, bringing prouiſion of Victuall to the Cittie (of what quality ſoeuer) if but one Veſſell only; it came to the Queenes-Hith; if two, the one to Queenes-Hithe, the other to Belins-gate; if three, two to Queenes-Hithe, the third to Belins-gate, &c. ſo that (alwaies) the more part came to Queenes-Hithe. But if the Veſſel were ſo great, comming with Salt or otherwiſe, from the Bay, and could not conueniently come to theſe Gates or Keyes; it was then to bee conuaied to them, (as afore-ſaid) by Lighters.

The order for the Cities prouiſion, at Belins gate, and Queenes-hithe.

Downe-gate is the next, and was ſo named (as is ſuppoſed) by reaſon of the waies ſuddaine deſcent or ſtooping, from Saint Iohns Church in Walbroke, to the Riuer of Thames. It was ſome-time a large Water-gate, frequented with Shippes and veſſels, like to the Queenes-Hithe; and appeared (by an Inquiſition, in the twentie eight yeare of Henry the third) to be a part there-of,

Downe-gate.

of, being ordered by the customes thereto belonging.

Wolfesgate. Wolfes-gate, now out of vse; one part being builded on by the Earle of Shrewsbury, the other by the Chamberlain of London, and now called Cold-Harbor.

Ebgate. Ebgate, so called of olde time: but now it is a narrow passage to the Thames, called Ebgate-lane, or old Swan.

Oyster-gate. Oyster-gate, so called of Oysters vsually there sold, as chiefest market for them, and other shell-fish. There now stands the water-engine, that serues the Citty with water, made in the yeare 1582. by Peter Moris, Dutchman.

Bridge-gate. Bridge-gate, so called of London Bridge, whereon it standeth, being one of the Citties first foure and principall Gates, and long before the Conquest, when there (then) stood a bridge of Timber.

Buttolphs-gate. Buttolphs-gate, so called of the Parish-church of S. Buttolph neer adioyning: which Gate was some-time giuen, and confirmed by William the Conqueror, to the Monkes of Westminster, by vertue of a former guift, which Almundus (of the Port of S. Buttolph) gaue them, when hee was there made Monke.

Belins-gate. Belins-gate, or Belingsgate, the largest water-gate now on the Thames, and most frequented. Belin, a King of the Brittons (according to Geffrey of Monmouth) first built it, and gaue it his owne name, about 400. years before Christs Natiuity.

There

There are two Water-gates more, one on the weſt-ſide of Wooll-wharfe, or Cuſtomers Key, beautifully enlarged and built of late: This gate is commonly called the Water-Gate, at South end of Water-lane. The other, by the Tower Bulwarke, and is the laſt and furtheſt Water-gate Eaſt-ward. Beſide theſe common Water-gates, there were then diuers priuate wharffes & Keies, all along from Eaſt to Weſt of the Citie, on the banck of the Riuer of Thames. Two water gates.

Before we part further frō this famous riuer, let vs here remēber Londonbridge ouer it, which, before there was any bridge at al, or it a bridge of timber, there was a Ferry kept in the ſame place, & no other paſſage was there then to Southwark, but by the Ferry onely. The Ferry-man and his Wife dying, left this Ferry to their only daughter, named Mary; who (with her Parents goods left her, & the profits ariſing from the Ferry) built a houſe of Siſters, where the Eaſt part of S. Mary Oueries Church (aboue the Outer) now ſtandeth, and where ſhe her ſelfe was buried; giuing them alſo the ouer ſight & benefits of the ferry. Afterward this houſe of Siſters (being conuerted to a Colledge of Prieſtes) the Prieſtes builded the Bridge of timber, and kept it in good reparations, till the continuall charges growing ouer-burthenous, about the yeare 1176. the courſe of the Riuer being then turned another way, for a time, by a trench purpoſely deuiſed (beginning about Rodriffe, or Redriffe in the Eaſt, and ending aboue Patrickſeie, or Baterſey in the weſt) the Bridge London-bridge. S. Marie Oueries. London-bridge of Timber.

of ſtone began to be founded, and continued 33. yeares in building. The Bridge of timber, in the yeare 1136. was burnt down by fire, but in An. 1163. it was not only repaired, but new made of Timber againe, by one Peter of Cole-Church, Prieſt and Chaplaine: who alſo began the foundation of the Stone-bridge, ſomwhat neer to the Timber-bridge, and liued till within foure years of the workes ending, being buried in a Chappell erected on the Bridge: But the whole bridge of ſtone, was finiſhed by the worthy Merchants of London, Setle Mercer, Wil. Almaine, & Benedict Botewrite, principal Maiſters of that work.

London bridge of Timber burnt.

Other bridges of ſtone, alſo belonging to the City, as Fleetbridge without Ludgate, made at the charges of Iohn Wels, Maior, Anno. 1431.

Fleetbridge

Oldborne-bridge, ſo called of a Bourne, which ſometime ran down Old-borne.

Oldbourne bridge.

Cowbridge, by Cow-bridge-ſtreet, or Cow-lane; which being decaied, another of timber was made by Chicklane. Beſide, there were other Bridges ouer the Town-ditch, as without Aldgate, Biſhopſgate, Mooregate, Cripples-gate, Alderſgate, the Poſterne of Chriſts Hoſpitall, Newgate, and Ludgate, al paued ouer with ſtone, and leuelled with the ſtreets: beſide diuers bridges (in elder times) ouer the courſe of Walbrooke.

Cowbridge

While wee are thus ſpeaking of Water and Bridges, belonging to the Citty, heere I thinke it moſt conuenient alſo, to ſay ſomewhat concerning the Conduits, and ſweete-waters conuaied to them by Pipes of Lead. The firſt Ceſterne where-

Of the Cõduites.

whereof (caſtellated with Stone in the Citty of London) was called the great Conduit in West-cheap, which was begun to be builded in the yeare 1285. Henry Wales, then being Maior. The Tonne vpon Cornehill, was ceſterned in Anno. 1401. Iohn Chadworth then being Maior. Boſſes of water, at Belins-gate; by Paules-wharffe, and by S. Gyles Church without Cripples-gate, were made about the yeare 1423.

Water was brought to the Standard in weſt Cheape, about the yeare 1431. And King Henry the firſt, in An. 1442. granted to Iohn Hatharley, Mayor, licence to take vppe 200. Fodar of Lead, for the building of Conduites; a common Granery, and of a new Croſſe in Weſt-Cheape, for Honor of the Citty.

The Conduit in Aldermanbury, and the Standard in Fleet-ſtreet, were made and finiſhed by the executors of Sir Wil. Eaſtfield, in An. 1471. A Ceſterne was alſo added to the Standard in Fleet-ſtreet; a ſecond made at Fleet-bridge; and another without Cripples-gate, in An. 1478.

The Conduit in Graſſe-ſtreet, in An. 1491.

The Conduit at Old-bourne Croſſe, about 1498. and made new againe by Maſter William Lambe, 1577. with an help alſo at Old-bourne-bridge.

The little Conduite, commonly tearmed the Pilling-Conduit, by the Stocks-Market, about 1500.

The Conduit at Biſhops-gate, 1513.

The Conduit at London-wall, 1528.

The Conduit without Aldgate, 1535.

The Conduite in Lothbury and Colman-ſtreet, 1546.

The Conduit of Thames-water, at Downe-gate, 1568.

Nor may I hear forget the ſtandard of Thames water by Leaden-hall, which being deriued from the forcier of water, made by Peter Moris forenamed, aſcending vp ouer the ſtaple of S. Magnus Church, at the north end of London bridge, conuaieth water into many mens houſes in Thames ſtreete, New-Fiſh-ſtreete, Graſſe-ſtreete; And ſo mounteth vp ſtil in Pipes, to the North-weſt corner of Leaden-Hall (the higheſt ground in al the Citty) where the waſt of the maine Pipe riſing into this ſtandard (prouided at the cities charge) at euery tide was prouided to run forth 4. waies, at foure ſeuerall ſpouts, for plentiful ſeruice of the neere adioyning Inhabitants, and cleanſing the Channels paſſing thoſe foure ſeuerall waies.

The Conduits of Thames-water, by the Pariſh-Churches of S. Mary Magdalen, and Saint Nicholas Cold-Abbey, neere to old Fiſh-ſtreete, were made in An. 1583. Beſide the water-Forcier by London Bridge, before remembred, and another (made ſince) neere to Broken-wharffe, for conueiance of Thames-water into mens Houſes, by an Engliſh gentleman, named M. Beuis Bulmar, in An. 1594. Nor will wee forget the new Conduit, lately built by Alderſgate, & Thames-water alſo thither conuaied, by an Engliſh Gentleman, named Thomas Hayes, in An. 1610.

Come

Come we now to the ancient deuiſion of this worthy Citty, which (as Fitz-Stephen, ſayeth, foure hundred yeares agoe.) This Citty, euen as Rome, is deuided into Wards. It hath yearelie Sheriffes, inſtead of Conſuls; and hath the dignitie of Senators, in Aldermen. Thoſe wards, both before, and in the raigne of Henry the third, were 24. in number, 13. lying on the Eaſt-ſide of Walbrooke, and 11. on the Weſt: but thoſe Wards in the weſt, growing in greatnes to exceede the other in the Eaſt: in Anno 1393. and 2. of Richard the ſecond. Faringdon Ward, (being then one entire ward) was by Parliament deuided into two, alſo tearmed Faringdon within, Faringdon without, and allowed to haue two Aldermen. So ỹ twelue wards were then on the weſt ſide of Walbrooke, and the whole number made 25. wards. The Liberties of the Borough of South-warke, were afterwarde purchaſed by the Maior, Comminalty, and Cittizens, and added to London as the 26. warde, in An. 1150. whereby the number of Alder-men grewe to bee 26. But becauſe my purpoſed breuity, keeps within the Cities bounds only, and not (at this time, till publication of my generall Chronicle of London and Middleſex, euen ſo farre as the Lorde Maior and Sheriffes powre extendeth) permits mee to exceede that compaſſe; I ſhall nowe ſay nothing, eyther of South-warke, or Londons Suburbs.

The Cities deuiſion into Wardes.

26. wards, 26. Aldermē

Portſoken ward (ſo named of the Franchiſe of Aldgate) was ſomtime a Guild, and beganne in

Portſoken Ward.

King Edgars time, aboue 600. yeares since, being called Knighten Guilde, of 13. poore knights or Souldiors, that (being fauoured by the King and Land, for (seruice done them) had a parcel of Land granted them on the Cities East side, and liberty of a Guild for euer. Prouided, that each of them should victoriously accomplishe 3. combates; one aboue ground; one vnder ground; & the third in the water: Also, at a certaine day appointed, they shoulde run with Speares in East Smithfield, against all comers: all which, they worthily performed, and therefore the King called it Knighten Guilde. I read but of one parish church in this ward, which is called S. Buttolph without Algate, and a small parish Church, for the Inhabitants of the Close, sometime called S. Trinity, afterward the Minories. This Portsoken Ward hath an Alderman, and his Deputy, fiue common Counsellors, foure Constables, four Scauengers, eighteen wardmote Enquestmen, and a Beadle. It is sessed at foure pounde, ten shillings, for the fifteene.

Knighten Guilde.

Tower-street Ward.

Tower-street ward, is the first warde within London-wall East-ward. In which ward are three parish churches, viz. Alhallowes Barking, S. Olaue in Hart-street, and S. Dunstane in the East, beside S. Peter in the Tower, for the inhabitants there. Also two Halles of Companies, viz. Cloth-workers Hall, in Mincheon Lane, and Bakers Hall, in Hart or Harpe Lane. This ward hath an Alderman, and his Deputy; common Counsell, eight: Constables thirteen. Scauengers

Cloth-workers hall.

Bakers hall

uengers, twelue. Wardemote Enqueſt, thirteene, & a Beadle: It is alſo ſeized at 26. pounds to the fifteene.

Aldgate Ward, taketh name of the Gate. In which ward are three parish churches, viz. S. Katherine Christ-Church: Saint* Andrew Vndershaft, and S. Katherine* Coleman. Likewise three Hals of Societies or companies: Iremongers Hall, in Fen-Church-ſtreete, Bricklayers Hall, in Sprinckle Alley, now called Sugerloafe Alley, of the like ſigne: and Fletchers Hal in S. Mary ſtreet. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy, ſixe common Counſellors, nine Scauengers, eighteene Wardemote Enqueſtmen, and a Beadle. It is alſo tared at fiue pound to the fifteene. Algate ward

* Of a ſhaft or Maypole higher then the Church Steeple.
*Of Colmã Haw, a Haw yard or garden.

Limeſtreet ward, ſo named, of vſuall making and ſelling of Lime there in former times, as is ſuppoſed. In this ward ſtandeth Leaden-Hall, which, before it was built of ſtone, appertained to Sir Hugh Neuill Knight, in Anno 1309. Afterward, the famous and mighty man, Syr Simon Eyre, ſometime an Vpholſter, and next a Draper, builded it ſquare of ſtone, as now it ſtandeth, with a fayre and large chappell in the Eaſt-ſide of the Quadrant, on the Porch whereof, was engrauen, *Dextra Domini exaltauit me*; The right hand of the Lord hath exalted mee: And on the North-wall in the Church, theſe words, *Honorandus famoſus Mercator Simon Eyre, huius operis*, &c. The honorable and famous Marchant Simon Eyre, founder of this worke, once Limeſtreete Ward. Leaden hall

Maior

Maior of this Citty, and Cittizen and Draper of the ſame. He builded there alſo a goodly Granary for corne, and made there an open and free market. It was once intended for a Burſſe, for aſſembly of Merchants: but tooke not effect, the Merchants meeting ſtill in Lombard-ſtreete, as before they had done. In this ward, is not anie Pariſh church, but ſmall portions of two pariſhes, and no hall of any company. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy, foure common Counſellors, foure Conſtables, two Scauengers, ſixteene wardemote Enqueſt, and a Beadle. It is ſeſſed at one pound, nineteene ſhillings, two pence halfpenny farthing in the ſixteene.

Biſhopſgate Ward.

Byſhopſgate ward, ſo named of the gate, ſuppoſed to be built by a byſhop of London. Within this warde and Liberties of London, ſtandeth the Hoſpitall of S. Marie of Bethlem, founded by Simon Fitz-Mary, Sheriffe of London, Anno. 1246. beeing an Hoſpitall for diſtracted people. Also, a goodly church-yard for burial of the dead, enclosed with a wall of bricke, performed at the charge of Sir Thomas Roe, Merchant Taylor, and Lorde Maior of London. There is likewiſe a goodly houſe, named Fiſhers-tolly by Queene Elizabeth; and Crosbies place, ſo called by the builder thereof, Sir John Crosbie, Grocer and Woolman. Alſo Greſham Colledge, builded by Sir Thomas Greſham, Knight, and appointed (by his will) to be a colledge of Readers (wyth large ſtipends allowed them) in Diuinity, Law, Phiſicke, Aſtronomy, Geometry, and Muſicke.

Hoſpitall of Bethelem.

New church yard.

Fiſhers tolly

Crosby place.

Greſham Colledge.

In

In this ward is three pariſh churches, viz. Saint Buttolphes without Byſhopſ-gate, S. Ethelburge within the Gate, S. Helens adioyning to the Nunnes Dyor. There was alſo (ſometime) the pariſh Clearkes Hall, and nowe there is the Leather Sellers Hall, which they haue (verie lately) to their great coſt, new builded. It hath an Aldorman, and his two Deputies, one without, and the other within the gate, 6. common Counſellers, 7. Conſtables, 7. Scauengers, 13. wardmote Enqueſt, and a Beadle. It is tared at 13. l. to the Fiftane.

Leather ſellers Hall.

Broadſtreet ward, tooke name of a ſtreet, called Brodeſtreet, wherein are diuers goodly houſes, one that belonged to Sir William Powlet, Lord Treaſurer, another to the Earle of Shrewſbury, and a third, wherein (ſometime dwelt the Earle of Oxenford neere to Sir Thomas Greſhams Alnes houſes. In this ward are fiue pariſh churches, viz. Alhallowes by the wall, at the North-end of Brodeſtreet, S. Peters the poore, at the South-end, S. Martines Oteſwitch, in Three-needle ſtreete, S. Bennet *Fynk, Saint Bartholomew by the Exchange, and S. Chriſtopher by the Stockes Market. Beſide the Friers Auguſtines, which ſerueth for the Dutch nation, and another church ſeruing in like manner for the French. There is alſo a free Schoole called S. Anthonies ſchoole, and two hals of ſocieties: one in Throgmorton ſtreet, called Drapers hall, which ſomtime belonged to the Lord Cromwel; the other in Three-needle-ſtreete, called Merchant-

Brodeſtreet ward.

* Of three men ſo named, founders thereof

* Of Fynke the founder.

S Anthonies ſchoole.

Drapers hal

Merchant Taylers hal.

chant Taylors Hall. This ward hath an Alder-mon and his deputy, 10. common counsellers, 10 Constables, 8. Scauengers, 12. wardmote En-quest, and a Beadle. It is tared to the fifteene in London at 27. li. and accounted in the Exchequer after 25. li.

Corne-hill Ward

Cornhil ward, deriued the name thereof from a corne Market, which had bin there kept time out of mind. In this ward is the Weyhouse or Kings beame, for all Merchandizes brought from be-yond the seas; which house was builded by Syr Thomas Louell, Knight, and a faire front of Te-nements towards the street, which he gaue to the worshipfull company of Grocers, he being a free Brother of that society. There is also the Burse for Merchants, afterward by Queen Elizabeth named the Royal Exchange, builded by S. Tho-mas Gresham, knight, Agent to her Maiesty, be-gun in an. 1566. and finished 1567. In this ward likewise is a Grammer Schoole, adioyning to S. Peters church, which in times past, had bin a Library, and repaired by the executors of sir Iohn Crosby, Alderman. In Corne-hill ward are two parish churches, viz. S. Peters vppon Cornhill, builded in the time of king Lucius, by Thean, the first Arch-byshop of London; And S. Michaell Tharchangell, the foundation thereof being vn-certaine, but William Rus, Alderman, gaue a fayre bell to this church, naming it Rus (corrupt-ly called Rouse) to ring out nightly at eight of the clock. No hall of any Society is in this ward, but it hath an Alderman and his Deputie, foure com-

The Weyhouse.

The Royall Exchange.

S. Peters schoole.

Rus Bell in Cornehill.

commun counſellors, foure conſtables, four Scauengers, ſixteen wardmote Enqueſt, and a Beadle: It is charged at ſixteene pound in the Fifteene.

Langborne Warde, bearing name of a long Bourne of ſweete water, which (in elder times) breaking forth into Fen-church ſtreet, ran along the ſame ſtreete, and Lombards ſtreet alſo, called of the Longobards, or Lombards (Merchaunts there meeting twice a day) to the weſt end of S. Mary woolnothes church, where turning ſouthward, and breaking into ſmall ſhares, Rilles, or ſtreames: it gaue a name to Shareborn Lane, South-borne Lane, or Shirborne Lane, running thence South into the Thames. In this warde are ſeauen Pariſh churches, viz. S. Gabriell Fenchurch, corruptly called Fanchurch; Saint Dionis Backchurch, at Lime-ſtreet end; Alhallowes Staning, or Stane church, or Stone church (by differing from others, then builded of timber) at Martlane end. S. Edmond the king & martir. in Lombardsſtreet, neere *Birchouers lane, now called Birchen lane. Alhallowes in Lombardes ſtreet; S. Nicholas Acon or Hacon, in S. Nicholas lane; and S. Mary Woolnoth in Lombardſtreet. One Hal there is in this ward called Pewterers Hall, in Limeſtreet, which ſociety was admitted a brotherhood, in the 13. yeare of Edward the 4. It hath alſo an Alderman & his deputy, 8. common counſellers, 15. conſtables. 9. Scauengers, 17. wardmote Enqueſt, and a Beadle: In the Exchequer, it is taxed at 20li. 9. s. d. to the fifteen.

Langborne Ward, all fenny about with a Moriſh ground.

*Of Birchoner the firſt builder and owner.

Pewterers Hall.

Belins

Belins-gate Ward.

Belins gate, or Billingſgate ward (ſo named of Belin the king, firſt founder of the gate or hauen) wherein are many Keyes and Wharfes, whereof is not now my purpoſe to ſpeake, becauſe they are referred to my Chronicle of London at large. In this ward are fiue parish churches, viz. Saint Buttolph by Belings-gate, in Thames ſtreet, S. Marie on the Hill, the ſtreete or lane being ſo called; S. Margaret Pattens (becauſe pattens were vſually there made and ſolde) in Rode lane; S. Andrew Hubbert, in Eaſt cheape; and Saint George in Buttolph-lane. It hath alſo an Alderman and his Deputy, common councellers vncertaine, Conſtables eleuen, Scauengers ſix, Wardmote Enqueſt fourteene, and a Beadle. It is tared in London to the Fifteene, at two & thirty pound, and in the Exchequer, at one and thirty pounnd, ten ſhillings.

Bridgeward

Bridge-ward within, receiued name of the famous Bridge of London. In it are foure parish churches, viz. S. Magnus, at the Bridge-foote, Saint Margaret in Bridge-ſtreet, S. Leonard Milke Church (ſo named of William Melker, an eſpecially builder thereof) on Fiſh-ſtreete hill, and S. Benet Graſſe-church, ſo tearmed of the Hearbe-Market there kept. In this ward alſo, is the Fiſhmongers Hall, which Societie were (ſomtime) two ſeuerall companies, called Stock-fiſhmongers, and Saltfiſhmongers: and they had fiue ſeuerall Halles, becauſe their companie was ſo great. It hath an Alderman and his deputy, ſixteene common counſellers, fifteene conſtables,

Fiſhmongers Hall. Stock fiſhmongers. Salt fiſhmongers.

ſtables, Scauengers ſix, ſixteene wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is tared at 47. pound to the fifteene.

Candlewick-ſtreet Ward, or Candle-wright ſtreete Ward, ſo called (as is likelieſt) of Thandlers or makers of candles, both of wax and Tallow, who ſeemed (for the more part) there to inhabite. Albeit it is verie euident, that Weauers of Drapery, Tapery, and Napery, did altogether dwell there, time out of minde; till they were out-worne, and their place poſſeſſed by the Drapers. Candlewick ſtreet ward. Weauers of Drapery. Tapery, and Napery.

In this Warde are fiue Pariſh churches, (viz.) Saint Clements in Eaſt-cheape, Saynt Mary Abchurch, or Vpchurch, Saint Michaell in Crookedlane, which was ſometime called the colledge in Crooked-lane, Saint Martine Orgar, and Saint Lawrence Poultney, ſo called by Iohn Poultney, Maior of London, who made it a colledge of Ieſus, and of Corpus Chriſti, for a Maiſter and ſeauen Chaplaynes. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie, eight common counſellers, eyght conſtables, ſix Scauengers, twelue Wardemote Enqueſt, and a Beadle. It is tared at ſixteene pound to the fifteene.

Walbrooke Warde, taketh Name of the ſtreete, where vnder was (ſometime) a brooke, named Wallus Brooke, as hath already beene elſe-where declared. In which Ward are fiue Pariſh churches, viz. S. Swithen by London-ſtone, S. Mary Woolchurch, ſo called of a beam Walbrooke Ward.

to

Woll-Church Haw or Beame.

to weigh woll, and was called Woll-Church Haw; Saint Stephen by Walbrooke; Saint Iohn vpon Walbrooke; and Saint Mary Buthaw, or Boathaw, so called, of neere adioyning to a Yard or Yaw, where Boates (in elder times) were made, and landed (from Downegate) there to be mended. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy; 11. common Councellers; 9. Constables; 6. Scauengers; 13. Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is tared in London at 33. pounds to the fiftéene.

Downegate Ward.

Downgate ward, so cald, vpon the down descending to the Thames. In this ward is the Guilda Aula, or Halla Teutonicorũ, for the Merchants of the Haunce, or of Allemaigne, commonly cald the Stilyard, where they had their Garners to lay vppe their Corne, and other commodities; as Cables, Ropes, Masts, Pitch, Tarre, Flax, Hemp, Linnen-cloth, Wainscots, Wax, Steele, &c. There is also a House, anciently called Cold-Harbrough, which (after diuers passages from Man to Man) in the eyght yeare of King Edward the third, came to Sir Iohn Poultney, who hauing beene Maior foure times in that house, it then toke the name of Poultneys Inne. More, there is a famous Grammar-Schoole, founded in the yeare 1561. by the M. Wardens and assistants of the Merchant-Taylors, in the Parish of Saint Laurance Poultney. Richard Hilles, sometime Maister of that worthy Society, had giuen formerly fiue hundred pounds towardes the purchase of an house, called The Mannor of the

Guilda Aula Teutonicorum.

Colde Harbrough.

Merchaunt Taylors schoole, the Mannor of the Rose.

the Roſe, belonging ſometime to the Duke of Buckingham, wherein the ſaide Schoole is kept. In this Ward are two Parish-Churches (Viz:) Alhallowes ad foenum, in the Ropery, (becauſe Hay was there ſold at Hay-wharffe, and Ropes in the High-ſtreete) or Alhallowes the more; and Alhallowes on the Cellers (becauſe it ſtandeth on Vaults) or Alhallowes the leſſe. There are likewiſe foure ſeuerall Hals of Companies, as, vpon Walbrooke, the Skinners Hall, belonging to that Worſhipfull Company; and Tallow-Chandlers Hall; Ioyners Hall in Greenewich-lane, now called Fryer-lane; and Dyers Hall in Thames-ſtreete. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie; 9. common Councellers; 8. Conſtables; 5. Scauengers; 14. Wardemote Enqueſt, and a Beadle. It is taxed at 28. pounds to the fiftéene. Heere we end the thirteene Wardes, that are all on the Eaſt ſide of the water courſe of Walbrooke, not any one houſe lying on the Weſt-ſide.

Skinners hall.
Tallow-Chandlers Hall.
Ioyners hall
Dyers Hall.

## ¶ Wardes on the Weſt-ſide of Walbrooke.

VIntry Ward, of Vintoners (cled in olde time Merchants Vintoners) & the Vintry, for the Merchantes of Burdeaux there craned vp their Wines, out of Lighters and other Veſſels, and being there landed, made Sale of them within forty daies after, &c. There are in this

Vintry ward.

this Ward, foure Parish Churches (viz.) Saint Michaell Pater Noster in the Royall, which Church was new builded and made a College of Saint Spirit, and Saint Marie, founded by Richard Whittington, Mercer, foure times Maior; for a Maister, foure fellowes Maisters of Art; Clearkes, Conducts, Choristes, &c. And an Almes-house called Gods-house, or Hospitall, for thirteene poore Men, &c. Saint Thomas Apostle, by Wringwren-lane; Saint Martine in the Vintrie, sometime called Saint Martine de Beremand Church; and Saint Iames at Garlicke-Hithe, because Garlicke was sold vsually there, on the bancke of the Riuer of Thames. Richard Plat, Brewer, founded a Free-schole there, 1601. In Brode lane is ỳ Parish Clearks Hall purchased by them, after losse of their Hall in Byshop'gatestreet. Vintoners Hall, neere the Lane called Stodies Lane, giuen them by Sir Iohn Stodie, Vintoner, Mayor, in Anno 1357. Plummers Hall in Palmers Lane, nowe called Anchor-lane. Fruiterers Hall, in Worcester house, some-times belonging to the Earles of Worcester. Cutlers Hall, in Horsebridgestreet. Glasiers Hall in Kerion Lane: All which Halls are in the said Ward. It hath also an Alderman and his Deputy; nine Common Councellers; nine Constables; foure Scauengers; foureteene Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle: It is taxed at fiue pounds, thirteene Shillings, foure pence, to the fifteene.

Whittingtons Colledge.

Parish Clerks hall.

Vintners hall.

Plummers Hall.

Fruiterers Hall.

Cutlers hall

Glasiers hal

Cordwainer street ward.

Cordwainer-streete-ward, taking name of Cord-

Cordwainers, or Shoe-makers, Curriers, and Workers of Leather, there dwelling. In this Ward are three Pariſh-churches, viz. Saint Anthonies in Budge-Rowe, corruptly called Saint Antlings; Alde Mary Church; and new Marie Church, or Mary le Bow, of Saint Marie de Arcubus, in Weſt-Cheaping, being builded (in the Conquerours time) vppon Arches: In which Church is kept the Court of the Arches, which here taketh name of the place, & not of the Court. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputy; common Councellers eight, Conſtables, 8. Scauengers eight, Wardmote Enqueſt foureteene, and a Beadle. It is tared in London to the fifteene, at 52. li. 16. s. And in the Exchequer at 52. li. 6. s.

Nine a clocke Bell is nightly rung.

Cheape-Ward, taking name of the Market there kept, called Weſt-cheaping, hath in it ſeauen Pariſh Churches, viz. Saint Benet Shrog, or Shorehog, but the moſt ancient name is Benet Shorne, of Benedict Shorne, ſometime a Citizen and Stocke-Fiſh-Monger, a newe builder, repayrer, and Benefactor thereof. S. Pancrace by Sopars-lane; Saint Mildred in the Poultry; Saint Marie Cole-church, of one Cole that builded it; Saint Martin Pomerie, in Ironmong-lane, ſo called of Apples ſometime there growing; Alhallowes in Honny-Lane; Saint Laurance in the Iury, and the Chappell of Guild-Hall, ſometime a Colledge. Guild Hall it ſelfe alſo is in this Ward, begunne to be newe builded in Anno 1411. the twelfth of Henry the fourth,

Cheap ward

Guild Hall built, Anno 1411.

by Thomas Knoles then Maior, and the Aldermen his brethren, to the charge whereof the companies gaue large benevolences: it was made (of a little cottage:) so large and goodlie as now it standeth, to haue the Courts for the Cittie kept therein, being nine in number.

The Courts kept in Guild.

Courts for the Citty.

1. Court of Common Councell.
2. Court of the Lord Maior, and the Aldermen his Bretheren.
3. The Court of Hustings.
4. The Court of Orphanes.
5. The Sheriffes two Courts.
6. The Court of the Wardmote.
7. The Court of Hall-mote.
8. The Court of Requests, commonly called the Court of Conscience.
9. The Chamberlaines Court for Prentises, and making them free.

Moreouer, in this Ward, are the Hals of two very worshipfull Companies; the Grocers Hall in Conyhope lane, which Companie being first called Pepperers, were incorporated by the name of Grocers, in Anno 1345. The Mercers Hall, sometime an Hospitall, entitled of Saint Thomas of Acon, or Acars, wherein is said a Free-Schole to haue bene long kept. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputy, 11. common Councellers; 9. Scauengers; 12. Wardmote Enquest,

Grocers hal

Mercers Chappell and Hall.

Enqueſt, and a Beadle. In London it is ſeſſed at 72, li. 16, s. to the fiftæn, and in the Exchequer, at 72. li. 11. s.

Coleman ſtreet ward.

Coleman ſtreete-ward, taking name of a ſtreet ſo called, by one Coleman, the firſt builder and owner thereof, wherein are three Pariſh Churches, viz. Saint Olaue Vpwell in the old Iewry, called Colechurch-ſtreete ſometimes; Saint Margaret in Lothbury: and Saint Stephen in Colemanſtreere. It was named the Old Iewry, becauſe the Iewes had a Sinagogue, where now ſtandeth the Tauerne, knowne by the name of the Windmill, and their dwelling was all there-about. The Founders Hall in Lothbury; Lathbery, or Loadberie, ſo named of a Bery or Court in elder time there kept; whereof ſome vſe hath bin, and is alſo made by the Merchants Aduentures: and in Coleman ſtreet is the Armorers Hall, who were made a Fraternitie or Guild of S. George, in the firſt yeare of King Henry the firſt. This Ward hath an Alder-man and his Deputie; common Counſellors foure, Conſtables foure, Scauengers foure, wardmote Enqueſt thirteene, and a Beadle. It is tared at fiftæne pounds, ſixetæn ſhillings nine pence to the fiftæne.

Founders hall.

Armorers Hall.

Baſſings Hall ward.

Baſſings Hall Ward, and ſaid to be ſo named of Baſſinges Hall, the very principall Houſe of the Ward, which appertained to the Familie of the Baſſings (a name of great renowne and antiquity in this Realme) who builded the goodlie building (afterward called Bakewell Hall, of one

Thomas Bakewel dwelling there, corruptly tearmed Blackwell Hall) and gaue it the Name of Bassings Haugh, or Hall, as by their Armes, (before the old worke was taken downe) in very many places appeared. In this Ward is but one Parish Church, called Saint Michaell at Bassings Haugh: and diuers Halles of Companies, as Masons Hall, of what antiquity, appeareth not. Weauers Hall, being then Weauers of Woollen-cloath, whose Fraternity or Guilde is of great antiquity and power, confirmed by Charter from King Henrie the second, as they held it in time of his Grandfather, King Henrie the first, or rather (as the very wordes are) freer, better, worshipfullier, and wholier, then in his said Grand-fathers time.

Bassinges Haugh.

Masons hall

Weauers hall.

Weauers of Woollen Clothes.

Other ordinaunces were there then beside, that Woollen-cloathes should bee in breadth two yardes within the Listes, and as good in the midst, as in the sides, &c. But if any Man made Cloath of Spanish Wooll, mixed with English Woll; the Port-graue, or principall Magistrate of London ought to burne it, &c. There is also Girdlers Hall, and Coopers haue their Hall neer to the Parish Church of Saint Michaell. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputy, foure Common Councellers; two Constables; two Scauengers; 17. Wardmote Enquest, and a a Beadle. In London it is tared at 7. li. and so in the Exchequer likewise, to the fifteene.

Girdlers hal

Coopers Hall.

Cripples-gate Ward.

Cripples-gate ward, so named of the gate, called Cripples-gate, wherin are 6. parish churches, viz.

viz. S. Mary Aldermanbury, of a Bery or court-hal there kept, now cald the Guildhal, ſ. Alphage (ſometime Elſing Hoſpital or ſpittle) by London wal, ſ. Mary Magdalen in Milkſtreet, ſ. Albons in wodſtreet, ſ. Michael in Huggenlane, and ſ. Giles without Cripplegate. Halles of companies, are Habberdaſhers Hall, in Mayden lane, and Waxchandlers Hall there alſo. Pinners hal ſometime, but nowe Plaiſterers Hall, in Adle ſtreet: and Pinners Hal is now in Siluerſtreet. Brewers Hall likewiſe in Adleſtreete, and Bowyers Hall not farre from Monkswel-ſtreet. This warde hath an Alderman and his Deputy within the Gate, eight common counſellers, nine conſtables, twelue ſcauengers, fifteen wardmote Enqueſt, and a beadle. Without the Gate alſo, it hath a Deputy, two common counſellors, foure conſtables, foure Scauengers, ſeauenteen wardmote Enqueſt, and a Beadle: It is tared in London at forty pound to the Fifteene.

Haberdaſhers hall.
Waxchandlers hall.
Plaiſterers hall.
Brewers hal.
Pinners hal.
Bowyers hal

Alderſgate warde, taking name likewiſe of Alderſgate, hath ſix Pariſh churches in it (viz.) ſaint Marie Staining, in Stayning lane, ſ. Iohn Zachary, in Engaine or Maidenlane, ſ. Leonard in Fauſter-lane, ſaint Olaue in Siluerſtreet, ſaint Anne by Alderſgate, and ſaint Buttolph without Alderſgate. Hals of companies, firſt, Goldſmiths Hall at Maydenlane end, they beeing an ancient and very worſhipfull ſociety; for the firſt Maior that euer was in London, was a brother of that ſociety, named Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Lieſtane, who continued Maior more then 24.

Alderſgate Ward

Goldſmiths Hall.

Cooks hall. yeares together. The Cookes or Pastelers haue a Hall also in Aldersgatestreet, and they were admitted to be a company, and to haue a Mayster and wardens, in the 22. yeare of Edward the fourth. This ward hath an Alderman and his two Deputies; one within, the other without, common counsellers fiue, Constables, 8. Scauengers, 9. wardmote Enquest, fourteene, and a Beadle. In London it is tared at seauen pound to the fifteene, and in Exchequer at six pounde, nineteene shillings.

Faringdon ward within

Faringdon ward within, or Infra, distinguished (by that word of difference) from the other warde of the same name, which is without the citty wals, and thereon tearmed Faringdon extra, or without. Yet (in elder times) these two wardes were but one, and vnder the care of one alderman, vntill the 17. yeare of king Richard the second; when, the greatnesse thereof caused it to be deuided into two wardes, being then ordered (by parliament) to haue two aldermen also as to this day it continueth. This whole great ward of Faringdon both within and without, deriued her name of W. Faringdon, or Farendon, Goldsmith, alderman of that warde, and one of the sheriffes of London, in anno 1281. the ninth yeare of king Edward the first, when he purchased the aldermanry of this ward, as is euident to be seene, by an abstract of deedes, from Thomas de Ardene, or *A*rderna, to Ankerin⁹ de *A*uern, Ralphe le Feure, and so to William Farringdon, or Farendon, cittizen and Goldsmith, and to his heires,

How Faringdon warde took name.

heires, ſo comming to Nicholas Faringdon, ſon to the ſaid William, which Nicholas was a goldſmith alſo, and 4. times Maior: liuing 53. yeares after his firſt being Maior, and hee buylded the Arch or gate by S. Auguſtines Church, which giueth paſſage into the South Churchyard of S. Pauls.

In this ward of Faringdon within, is the goodly Cathedrall Church of S. Paule, and 9. other pariſh Churches beſide, viz. ſ. Peter at the croſſe in Weſt cheape, Saint Fauſter in Fauſter-lane; Chriſt Church, made a Pariſh churche of the Gray-Friers Church, and of two Pariſh churches, S. Nicholas, and ſaint Ewin, and alſo an Hoſpitall for poore children, ſaint Mathew in Friday ſtreet, S. Auguſtine by Paules gate, Saint Faith vnder Paules Church, S. Martins at Ludgate, Saint Anne at the Black-fryers, S. Michael ad Bladum, or at Corne (corruptly called the Querne) by Pauls gate, where ſomtime was a Corne market kept, and the chappel of ſ. Iames by Crippleſgate. Hals of Societies, Imbroiderers Hall in Guthurus, Barbar Chirurgions hal in Monkes-well-ſtreet, Sadlers hall in Cheap, Butchers Hall in Chick-lane in the Shambles, which ſerueth alſo for ỹ Feltmakers. This ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie, twelue Common Counſellors, ſeauenteene Conſtables, eighteene Scauengers, eyghteen wardmote Enqueſt, and a Beadle, It is tared at 50. pound to the Fifteene. 1361.

The free ſchoole in Paules Churchyard, founded by Iohn Collet, Doctor in Diuinity and Deane of Paules.

Imbroyderers hall.

Barbar chirurgions hall.

Sadlers hall.

Butchers & Felt makers hall.

Bread-ſtreete Ward, ſo called of bread there

Bread ſtreet Ward.

ſolde (in elder time) in that ſtreete, which giueth name to the whole Warde, and hath foure Pariſh Churches in it. viz. Alhallowes in Bread-ſtreete, ſaint Mildreds in Bread-ſtreete, ſaynt Iohn Euangeliſt in Friday-ſtreete, and ſ. Margaret Moyſes in Friday-ſtreete. Hals of companies, are the Salters Hall in Bread-ſtreete, and Cordwainers or Shoo-makers Hall, in Maiden-lane, or Diſtar lane. This ward hath an Alderman, and his Deputy; tenne common Counſellors, tenne Conſtables, eight Scauengers thirteene Wardemote Enqueſt, and a Beadle. In London it is tared at thirty ſeauen pound to the fifteen, and in the Exchequer at 36. pounde, 18. ſhillings, two pence.

Salters hall.

Cordwainers hall.

Queene-Hith Ward, ſo called of the Queens Hith or water Gate, whereof wee haue alreadye ſpoken. In which warde are ſeauen Pariſh churches, Viz. ſaint Trinity in Trinity lane, ſaint Nicholas Cold-abbey, at Knight-riders ſtreete, ſaint Nicholas Olaue on Bredſtreet hill, ſaint Mary de Monte Alto, or Mounthaunt, by Old Fiſhſtreet hill, or Fiue foot lane, ſaint Machael at the Queens Hith, ſaint Mary Summerſet neere Broken wharfe, and ſaint Peter, called Parua, by Paules wharfe. Hals of companies are theſe, Painter Stayners Hall in Trinitie Lane, Blackſmiths Hall on Lambert hill. This warde hath an Alderman and his Deputy, fiue common Counſellors, nine conſtables, eight Scauengers, thirtéene Warde-mote Enqueſt, and a beadle. In London it is tared at twenty pound to

Queenes Hith ward.

Painters hal.

Blackſmiths hall.

to the fifteen, and in the Exchequer at 19. pound 16. ſhillings, two pence.

Caſtel Baynard ward, ſo named of an auncient caſtle there ſtanding, belonging ſometime to one Baynard, a Nobleman, that came into this Lande with the conquerour, and firſt builded it. In this ward are foure pariſh churches, viz. ſaint Benet Hude, or Hithe, by Paules Wharfe, ſaint Andrew by the Wardrobe, ſaint Mary Magdalen in Old-fiſhſtreete, and ſaynt Gregory by Paules church. Halles of companies, are theſe, Wood-mongers Hall, on the Eaſt-ſide of Paules wharfe Hill, and the Stationers Hall, neere the weſt end of Paules: but conuerted to a Tauerne ſince then, and the Hall was alſo in Milkeſtreet, for a while, but afterwarde tranſlated agayne into Amen lane, at the end of Paternoſter row, to a goodly auncient houſe in olde time, belonging to Iohn Duke of Britaine, and Earle of Richmond. Afterward called Pembrokes Inne, as appertaining to the Earles of Pembroke, in the time of Richard the ſecond, the eighteenth yeare, and Henry the firſt the fourteenth yeare. But it lately belonged to Henry Lord of Aburgaueny, and was called Aburgauenie houſe. This ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie, common counſellers, 9. conſtables, 10. Scauengers, 7. wardmote Enqueſt, 14. and a Beadle: In London it is tared at twelue pound to the fifteen, and in the Exchequer at 11. li. 13. s.

Caſtle Baynard ward.

Woodmongees hall.

Stationers Hall.

There remayne, yet two more, Faringdon

ward

Faringdon warde and Bride-ward both without.

ward without, and Bridgeward without, or the Borough of the South-warke, & the round inuironing Suburbs without the wals, the Dutchy of Lancaster, and Cittie of Westminster; All which beeing not comprized within this instant determination, craue fauour for reference to our Chronicle of London, wherein, whatsoeuer is wanting heere, and this slender pile woulde not permit (stretching alreadye beyond expectation) shall (by Gods assistance) be more fully, effectually, and largely performed, then (as yet) Mayster Iohn Stow his Suruey, or any other worke (that I haue seene) hath so amply deliuered, especially concerning this honorable Citty, and the Countie of Middlesex, so far as the cities bounds and priuiledges do grant admittance. Let me not be rashly censured in these gayseeming words, to cast any disgrace or il aspersion, on the painful labors of that worthy and industrious man Mayster Iohn Stow (whom liuing, I loued as a dear and intimate friend, and dead, I honor with all kinde remembrance) for such as haue had knowledge of our inward respect of each other, & what hath past betweene vs (concerning this businesse for the Citty) I know will no way mis-conceite of me: they are too wise and vertuous, to swerue in a knowne truth, and more sounde and solide, then malice can haue any power to seduce: whatsoeuer then is referred to our further intention, as it hath bin a labour willingly vnder-taken by me (albeit both beseeming and requiring a much better Iudgement) So, by his helpe, who is both

both the hope and helpe of all Vertuous endeauours, it ſhall bee effected with all poſſible diligence.

## Of the Temporall Gouernment of this Honorable Citty, ſince the Conqueſt.

*To the worſhipfull M. Rowland Smart, Eſquire, Sword-Bearer of London.*

PAſſing ouer thoſe Tempeſtuous times of the old Britons, Romans, Saxons, and Danes, till Ethelred or Alfred, Earle of Mercia, who had the cuſtody of this citty in his power: he no ſooner dyed, but both it, and all other poſſeſſions belonging to the ſaide Earle, returned to King Edward (ſurnamed the Elder) &c. Remaining thus in obedience to him, he then ordaining Portgraues, to haue the gouernement thereof vnder him: which name, Portgraue, or Portreue, is compounded of two Saxon words, Porte and Gereſe, or Reue: Porte ſignifyeng a Towne or City, & Gereſe or Reue, a Guardian or Ruler of the ſaid town or city. Before the conqueſt, in the daies of k. Edw. the Confeſſor, one Wolfegare was Portgraue, as appeareth by the kings charter to him, thus: *Edward K. greeteth Alfward byſhop, Wolfegare my Portgraue, & al the Burgeſſes in London, &c.* Theſe Portgraues continued in William the conquerors time, William Rufus,

Ethelred Earle of Mercia

Portgraue or Portreue

Wolfegar Portgraue.

Rufus, and Henry the first, when Hugh Buche was Portgraue, and Leofstanus, Gold-smith, Prouoſt, which name of Prouoſt then beganne: for Aubery de Vere was (afterward) Portgraue, and Robert Bar-Querel, Prouoſt. Then (by the ſame King) was the ſhertuewick of London and Middleſex granted to the Cittizens of London. In the raigne of King Stephen, Gilbert Becket was Portgraue, and Andrew Bucheuet Prouoſt: and Godfrey Magnauilla, or Mandeuil (by guift of Maude the Empreſſe) was Portgraue or ſheriffe of London and Middleſex, for the yearely farme of three hundred pound, as appeareth by the Charter. In the time of k. Henry the ſecond, thoſe Portgraues were likewiſe (in diuers records) called Vicecomites, Vicounties or ſheriffes, as being vnder an Earle, and then (as ſince) vſed that Office, as the ſheriffes of London now doo. Albeit ſome Authors tearme them Domeſmen, Elder-men, or Iudges of the Kings court. Heere then, it ſhall not ſeeme impertinent, once more to remember the wordes of William Fitz-ſtephen, ſaying. Euen as Rome is deuided into Wards, ſo is this Citty. It hath yearely Sheriffes, inſted of Conſuls. It hath the dignity of Senators, in Aldermen; It hath vnder Officers, and (according to the qualitie of Lawes) ſo hath it ſeueral Courts, and generall aſſemblies, vpon appointed daies.

Prouoſt.

Robert Bar-Querel prouoſt.

Portgraue and Sheriffs of London & Middleſex.

William FitzStephen his words.

At parting with the name of Portgraues and Prouoſts, in the first yeare of K. Richard 1. the cittizens obtained to be gouerned by 2. Baliffes, who

Bayliffes of London.

who (in auncient dædes) were called Sheriffes, as the Lawe tearmeth the Shire Balliua, vſing the ſame office of Shriuewick, as the Portgraues before did. The names of the firſt Bayliffes or Officers, entring into their dignity at the Feaſt of Saint Michaell the Arch-angell, Anno 1189 were Henry Cornehill, and Richard Reynere. King Richard alſo (at that very time) appointed a ſupreame Officer aboue the reſt, by the name of Maior, which worde was borrowed from the Hæbrew word Mar, and ſignifieth Dominus, Lord; a word vſed by the Franconians and old Saxons, their Neighbours (of whom Engliſhmen haue their Originall) but called Maire, as the French did their Maires of the Pallace. Thus was the chiefe Gouernor called Lord Maire, or Maior, becauſe they vnderſtood not, that the epethite Maire, or Maior, implyed no leſſe then lord, without any other additions, yet thus was it thē giuen, for a larger augmentation of Honor.

The firſt Bayliffes of London.

Beginning of the Mayralty.

Now, as the Goldſmiths yælded London a Prouoſt before (named Leofſtanus) euen ſo the ſame Company (albeit not as yet rancked into a Liſt of Brother-hood) gaue London likewiſe, the firſt Lord Maire or Maior in Dignity, whoſe name was Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Lieſſtane, and being ſo appointed by the King; he continued in that ſupreame Office, from the firſt yeare of King Richard the firſt, vntill the fiftēnth of K. Iohn, which was more then twenty foure years. Henry Cornehill and Richard Reynere (bæing firſt choſen Bayliffes) ſerued then as Sheriffes, (by

The firſt L. Maire of London.

The time of the L. Mairs election.

(by all likelihood) to the said Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Leifstane, Maire, whereby very well may bee obserued, the progresse and continuaunce of those seuerall elections and choyces (euen to this day) the Sheriffes beeing first appointed, and then the Lorde Maire after chosen, at the Feast of Saint Michaell the Arch-aungell, at the first, (by King Richard) it was ordained. King Iohn in like manner, after this high Dignity (begun by his Brother) graunted them free liberty by Charter, to chuse by (voyces and handes) yearely, out of the twelue chiefest and principall Companies, their Prætor or Maire: Also two Sheriffes, whereof the one should be called the Kings Sheriffe, and the other the Citties Sheriffe, which (in that forme) hath continued euen to this instant. May more, he graunted them full power and authority, not onely to chuse their Sheriffes at their owne pleasure, but also (vppon iust occasion, either of contempt, mutiny, disobedience, or other offences) to degrade and depriue them. The Forrest of Middlesex, and the Warren of Stanes, being laid open in An. 1218. the King afterward, in the yeare 1226. confirmed to the Citizens of London, free warrant and liberty, to hunt a limited circuite about the City, and in the Warren of Stanes. Also, that the Cittizens of London shoulde passe Toule-free, thorough al England: and the Kedels or weres in the Riuer of Thames or Midway, to be pluckt vp and destroyed for euer. When the Franchises and liberties were thus confirmed by King Iohn, he

Choyce of Lord Maire by voyces and hands.

Choyce of Sheriffes.

Forrest of Middlesex and warren of Stanes.

Toule free thorough al England granted to London.

he granted moreouer, that either Sheriffe ſhould haue two Clarks, and two Sergeants; alſo, that the Citty ſhould haue a common Seale, and that the Maior ſhould bee preſented to the Barons of the Exchequer, and they then to admit him, as lawful Lieutenant and Deputy (vnder the king) to gouerne the Citty. Common ſeale of the Citty.

Hauing thus briefly diſcourſed, how the dignity of honor began in this famous Citty, both in the ſtile of Lord Maior and Sheriffes; as briefly wil we alſo part their progreſſe and ſucceſſion, from that firſt worthy man Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Lieſſtane, Gold-Smith, to the as worthy Man, Sir William Crauon, now gouerning, this preſent yeare, 1611.

Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Lieſſtane, Golde-ſmith, beginning to take that high office on him, in the firſt yeare of King Richard the firſt (who was alſo for his valour and courage Surnamed Cueur de Lion) continued ſtill in the ſame Dignity, for more then twenty foure years, and then deceaſſing, in the 15. yeare of King Iohn, he was buried in the Priory of the holy Trinity, nèer vnto Aldgate. 1189

In the ſaid 15. yeare of King Iohn (either to ſerue out the remainder of that yeare, or to go on in a new election,) Roger Fitz-Alwain was choſen Lord Maire: but I neyther find his frædom, or his death, albeit he continued (as it ſæmeth) in Office but one yeare; the like did Serle Mercer, and William Hardell, in the yeares 1214. and 1215. And then began the raigne of King Henry 1213.

the

the third, Son to King Iohn, the 19. of October, 1216.

1216 Iames Alderman, and Salomon Blasing, Lord Maiors, serued out this yeare (by seuerall parts) each after other.

1217. Serle Mercer, was againe chosen Lord Maior, and continued in the Dignity fiue yeares together.

1223 Richard Renger, beeing chosen Lord Maior, continued so the space of foure yeares.

1227 Roger Duke, or Duck, was Lord Maior of London foure yeares.

1231 Andrew Bokerell, Pepperer, was Lord Maior of London seauen yeares together.

1238 Richard Renger, Lorde Maior againe one yeare.

1239 William Ioyner, Lord Maior one yeare, who builded the Quier of the Gray-Fryers Church in London, and afterward became a lay brother of that house.

1240 Gerard Bat, Lord Maior one yeare: and beeing elected againe for the ensuing yeare, the King would not suffer it, because he had beene charged (in the former yeare) with taking Money of the Victuallers, and could shew no reason for it.

1241 Reginald Bongey, was Lorde Maior two yeares.

1243. Raphe Ashwy, Lord Maior one yeare.

1244 Michaell Tony, Lord Maior one yeare.

1245 Iohn Gisors, Pepperer, Lorde Mayor two yeares.

1247 Peter Fitz-Alwin, Lord Maior one yeare.

Michaell

Michaell Tonny, Lord Maior againe one yeare. 1248

Roger Fitz-Roger, Lord Maior one yeare. 1249

Iohn Norman, Lord Maior one yeare. 1250

Adam Baſing, Lord Maior one yeare. 1251

Iohn Tolaſon, Draper, Lord Maior one yeare. 1252

Richard Hardell, Draper, was Lorde Maior fiue yeares together. 1253

Iohn Giſors, Pepperer, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1259

William Fitz-Richard, was Lorde Maior two yeares. 1260

Thomas Fitz-Richard, was Lorde Maior foure yeares together. 1262

Will Richards, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1266

Allen le Zouch, Lorde Maior one yeare: and beeing a Baron of the Lande, and chiefe Iuſtice alſo, he was ſlaine in Weſtminſter Hall, by Iohn Warren, Earle of Surry, in An. 1270. 1267

Sir Stephen Edwards, Lord Maior one year. 1268

Sir Hugh Fitz-Othon, was made Cuſtos of London, and Conſtable of the Tower, by reaſon of a great quarrell happening betweene the Gold-ſmiths and the Taylors: ſo that the King gaue the keeping of the Cittie to his Son Prince Edward. who made the ſaide Sir Hugh Firz-Othon Cuſtos of the Citty, and Conſtable of the Tower, as his Deputie. But Prince Edward quickly obtained of the King his Father, to haue the Citties ancient liberties confirmed by Charter againe, and ſo they proceeded on to their wonted election of a lord Maior and Sheriffes, as before, and Sir Hugh Fitz Othon was diſcharged 1269

A Cuſtos appointed ouer the Cittie of London.

of his office.

1270 — Iohn Adrian, Vintoner, was Lorde Maior of London two yeares.

1272. — Sir Walter Haruey, Lord Maior, and H. Frowike, Pepperer, likewise for part of that yeare; wherein began the raigne of King Edward the first, the 16. of Nouember, 1272.

1273. — Sir Walter Haruey, Lorde Maior againe for one yeare.

1274 — Henry Walleis, Lord Maior for one yeare.

1275 — Gregory Rokesley, Golde-Smith, chiefe Say Maister of all the Kinges Mints thorough England, and keeper of the Kings Exchange at London; was Lord Maior seauen yeares together.

1282 — Henry Walleis, who builded the Tonne vpon Cornhill, to be a Prison, and the Stockes to be a Market-house, was Lorde Maior againe three yeares together.

1285 — Gregory Rokesley being chosen Lord Maior againe, King Edward was informed, that the said Gregory Rokesley tooke bribes of the Bakers, and suffered them to sell bread, that wanted fiue or seauen ounces of weight in a Pennie-loafe, yet Wheat was then sold at London for 12. & 16 pence the quarter. Vpō which information, the K. seized the Franchises and liberties into his owne handes, appointing first one Iohn Sandwich, to be Custos thereof for one part of the yeare, and Sir Iohn Breton, Knight, for the other part. Thus did the Cittie of London continue vnder the gouernment of seuerall Men, bearing the names of Custos, till King Edward the second began

London againe in the charge or rule of a Custos.

began his raigne, which was the ſeauenth day of July, 1307.

Sir Iohn Blunt, Knight, hauing béene Cuſtos of the Cittie, for the ſpace of fiue yeares before, was now in the firſt yeare of King Edward the ſecond, Lord Maior for one yeare. 1307

Nicholas Faringdon, or Farendon, Goldeſmith, of whom the Ward of Faringdon (both within, and without) toke name, was L. Maior for one yeare. 1308

Thomas Romaine, Lord Maior one yeare. 1309

Richard Reffam, Mercer, Maior one yeare. 1310

Sir Iohn Giſors, Pepperer, Lord Maior two yeares. 1311

Nicholas Faringdon, Gold-Smith, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1313

Sir Iohn Giſors, Pepperer, againe L. Maior one yeare. 1314

Stephen Abendon, Lord Maior one yeare. 1315

Iohn Wingraue, Lorde Maior three yeares. 1316

In his time happened ſuch cheapneſſe of Corne, that a Buſhell of Wheate (which had béene ſold formerly for ten ſhillings) was then ſolde for ten pence.

Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, Lorde Mayor one yeare. 1319

Nicholas Faringdon, again Lord Maior one yeare. 1320

Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, againe Lord Mayor two yeare. 1321

Nicholas Faringdon, Gold-ſmith, againe L. Maior one yeare. 1323

1324 Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, againe Lord Mayor two yeares.

1326 Richard Britaine, Gold-smith, Lorde Maior one yeare. In whose time King Edward the third began his raigne, the 25 day of January, 1326. who graunted the Lord Maior to bee Justice for the Gaole deliuery at New-gate; and the Citizens of London not to goe (by any constraint) to any Warre out of the Citty of London. Beside, that the Franchises and liberties of the Citty, should not thence-forward (for any cause) bee seized into the Kinges handes: Nor any Escheator to bee in the Citty, but the Lorde Maior for the time being.

The Lord Maior Iustice for Gaole deliuery at New gate.

1327 Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, againe Lord Maior one yeare.

1328 Iohn Grantham, Lord Maior one yeare.

1329 Richard Swandland, Lord Maior one yeare: In whose time the King kept a great Iusting in Cheape, betweene Sopars-lane and the great Crosse.

1330 Sir Iohn Poultney, Draper, Lord Maior two yeares.

1332 Iohn Preston, Draper, Lord Maior one year.

1333 Sir Iohn Poultney, Draper, againe L. Maior one yeare.

1334 Reginald at the Conduit, Vintoner, L. Maior one yeare.

1335 Nicholas Wotten, Lord Maior one yeare.

1336 Sir Iohn Poultney, Draper, again Lord Maior one yeare. He founded a Colledge in the parish Church of Saint Laurance Poultney, by Candlewicke-

dlewick-ſtreete.

Henry Darcy, Lord Maior two yeares: In whoſe time the Sergeants to the Lorde Mayor, and Sheriffes of London, were graunted by the King, to beare Maces of Siluer and Guilt, with the Kings armes on them. 1337

The firſt Maces to Sergeants granted.

Andrew Aubery Grocer, L. Maior two years. 1339

Iohn of Oxenford, Vintoner, Lord Maior one yeare. 1341

Simon Francis, Mercer, L. Maior one yeare. 1342

Iohn Hamond, Lorde Mayor two yeares. 1343

Richard Leget, Lord Maior one yeare. 1345

Geffrey Witchingham, L. Maior one yeare. 1346

Tho. Leggy, Skinner, Lord Maior one year. 1347

Iohn Louekin, Fiſh-Monger, Lord Maior one yeare. 1348

Walter Turk, Fiſh-Monger, Lord Maior one yeare. 1349

Richard Killingbury, Lord Maior one yeare. 1350

Andrew Aubery, Grocer, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1351

Simon Francis, Mercer, who (with Henry Frowike) founded the Colledge in Guild-hall Chappell, and was againe Lord Maior two yeares. 1352

Thomas Leggy, Skinner, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1354

Simon Francis, Mercer, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1355

Henry Prichard, or Piccard, Vintoner, who (in one day) feaſted the kings of England, France, Scots, and Cypres, at his owne houſe, and was L. Maior one yeare. 1356

Foure kings feaſted at the L. Maiors houſe in one day.

1357 Iohn Stody, Vintoner, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1358 Iohn Louekin, Fish-Monger, againe Lorde Maior one yeare.

1359 Simon Dolesby, Grocer, Lord Mayor one yeare.

1360 Iohn Wroth, Fish-Monger, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1361 Iohn Peche, Fish-Monger, Lord Maior one yeare.

1362 Stephen Gondish, Draper, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1363 Iohn Not, Grocer, Lord Maior one yeare.

1364 Adam of Burie, Skinner, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1365 Iohn Louekin, Fish-Monger, againe Lorde Maior, and Adam of Bury one yeare.

1366 Iohn Louekin, Fish-Monger, againe Lorde Mayor one yeare. This Iohn Louekin builded Saint Michaels Church in crooked-lane.

1367 Iames Andrew, Draper, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1368 Simon Mordon, Fish-monger, Lord Maior one yeare.

1369 Iohn Chichester, Gold-smith, Lord Mayor one yeare.

1370 Iohn Barnes, Mercer, Lorde Mayor two yeares.

1372 Iohn Piell, Mercer, Lord Mayor one yeare.

1373 Adam of Bury, Skinner, againe Lord Maior one yeare.

William

William Walworth, Fiſh-Monger, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1374

Iohn VVarde, Grocer, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1375

Adam Staple, Mercer, Lord Maior one yeare. His time no ſooner expired, but therewith ended the life of King Edward the third, and on the 21. of June 1377. began the raign of King Richard the ſecond. 1376.

Sir Nicholas Brember, Grocer, Lord Maior one yeare. 1377

Iohn Philpot, Grocer, Lord Maior one year. 1378

Iohn Hadley, Grocer, Lord Maior one year. 1379

Wil. Walworth, Fiſh-Monger, againe Lord Maior. In this yeare of his Mairalty happened the tumultuous rebellion of Iack Straw, Wat Tiler, Iack Carter, Iack Truman, &c. with the commons of Kent, Eſſex, and other places: But William Walworth, being then Lord Maior, arreſted the Traytor Iack Straw ſo ſtoutly with his Weapon on the head (euen as he ſaucily tok the Kings Horſe by the bridle in Smithfielde) that, thruſting him afterward through the throat; the whole crewe were diſhartened, and ſeeing their Captaine ſlaine, betoke themſelues to flight. For which worthy act, the King immediatly knighted the Lorde Maior William Walworth, and with him Ralphe Standiſh, Iohn Philpot, Nicholas Brember, Iohn Launde, and Nicholas Twifield, Burgeſſes of the Citty, adding the Dagger into the Citties Armes, which till that day was a red Croſſe in a Siluer field onely. 1380

The Lord Mayor kild Iack Straw the Rebell.

The dagger added to the Cities Armes.

1381 Iohn Northampton, Draper, Lord Maior two yeares.

1382 Sir Nicholas Brember, Grocer, knighted with Syr William Walworth, Lorde Maior three yeares together.

1387 Nicholas Exton, fishmon. lord maior 1. yeare

1388 Nicholas Twiford, or Twyforde, knighted with Syr William Walworth, Lord Maior one yeare.

1389 William Venner, Grocer, Lord Maior, one yeare.

1390 Adam Bamme, Goldsmith (who prouided the Cittie of such plenty of corne from beyonde the seas, that the Citty was able to furnish the countrey) Lord Maior one yeare.

1391 Iohn Hend, Draper, in whose time happened a great tumult in London, because one of the bishop of Salisburies men, had taken a Horse-loafe from a Bakers man in Fleete-Itraete, and on the Bysshops complaint to the King, the Lord Maior being sent for to Windsore, and other of hys Brethren; the Maior, Sheriffes, and other substantiall Citizens, were there arrested, the Maior committed to the castle of Windsore, and the rest to other Castles and Holdes. The King seized the citty into his hands, appointing a Warden to gouerne it, named Sir Edward Darlingrug, knight, &c. But in short while the Kinges displeasure was pacified, and the liberties of London restored and ratified.

A Warden appointed to gouerne London.

1392 William Standon, Grocer, lord maior 1. year.

1393 Iohn Hadley, Grocer, againe lord maior one yeare.

Iohn

John Froſhe, Mercer, Lorde maior one yeare. 1394
William More, Vintner, L. Maior one yeare 1395
Adam Bamme, Gold-Smith, againe Lorde Maior one yeare. 1396
Richard Whittington, mercer, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1397
Drew Barentine, Gold-ſmith, Lord Maior 1. yeare. At his expiration of Office, beganne the raigne of King Henry the fourth, the 29. of September, 1399. 1398
Thomas Knolles, Grocer, lord maior 1. yeare. 1399
John Francis, Goldſmith, lord maior one year. 1400
John Shadworth, mercer, lord maior one yeare. 1401
John Walcote, Draper, lorde maior one yeare. 1402
William Aſcham, Fiſhmonger, lord maior one yeare. 1403
John Hend, draper, again lord maior one year, he builded new againe the parish Church of ſaint Swithen at London ſtone. 1304
John woodcock, mercer, lord maior one yeare. 1405
Richard VVhittington, mercer, agayne lorde maior one yeare. In which year died of ỹ plague more then 30000. people. 1406
William Stondon, Grocer, againe lord maior one yeare. 1407
Drew Barentine, Gold-ſmith, againe lorde maior one yeare. Hee builded part of the Goldeſmiths Hall, and gaue them lands. 1408
Richard Marlow, Ironmonger, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1409
Thomas Knoles, Grocer, againe L. Maior one yeare: he began anew to buſde the Guild-Hall 1410

in

in London, &c.

1411 Robert Chichley, Grocer, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1412 William Waldren, mercer, Lord Maior one yeare. In his time died king Henry the fourth, & his sonne King Henry the fift began his raigne, the 20. day of march, 1412.

1413 William Cromar, Draper, lorde Maior one yeare.

1414 Thomas Faulconer, mercer, who builded the Postern at Moorgate, and lent the king 10000. markes vpon Iewels, Lord Maior one yeare.

1415 Nicholas Wotton, Draper, Lord Maior one yeare.

1416 Henry Barton, Skinner, who first ordayned Lanthorn and Candle-light in the winter Euenings, from Hallontide to Candlemasse: Lorde Maior one yeare.

First Lanthorne and candle-light

1417 Richard Marlow, Ironmonger, againe Lorde Maior one yeare.

1418 William Seuenoke, Grocer, (who founded a free Schoole, and Almes houses at Seuenoke in Kent) Lord Maior one yeare.

1419 Richard Whittington, mercer, of whose worthy déeds we haue else where spoken, Lord Maior again one yeare.

1420 William Cambridge, Grocer, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1421 Robert Chicheley, Grocer, againe L. Maior one yeare. He gaue the plot of ground, to builde the parish church of S. Stephens in Walbrooke thereon: In his time died king Henry the fifte, and

and King Henry the firſt began his raigne the 31 of Auguſt, 1422.

William walderne, mercer, again Lord Maior one yeare. Newgate was then builded by Richard Whittingtons executors. 1422

William Cromar, Draper, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1423

Iohn Michell, Fiſhmonger, Lord Maior one yeare. 1424

Iohn Couentrie, mercer, Lord Maior one year. 1425

Iohn Reinwell, Fiſhm. lord maior one yeare. 1426

Iohn Gidney, Draper Lord Maior one yeare. 1427

Henry Barton, Skinner, againe Lorde Maior one yeare. 1428

William Eaſt-field, mercer, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1429

Sr Nicholas wotton, Draper, againe Lord Maior one yeare. 1430

Iohn Welles, Grocer, a liberall benefactor, for newe building the chappell by Guild-Hald; beſide, of his goodes was builte the Standarde in weſt-Cheape, Lord Maior one yeare. 1431

Iohn Parneis, Fiſhmonger, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1432

Iohn Brokle, Draper, Lord Maior one yeare. 1433

Roger Oteley, Grocer, Lord Maior one year. 1434

Henry Frowicke, Mercer, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1435

Iohn Michell, Fiſhmonger, againe L. Maior one yeare. 1436

Sir VVilliam Eaſt-field, mercer (who was made a Knight of the Bathe, and gaue great bountie 1437

L. Maior, Knight of the Bath.

bounty to the Water conduits, Lorde Maior againe one yeare.

1438 Stephen Browne, Grocer, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1439 Robert Large, mercer, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1440 Iohn Paddesley, Gold-smith, mint-maister, Lord Maior one yeare.

1441 Robert Clopton, Draper, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1442 Iohn Hatherley, Frommonger, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1443 Thomas Catworth, Grocer, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1444 Henry Frowicke, mercer, in whose time Pauls Steeple was fiered with lightning, and hardlye quenched, Lord Maior againe one yeare.

Pauls steeple fired.

1445 Sir Simon Eyre, Draper (who builded Leaden Hal, for a common Granary to the city, &c.) Lord Maior one yeare.

1446 Iohn Olney, mercer, Lord Maior one yeare.

1447 Iohn Sidney, Draper, Lord Maior one yeare.

1448 Stephen Browne, Grocer, againe Lord Maior one yeare.

1449 Thomas Chalton, mercer (in whose time happened the Rebellion of Iack Cade of Kent) Lord Maior one yeare.

1450 Nicholas VVilford, Grocer, lorde Maior one yeare.

1451 William Gregory, Skinner, lord Maior one yeare.

1452 Godfrey Filding, mercer, who was made one of

of the counſell to King Henry the firſt, and King Edward the fourth, lord Maior one yeare.

1453 — The first Maior rowed to Weſtminſter.

Iohn Norman, Draper, who was the firſte maior that was rowed by water to weſtminſter, for (till that time) they rode thither on horſeback, lord Maior, one yeare.

1454

Stephen Foſter, Fiſhmonger (who enlarged Ludgate) Lord Maior one yeare.

1455

William Marrow, Grocer, lorde Maior one yeare.

1456

Thomas Canning, Grocer, Lord Maior one yeare.

1457

Godfrey Boloine, mercer (who gaue a 1000. li. to poore houſholders in London, &c.) lord Maior one yeare.

1458

Thomas Scot, Draper lord Maior one yeare

1459

William Hulin, Fiſhmonger, lord Maior one yeare.

1460

Richard Lee, Grocer, lord Maior one yeare. In his time began King Henry the firſt his troubles, and King Edward the fourth entered hys raigne the fourth of March, 1460.

1461

Hugh witch, mercer, lord Maior one yeare.

1462 — Lord Maior Knight of the Bath.

Thomas Cooke, Draper, made knight of the Bath, in the fifte yeare of King Edward the 4. Lord maior one yeare.

1463 — Lord Maior Knighted in the fielde.

Mathew Phillip, Gold-ſmith (made Knight of the Bath the fift yeare of Edward the fourth, and afterward knighted in field, the tenth of Edward the fourth, Lord maior one yeare.

1464

Raphe Ioceline, Draper, Knight of the Bath and knighted alſo in field, Lord maior one yeare.

Raphe

1465 Raph Verney, mercer Lord Maior one yeare.

A sheriffe knight of the Bath. Henry weauer, one of the Sheriffes of London, was then made knight of the Bath.

1466 Sr John Yong, Grocer (knighted in the field) L. Maior one yeare.

1467

1468 Tho. Oldgraue, Skinner, L. Mayor 1. year.

1469 William Tayler, Grocer, L. Maior one yeare.

Lord Maior deliuered the king out of the Tower. Richard Lee, Grocer, againe lord Maior one yeare. In whose time the Tower of London being deliuered to him and his brethren, they released King Henry the first thence.

1470 John Stockton, mercer, who worthily withstanding the Bastard Fauconbridge, hee, with eleuen Aldermen, & Thomas Vrswick, then Recorder, were all knighted in the fielde by K. Edward the fourth; Lord Maior one yeare.

L. Maior 11 Aldermen, and the Recorder, knighted in fielde.

William Edwards, Grocer, L. Maior 1. year.

1471 Sir William Hampton, Fishmonger, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1472

1473 Iohn Tate, mercer, lord maior one yeare. In his time ỹ Sheriffes of London were appointed to haue seuerally 16. Sergeants, & each Sergeant his Yeoman. Then also was ordained fiue Clearkes, viz. a Secondary, a Clarke of the Papers, and foure other Clarkes, beside the vnder-Sheriffes Clarkes.

Sergeants, yeomen, & Clearks appointed.

1474 Robert Drope, Draper, L. Maior one yeare.

1475 Robert Basset, Salter, L. Maior. one yeare.

1407 Sir Raphe Ioceline, Draper, knight of the Bath, lord maior one yeare.

1477 Humfrey Hayford, Gold-smith, lord maior, one yeare.

Richard

Richard Gardener, mercer, lord maior one year. 1478

Sir Bartholmew Iames, Draper, Knighted in field and (who newly builded the great Conduit in Weſt-Cheape) lord maior one yeare. 1479

Iohn Browne, mercer, lorde maior one yeare. 1480

William Hariot, Draper, lord maior one year 1481

Edmund Shaa, Goldſmith, who builded Cripplegate, lord maior one yeare. Then beganne the raigne of King Edward the fift, ſon to King Edward the fourth; but preuented by the cruell vſurpation of his Vncle Richard, Duke of Gloceſter, who began his raign the 22. day of June, 1483. 1482

And becauſe many haue often deſired, to know the country and parentage of our Lord Maiors of London, in regard that diuers worthy houſes haue deſcended of them: my purpoſe was, to haue examined our ancient Records, from the verye beginning of that honourable dignity, and ſo to haue purſued the tract thereof (by reporting each mans Fathers name and Country) euen to this inſtant. Wherein I haue had the moſt laborious and painfull helpe, of my eſpeciall kind friende, maiſter W. Williams: And ſhaping our courſe from the preſent gouernment of ſir William Crauon, hoping to haue reached the maine height of our purpoſe, euen to Henry Fitz-Alwin, &c. We could proceed no further backward, then the raign of king Richard the third, where I will now begin with their country, and parents, and ſo heereafter, go on with the reſt, if this great labor may be but fauourably accepted.

The

## ¶ The raigne of King Richard the third.

1483 RObert Billisdon, Haberdasher, sonne to Alexander Billisdō, of Queeningborough, in the Countie of Leicester, Lord Maior one yeare.

1484 Thomas Hill, Grocer, sonne to William Hil of Hilston, in the Countie of Kent. Sir William Stocker, Draper, sonne to Thomas Stocker, of Eton, in the Countie of Bedford. And Iohn Ward, Grocer, son to Richard Ward, of Howdon, in the Countie of Yorke. These three Maiors were all in this one yeare, by reason a sweating sickneſſe. And King Richard, being slaine at Bosworth-field; Henry the seauenth began his raigne the 22. of August 1485.

Three Lord Maiors in one yeare.

1485 Hugh Brice, Gold-smith, sonne to Richard Brice of Dubline in Ireland: Lord Maior one yeare.

1486 Henry Collet, Mercer, son to Robert Collet of Windouer, in the Countie of Buckingham, Lord Maior one yeare.

1487 Sir William Horne, Salter (made Knight in the field by King Henry the seauenth) was son to Thomas Horne of Snaylewell, in Cambridgeshire; Lord Maior one yeare.

1488 Robert Tate, Mercer, sonne to Thomas Tate, of the Cittie of Couentry; Lord Maior one yeare.

1489 William White, Draper, son to Wil. White of

of Tickhill in the Countie of York; Lord Maior one yeare.

1490 Iohn Mathew, Linnen-Draper, and tranſlated to the Mercers, ſonne to Thomas Mathew of Sherington, in the Countie of Buckingham; Lord Maior one yeare.

1491 Hugh Clopton, Mercer, ſon to Iohn Clopton of Stratford vppon Auon, in the Countie of Warwicke (where the ſaide Hugh builded the goodlie Stone-Bridge) Lord Mayor one yeare.

1492 William Martine, Skinner, ſonne to Walter Martin, of the Countie of Hertford; Lord Maior one yeare.

1493 Sir Raphe Oſtrich, Fiſh-Monger (knighted by Henry the ſeauenth) ſonne to Henry Oſtrich of Hitchin, in the Countie of Hertford, lord Maior one yeare.

1494 Richard Chawry, Salter, Son to William Chawry, of Weſtram in Kent; Lord Mayor one yeare.

1495. Henry Collet, Mercer, again Lord Maior one yeare.

1496 Iohn Tate, Mercer, ſonne to Thomas Tate of Couentry, and Brother to Robert Tate Maior, forenamed, Lord Mayor one yeare.

This Iohn Tate, Robert Sheffielde, Recorder, and both the Sheriffes, were knighted in the fielde by King Henry the ſeauenth, for their good ſeruice againſt the Rebelles at Black-Heath Fielde. Black heath field.

1497. William Purchas, Mercer, ſon to Iohn Purchas of Gamelinghey, in the County of Cambridge;

bridge, Lord Maior one yeare.

1498 Sir Iohn Perciuall, Merchant-Taylor, knighted in field by King Henry the seuenth) sonne to Roger Perciuall of London; L. Maior one year.

1499 Nicholas Aldwine, Mercer, Son to Richard Aldwine of Spalding in Lincolnshire, lord Maior one yeare. Hee gaue twelue pence a peece to 3000. poore people in London, and the like to as many in Spalding.

1500 William Remington, Fish-Monger, son to Robert Remington, of Boston in Lincolneshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1501 Iohn Shaa, Gold-smith, son to Iohn Shaa of Rochford in Essex, Lord Maior one yeare. He was made Knight in the fielde by King Henry the seauenth, and hee caused the Aldermen his Brethren, to ride from the Guilde-Hall to the Thames side, when he took Bardge to Westminster, where he was sworne by the Kinges Councell. He first kept Court alone in the afternoon, for redresse of matters called before him.

Lord Mairs first riding from the Guild Hall, to take Bardge to Westminster.

1502 Bartholmew Reade, Gold-smith, son of Roger Reade of Crowmer in Norffolke; L. Maior one yeare.

1503 William Capell, Draper, son of Iohn Capell of Stokeneyland in Suffolke; Lorde Maior one yeare. He was knighted by King Henry the seauenth. And he first caused Cadges to be set vp in euery Ward, for punishment of Rogues and vagabonds.

First setting vp of Cadges.

1504 Iohn Winger, Grocer, son to William Winger of Leicester; Lord Maior one yeare.

Thomas

Thomas Kneſworth, Fiſh-Monger, ſonne to Iohn Kneſworth, of Kneſworth in Cambridgeſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1505

Sir Richard Haddon, Mercer, ſon of VVilliam Haddon, Cittizen and Mercer of London, Lord Maior one yeare. 1506

VVilliam Browne, Mercer, Sonne of Iohn Browne, Cittizen and Mercer of London, Lord Maior for one part of the yeare, and Laurance Ailmer, Draper, Sonne of Thomas Ailmer, of Elleſnam in Eſſex, Lorde Maior for the other part. 1507

Stephen Iennings, Merchant-Taylor, ſonne to VVilliam Iennings, of VVolnerhampton in Staffordſhire (where hee builded a free Schoole, worthily yet maintained by the Merchant-Taylors, and the greater part of S. Andrews Vndershaft Pariſh Church in London) Lorde Maior one yeare. 1508

Thomas Bradbury, Mercer, ſonne to VVilliam Bradbury of Branghing in Hertfordſhire: Lord Maior part of the yeare, and Sir VVilliam Capell the reſt, wherein dyed King Henry the ſeauenth, and Henry the eight his ſonne, began his raigne the 22. of Aprill, 1509. 1509

Henry Keble, Grocer, ſon to George Keble of London, Cittizen and Grocer; Lord Maior one yeare. 1510

Roger Acheley, Draper, ſonne to Thomas Acheley of Stanwardine in Shropſhire; Lorde Maior one yeare. 1511

Sir VVilliam Coppinger, Fiſh-Monger, ſon 1512

to VValter Coppinger, of Buckſeill in Suffolk; And Sir Richard Haddon, Mercer, were Lord Maiors this yeare by ſeuerall partes, each after other.

1513. William Browne, Mercer, ſonne to Iohn Browne, Cittizen and Mercer of London, Lord Maior one yeare.

1514 George Monox, Draper, borne in London, Lord Mayor one yeare.

1515 Sir William Butler, Grocer, ſon to Richard Butler, of Bindenham in Bedfordſhire, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1516 Iohn Reeſt, Grocer, ſonne to William Reeſt of Peterborow, in Northamptonſhire, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1517 Sir Thomas Exmew, Golde-ſmith, ſonne to Richard Exmew of Ruthin in Cheſhire; Lorde Maior one yeare: he made the Water-Conduite in London wall by Moore-gate, &c.

1518 Thomas Mirfin, Skinner, ſonne to George Mirfin, of Elie in Cambridgeſhire, L. Maior one yeare.

1519 Sir Iames Yardford, Mercer, ſonne to William Yardford of Kidwelley in Wales; L. Maior one yeare.

1520 Sir Iohn Brugge, Draper, ſonne to Thomas Brugge of Dymmocke in Glocesterſhire; Lord Maior one yeare.

1521 Sir Iohn Milborne, Draper, ſon to Iohn Milborne of Long-Melford in Suffolke; L. Maior one yeare.

1522 Sir Iohn Mundy, Gold-Smith, ſon to William

liam Mundy of Wycomb in Buckinghamſhire ; Lord Maior one yeare.

Sir Thomas Baldry, Mercer, ſon to Richard Baldry, of Stow-market in Suffolke; Lord Maior one yeare. 1523

Sir William Baylie, Draper, ſon to Iohn Baylie of Thackſtead in Eſſex; Lorde Mayor one yeare. 1524

Sir Iohn Allen, Mercer, ſon to Richard Allen of Thackſtead, in Eſſex; Lorde Mayor two yeares. 1525

Sir Thomas Seymor, Mercer, ſonne to Iohn Seymor of London, Fiſh-Monger, who was ſonne to Robert Seymor of Walden in Eſſex; Lord Maior one yeare. 1526

Sir Iames Spencer, Vintoner, ſon to Robert Spencer of Congleton in Cheſhire, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1527

Sir Iohn Rudſtone, Draper, ſon to Robert Rudſtone of Hatton in Yorkſhire; Lord Maior one yeare. 1528

Sir Raphe Dodmer, Mercer, ſon to Henrie Dodmer, of Pickering-Leigh in Yorkſhire; being free of the Brewers, he was from them tranſlated to the Mercers, and Lorde Mayor one yeare. 1529

Sir Thomas Pargitor, Salter, ſonne to Iohn Pargitor, of Chipping-norton in Oxfordſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1530

Sir Nicholas Lambert, Grocer, ſon to Edmond Lambert of Wilton in Wiltſhire; L. Maior one yeare. 1531

1532. Sir Stephen Peacock, Haberdasher, sonne to Stephen Peacock of the Citty of Dublin; Lorde Maior one yeare.

1533 Sir Christopher Askew, Draper, son to Iohn Askew of Edmonton in Middlesex; Lord Maior one yeare.

1534 Sir Iohn Champneis, Skinner, sonne to R. Campneis, of Chew in Somersetshire; Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1535 Sir Iohn Allen, Mercer, againe Lord Maior one yeare, and made a priuy Counceller to the King, for his great wisedome.

1536 Sir Raphe Warren Mercer, son to Thomas Warren of London, Fuller, who was sonne to William Warren, of Fering in Essex: L. Maior one yeare.

1537 Sir Richard Gresham, Mercer, son to Iohn Gresham, of Holte in Norffolke; Lorde Maior one yeare.

1538 Sir William Forman, Haberdasher, sonne to Willi. Forman of Gainsburgh in Lincolnshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1539 Sir William Hollis of London, Mercer, L. Maior one yeare.

1540 Sir William Roche, Draper, sonne to Iohn Roche of Wixley in Yorkshire; Lorde Maior one yeare.

1541 Sir Michaell Dormer, Mercer, son to Geffrey Dormer of Tame in Orfordshire; L. Maior one yeare.

1542 Iohn Cootes, Salter, son to Thomas Coots of Bearton, in Buckinghamshire; Lorde Maire one

one yeare.

Sir William Bowyer, Draper, ſon to William Bowyer, of Harſton in Cambridgſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1543

Sir William Laxton, Grocer, ſonne to Iohn Laxton, of Yongdel in Northamptonſhire; Lord Maior one yeare. 1544

Sir Martin Bowes, Golde-Smith, ſonne to Thomas Bowes of Yorke Citty, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1545.

Sir Henry Hubberthorne, Merchant-Taylor, ſon to Chriſtopher Hubberthorne, of VVadingworth in Lincolnſhire, L. Maior one year. In whoſe time died King Henry the 8. and King Edward the firſt, began his raigne the 28. of January, 1546. 1546

Sir Iohn Greſham, Mercer, ſon to Iohn Greſham of Holte in Norffolke, Lorde Mayor one yeare. 1547

Sir Henry Amcotes, Fiſh-Monger, ſon to William Amcotes of Aſtrap in Lincolnſhire, L. Maior one yeare. 1548

Sir Rowland Hill, Mercer, ſonne to Thomas Hill of Hodnet in Shropſhire: Lord Maior one yeare. 1549

Sir Andrew Iudde, Skinner, ſon to Iohn Iud of Tonebridge in Kent, Lord Maior one yeare. 1550

Sir Richard Dobbes, Skinner, ſon to Robert Dobbes of Baitby in Yorkeſhire: L. Maior one yeare. 1551

Sir George Barne, Haberdaſher, ſonne to George Barne, Cittizen and Haberdaſher of 1552

London, Lord Maior one yeare.

1553 Sir Thomas White, Merchant-Taylor, son to Thomas White of Rickmansworth, in Hertfordshire, Lord maior one yeare. Then died king Edward, and Quæne Mary began her raign the 6. day of July, 1553. This sir Thomas White founded S. Iohn Baptists Colledge in Oxenford: and gaue 2000.li. to the Citty of Bristoll, to purchase 100. and 20. li. land yearely, &c.

1554 Sir Thomas Lyon, Grocer, son to Iohn Lyon of Peryfare in Middlesex, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1555 Sir William Gerard, Haberdasher, sonne to Iohn Gerard, Cittizen and Grocer of London, who was son to William Gerard, of Seddingbourne in Kent; Lord Maior one year.

1556 Sir Thomas Offley, Merchant-Taylor, sonne to VVilliam Offley, of the Citty of Chester, lord maior one yeare.

1557 Sir Thomas Curteis, Fish-Monger, sonne to Iohn Curteis of Enfield in Middlesex, he was free of the Pewterers, and from them translated to the Fish-Mongers, Lord Maior one yeare.

1558 Sir Thomas Leigh, Mercer, sonne to Roger Leigh, of VVillington, in Shropshire, Lorde Maior one yeare. In which yeare died Quæne Mary, and Quæne Elizabeth began her princely raigne the seauentæenth day of November, 1558.

1559 Sir William Huet, Cloth-worker, son to Edmond Huet of Wales in Yorkshire: Lord Maior one yeare.

Sir

Sir William Cheſter, Draper, ſonne to Iohn Cheſter, Cittizen and Draper of London; Lord Maior one yeare. 1560

Sir William Harper, Merchant-Taylor, ſon to William Harper, of the Towne of Bedford, lord maior one yeare. 1561

Sir Thomas Lodge, Grocer, ſon to William Lodge, of Creſſet in Shropſhire, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1562

Sir Iohn White, Grocer, Sonne to Robert White of Farnam in Surry, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1563

Sir Richard Malory, Mercer, ſon to Anthony Malory of Papworthamus, in Cambridgeſhire; Lord Maior one yeare. 1564

Sir Richard Champion, Draper, ſon to Richard Champion of Godilming in Surrey, Lord maior one yeare. 1565

Sir Chriſtopher Draper, Iron-monger, ſon to Iohn Draper of Melton Mowbrey; Lord Maior one yeare. 1566

Sir Roger Martin, Mercer, ſon to Laurance Martine of Melford in Suffolke, Lord maior one yeare. 1567

Sir Thomas Roe Merchant-Taylor, ſon to Robert Roe, Cittizen and Merchant-Taylor of London, who was ſon to Reiginald Roe, of Lee in Kent, lord maior one yeare. 1568

Sir Alexander Auenand, Iron-monger, ſon to Robert Auenand, of Kings-Norton in Worceſterſhire, Lorde maior one yeare. 1569

Sir Rowland Heyward, Cloth-worker, ſonne to 1570

to George Heiward of Bridge-north in Shropshire, Lord Maior one year.

1571 Sir William Allen, Mercer, son to William Allen, Cittizen and Packteller of London, who was son to Richard Allen, of Stondon in Hertfordshire; Lord Mayor one yeare.

1572 Sir Lionell Ducket, Mercer, son to William Ducket of Flynton in Nottinghamshire, Lorde maior one yeare.

1573 Sir Iohn Riuers, Grocer, son to Richard Riuers of Penscherst in Kent L. Maior one yeare.

1574 Sir Iames Hawes, Cloth-worker, son to Thomas Hawes, Cittizen and Merchant of London, who was son to Iohn Hawes of Stokenwenton, in Middlesex, Lord Maior one yeare.

1575 Sir Ambrose Nicholas, Salter, sonne to Iohn Nicholas of Nedingworth in Huntingdonshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1576 Sir Iohn Langley, Gold-Smith, son to Robert Langley, of Althrop in Lincolnshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1577 Sir Thomas Ramsey, Grocer, sonne to Iohn Ramsey, of Elenbridge in Kent; lord Maior one yeare.

1578 Sir Richard Pipe, Draper, sonne to Richard Pipe of Wolnerhampton, in Staffordshire, hee was free of the Leather-sellers, and from them translated to the Drapers, Lord Maior one year.

1579 Sir Nicholas Woodroue, Haberdasher, son to Dauid Woodroue, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London, who was son to Iohn Woodroue, of the Parish of Vscombe in Deuonshire; Lorde Maior one yeare. Sir

Sir Iohn Branche, Draper, ſonne to Iohn Branche, Cittizen and Draper of London, who was ſon to Iohn Branch of Laynham in Suffolk; Lord Maior one yeare. 1580

Sir Iames Haruey, Iron-monger, ſon to William Haruey, of Cotwalton in Staffordſhire, L. Maior one yeare. 1581

Sir Thomas Blanke, Haberdaſher, ſonne to Thomas Blanke, Cittizen and Haberdaſher of London, who was ſonne to Thomas Blancke of Guildford in Surry, Lord Maior one yeare. 1582

Sir Edward Osborne, Cloth-worker, ſonne to Richard Osborne of Aſhford in Kent, Lorde Maior one year. 1583

Sir Thomas Pulloccill, Draper, ſon to William Pulloccill, of Foteſcray in Kent, lord Maior one yeare. 1584

Sir Wolſtane Dixie, Skinner, ſon to Thomas Dixie of Catworth in Huntingdonſhire, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1585

Sir George Barne, Haberdaſher, ſon to Sir George Barne, Knight, Cittizen and Haberdaſher of London, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1586

Sir George Bond, Haberdaſher, ſonne of R. Bond of Trull in Somerſetſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1587

Sir Martine Calthrop, Cittizen and Draper of London, Lord Maior for part of the yeare, and Richard Martine, Gold-ſmith, for the reſt. 1588

Sir Iohn Hart, Grocer, ſon of Raphe Hart of Sproſton Court in Yorkſhire, L. Maior one year 1589

Sir Iohn Allot, Fiſh-Monger, ſon to Richard Allot 1590

Allot of Lymbergh in Lincolnſhire, Lord Maior one part of the yeare, and Sir Rowland Heywerd the reſt.

1593 Sir William Webbe, Salter, ſonne to Iohn Webbe of Reading in Barkſhire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1592 Sir William Roe, Iron-monger, ſonne to Thomas Roe of Penſeherſt in Kent, Lord Maior one yeare.

1593 Sir Cutbbert Buckle, Vintoner, ſon to Chriſtopher Buckle, of Bourgh in Weſtmerland, L. Maior for part of the yeare, and ſir Richard Martine Goldſmith, the reſt: This ſir Richard Martine was ſonne to Thomas Martine, of Saffron VValden in Eſſex.

1594 Sir Iohn Spenſer, Cloth-worker, ſon to Rich. Spenſer of Waldinfield in Suffolke, Lord Maior one yeare.

1595 Sir Stephen Slaney, Skinner, ſonne to Iohn Slaney of Mitton in Staffordſhire, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1596 Thomas Skinner, Cloth-worker, ſon to Iohn Skinner of Walden in Eſſex: Lorde Maior for part of the yeare, and ſir Henry Billingſley Haberdaſher the reſt. This ſir Henrie Billingſley was ſonne to William Billingſley, Cittizen and Haberdaſher of London, who was ſonne to Roger Billingſley, of the Citty of Canterbury in Kent.

1597 Sir Richard Saltonſtall, Skinner, ſon to Gilbert Saltonſtal, of Hallyfax in Yorkeſhire, Lord Mayor one year.

Sir

Sir Stephen Soame, Grocer, ſon to Thomas Soame of Bradley in Suffolke, Lord Maior one year. He was free of the Girdlers, and from them tranſlated to the Grocers. 1598

Sir Nicholas Moſley, Cloth-worker, ſonne to Edward Moſley of Hough in Lancaſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1599

Sir William Ryder, Haberdaſher, ſonne to Thomas Ryder of Muckleſton in Staffordſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1600

Sir Iohn Gerard, Haberdaſher, ſon to ſir William Gerard, Knight, Cittizen and Haberdaſher of London, Lorde maior one yeare. 1601

Sir Robert Lee, Merchant-Taylor, ſonne to Humphrey Lee of Bridge-north, in Shropſhire, Lord maior one yeare. 1602

Sir Thomas Benet, Mercer, ſonne to Thomas Benet of Wallingford in Barkſhire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1603

Sir Thomas Low, Haberdaſher, ſon to Simon Low, Cittizen and Merchant-Tailor of London, who was ſonne to Raphe Low of London, Gentleman; Lord Maior one yeare. 1604

Sir Leonard Holyday, Merchant-Taylor, ſon to William Holyday, of Redborow in Gloceſterſhire, Lord maior one yeare. 1605

Sir Iohn Wats, Cloth-worker, ſonne to Thomas Wats of Buntingford in Hertfordſhire, Lord maior one year. 1606

Sir Henry Roe, Mercer, ſonne to ſir Thomas Roe, Knight, Cittizen and Merchant-Taylor of London; Lorde Mayor one yeare. 1607

Sir

1608 Sir Humphrey Welde, Grocer, ſon to Iohn Welde of Eaton in Cheſhire; Lord Maior one yeare.

1609 Sir Thomas Cambell, Iron-Monger, ſon to Robert Cambell, of Fulſam in Norffolk, Lord Maior one yeare.

1610 Sir William Crauon, Merchant-Taylor, ſon to William Crauon, of Appletreewick in Yorkſhire; Lord Maior now gouerning, to whom (with the reſt of his worthy Brethren) I wiſh all health and happineſſe.

Since

Since the time alſo of King *Richard* the third, theſe Gentlemen haue born office in this Citty, according to their names and places.

*¶ Recorders of this Citty.*

M. HVmphrey Starkey, Eſquire.
M. Thomas Fitz-Williams, Eſquire.
Sir Robert Sheffield, Knight.
M. Iohn Chaloner, Eſquire.
M. Robert Brooke, Eſquire.
M. Shelley, Eſquire.
M. Baker, Eſquire.
M. Roger Cholmeley, Eſquire.
M. Richard Onſlow, Eſquire.
M. Thomas Bromeley, Eſquire.
M. VVilliam Fleetwood, Eſquire.
M. Edward Coke, Eſquire.
M. Edward Drew, Eſquire.
M. Thomas Fleming, Eſquire.
M. Iohn Crooke, Eſquire.
Sir Henry Montague, Knight.

Common Sergeants of this Citty.

M. Robert Moloneux, Eſquire.
M. Iohn Haugh, Eſquier. Thomas Higham.
M. Thomas Frowick, Eſquire.
M Thomas Marow, Eſquire.
M. Iohn Greene, Eſquire.
M. VVhite, Eſquire.
M. VValſingham, Eſquire.

Won-

M. VVonley, Esquire.
M. Robert Sothwell, Esquire.
M. Robert Brooke, Esquire.
M. Atkins, Esquire.
M. Marsh, Esquire.
M. Randall, Esquire.
M. Thomas Kirton, Esquire.
M. Thomas Wilbraham, Esquire.
M. Richard Wheeler, Esquire.

¶ Chamberlaines of this Citty.

M. WIlliam Phillip, Esquire.
M. Miles Adys.
M. VVilliam Purhas.
M. William Milborne.
M. Nicholas Mattock.
M. George Medley.
M. Thomas Haies.
M. Iohn Sturgeon.
M. George Heaton.
M. Iohn Mabbe.
M. Robert Brandon.
M. Thomas Wilford.
M. Cornelius Fish.

¶ Common-Clearkes, or Towne-Clearkes.

M. WIlliam Dunthorne.
M. Nicholas Pakenham.

M. Wal-

Mr. Walter Stub.
Mr. William Pauior.
Mr. Thomas Ruſhton.
Mr. Blackwell.
Mr. Anthony Stapleton.
Mr. William Sebright.
Mr. Richard Langley.

Eſquires attending on the Lorde Maior in his houſe, and elſe-where.

Sword-bearers.

IOhn Metford.
IWalter Thomas.
Iohn Pynchbecke.
Valentine Maſon.
Richard Berwick.
Walter Smith.
Robert Smart.
Mathew Sturdeuant.
Rowland Smart.

Common Hunt.

IOhn Stokker.
IArnold Babington.
Iohn Burton.
Thomas Abbot.
Thomas Vnderhill.
Iohn Lune.
Iohn Dewell.
William Richbell.

Common Proclaimer, or Cryer.

Iohn Aſhe.
Thomas Camery.
Thomas Say.
Richard White.
VVilliam Nicholſon.
Iohn Hallyday.
Iohn Greene.
Chriſtopher Fowkes.
Iohn Northage.
Edward Ap-Iohn.

VVater Bayliffe.

IOhn Good.
Henry Snowe.
Geffrey Morton.
Thomas Briggs.
Sebaſtian Hillarie.
Henry King.
Nicholas VVillie.
Robert Sharborowe.
Cuthbert Thursbie.
Thomas Benſon.

Theſe Officers alſo doo attend the Lorde Maior in their ſeuerall places.

VNder Chamberlaine.
Foure Clearkes of the Lord Maiors court, who wrote weekely in the Lorde Maiors houſe ſeuerally.

Coro-

Coroner of London.
Sergeant Caruers, three.
Sergeants of the Chamber, three.
Sergeant of the Chancell.
Yeoman of the Chancell.
Yeomen of the Water-ſide, foure.
Under water Bailyffe
Yeomen of the Chamber two.
Meale weighers three.
Yeomen of the wood wharfes, two.
The Sword-bearers man. } Eſquires men.
Common Huntſmen two
Common Cryers man.
Water Bayliffes men two
The Caruers man
Nine of theſe haue Liueries of the L. Maior. viz.
The Sword bearer, and his man.
Three Caruers
Foure Yeomen of the water ſide.

FINIS.